





# PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 23

*Jing Wu Hen*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

# Synopsis

---

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

# Acknowledgement

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 2201: Most Powerful Battle

---

Yu Qing could destroy people's seven apertures and easily kill people. Nobody thought Lin Feng stood a chance.

When Lin Feng heard Yu Qing, he smiled indifferently. He walked out to the center of the area and faced Yu Qing. He said calmly, "You rank seventh, it's not bad. Prince Wu Qing and Jiu Ling Huang are not weaker than you. But now, you won't be lucky anymore."

Lin Feng and Yu Qing said similar things to one another as their Qi collided. Yu Qing smiled coldly,

Two beams of light emerged from their eyes and collided. Lin Feng's eyes turned pitch-black and vortexes appeared inside them. Lin Feng saw a pair of gigantic eyes before him.

"Seven Apertures Destroying Technique, he can kill people with his eyes." Lin Feng closed his eyes and Sword intent rose to the skies. He raised his fist, his sword humming intensely. He heard his opponent shout furiously and had the impression he had instantly become deaf.

"Hmph!" Lin Feng grunted coldly. He looked expressionless. He started chanting an incantation. Around him, words appeared and rotated, they resonating at the same pace as the cosmos. No strength could affect him. Yu Qing ran towards him with his fist raised. Lin Feng released sword strength without the least hesitation instantly.

At that moment, more dark eyes appeared. Lin Feng had the impression he was going blind. A terrifying strength surrounded his body. Lin Feng's heart was pounding. Yu Qing's Seven Apertures Destroying Technique was indeed fearsome...

An incredible amount of cosmic energies appeared around Lin Feng. He remained as motionless as a mountain, grand and

solemn. He condensed the strength of the earth and sky. Nothing or nobody could affect him.

Boom! Yu Qing's hand smashed down on Lin Feng. His cosmic energies crackled and collapsed, Lin Feng shook. However, Yu Qing had the impression he had just punched an indestructible diamond.

“Die!” Strength condensed, the nine words exploded. Yu Qing was astonished at Lin Feng's defense. He shouted furiously, drawing on the earth and sky, his energies pulsing loudly. The two cultivators were both driven backwards as a burst of wind blew out from them.

His Seven Apertures Destroying Technique is formidable. You can run away from an attack, but your ears can't, thought Lin Feng staring at Yu Qing.

“Your defense is incredible. But your position is all set, you'll rank seventh,” stated Yu Qing calmly, sucking in the strength of the earth and sky in.

“Is my defense good?” said Lin Feng smiling coldly. “Since you think so, I'll show you my offensive abilities, too!” retorted Lin Feng. Nine words rotated around him, brimming with explosive power. A terrifying ancient intent surrounded them. As he ran forwards, they swirled around him.

“With my strength, I can use Saint's techniques. You're going to lose!” said Lin Feng calmly. He continued chanting his incantation, and a terrifying oppressive strength filled the air. He had learned the Ancient Holy Techniques from the Saint. His attacks were getting better and better!

Lin Feng had even modified the attacks and adapted them to his own strengths. He had created an attack made of pure strength: The Sky Oppressing Holy Punch!

Lin Feng jumped forwards and oppressing Qi surged towards Yu

Qing. Lin Feng was now surrounded by earth cosmic energy.

“Die!” He continued chanting his incantation and punched out in his opponent’s direction.

Yu Qing grunted coldly. He communed with the earth and at the same time he also punched out.

However, it was only the beginning. Punches kept colliding. Yu Qing stared helplessly at the number of punches moving towards him at that moment.

“So many dangerous punches, each punch contains a deadly strength. How strong!” murmured those watching. Lin Feng had based his attack on a Saint’s technique, and coupled with his initial strength, it was obvious that it was extremely powerful.

Yu Qing shouted furiously as all those punches moved towards him. Yu Qing moved as fast as he could to dodge the attack.

“Die, die, die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. There were more and more punches filling the air. His Qi was growing more and more powerful. Yu Qing was being oppressed, how could he resist?

The watcher’s faces felt numb when they saw the number of punches. Each punch could easily crush cultivators of the top of the Huang Qi layer, how could Yu Qing resist them? Luckily, his perceptions were acute, he could hear and see things perfectly. Otherwise, he would have been crushed immediately!

Finally, some dazzling punches crashed into Yu Qing’s body. Just one punch made him shake violently, and his organs shook. He coughed up blood as his face paled. He knew that he had to stop, otherwise, Lin Feng would continue releasing punches.

“I lose!”

He left the fight zone. Lin Feng didn’t chase him, and stopped releasing Sky Oppressing Holy Punches.

The ground was still shaking, and the rumbling in the air took a



while to trail off. The crowd was staring at Lin Feng, not understanding. Lin Feng was so strong... he had used a Saint's technique to defeat Yu Qing, and could now finish in the top six.

Yu Qing was seventh!

-----

"We underestimated him once again. He unveils his strength, step by step. Each time he fights, we discover that he understands another type of strength. He has too many trump cards. Maybe in the next battle, he'll end up in the top five, and then four... Who knows now?" wondered the people in Godly Clouds City.

Six people were left now: Hua Qing Feng, the Great Deployment Master, Chu Chun Qiu, Kong Ming, Zhou Rong Man, and Lin Feng!

The crowd was shaking when they saw those cultivators. Who would fight the next one?

All of them were peerless at the level of the Huang Qi layer. Ordinary great emperors couldn't compete with them. They could even compete with ordinary great emperors of the top of the Di Qi layer.

It was getting complicated now. Who would fight whom?

Yu Qing was extremely strong, but he wasn't as strong as Hua Qing Feng, and he couldn't be as strong as Kong Ming, who had defeated Tianhun either. There was the Great Deployment Master as well, he could use Saint's techniques. Nobody knew how strong Chu Chun Qiu was when he used his full strength, but he was fearsome.

-----

"Now, let's finish with the battles." said Lin Feng glancing at the crowd. "Let's stop wasting time."

"What an incredible guy. He wants to finish now. The most terrifying battles are going to start." When the crowd heard him,

they shook. Lin Feng was crazy.

“You made it until now. I underestimated you. Everybody underestimated you,” Chu Chun Qiu said calmly, walking forwards and continuing, “I agree. The most powerful battle. We both come from Dark Clouds. This battle will also determine who the new First Master of the region will be. You four people, fight against one another.”

Chu Chun Qiu agreed with Lin Feng’s idea; last battles, three one-on-ones. He wanted to fight against Lin Feng.

“Kong Ming and I are both from Holy Mountain, therefore, we can’t fight one another,” said Hua Qing Feng calmly. “One of you fights against me.”

“You’re the First Master of Godly Clouds, you’re first right now. If I, Zhou Rong Man, defeat you, I will become the First Master of Godly Clouds, and everybody will know my name. I will fight against you and everybody in Godly Clouds will know that my name is Zhou Rong Man!” said Zhou Rong Man calmly.

The crowd trembled even more. “How insane, how crazy!” Even Lin Feng was astonished. Zhou Rong Man looked simple and honest, and liked to show off, but now he was challenging Hua Qing Feng, First Master of Godly Clouds, who temporarily ranked first.

“Alright,” agreed Hua Qing Feng to Zhou Rong Man. “If you defeat me, everybody will know your name, Zhou Rong Man.”

“Hehe, therefore, you will lose!” said Zhou Rong Man. He looked excited. He stood up, looking eager to to fight against Hua Qing Feng.

Only the Great Deployment Master and Kong Ming were left, they were both terrifying. All the battles were going to be terrifying. That was the clash of the heroes!

# Chapter 2202: Explosive Fighting Abilities

---

The six people walked to different sides on the battlefield. A strong wind started blowing.

——

“Who will be the three winners?” chattered the crowd in Godly Clouds City. Everybody, in the outer and inner part of Godly Clouds City, was staring at the battlefield. The six battles started at the same time.

“It’s difficult to say. Ten minutes ago, I would have said that Chu Chun Qiu was definitely going to win, but actually, we don’t know how strong Lin Feng is! Each time he fights, he displays new talents. But we don’t know how strong Chu Chun Qiu is, either. It’s impossible to tell!”

“And that deployment spell caster, his deployment spells are terrifying. But Kong Ming is an incredible Buddhist cultivator. Everybody saw it a moment ago. Therefore, the only person we know will win is Hua Qing Feng. He will definitely defeat Zhou Rong Man. For the two other battles, we can’t predict anything.”

“Indeed. That’s what I think too! They’re too strong, it’s difficult to guess!”

—————

Chu Chun Qiu was staring at Lin Feng. His robe was fluttering. A King intent filled the air. He said to Lin Feng, “The competition is going to end for you now.”

“Use your strength to support your point,” replied Lin Feng calmly when he sensed Chu Chun Qiu’s Sky Absorbing King intent. He released a vast Demon power to surge out and sweep away that force. A demon shadow appeared behind Lin Feng.

They both looked like gods.

“We are the last six people left. I will show you what my most powerful Sky Absorbing King intent is like!” said Chu Chun Qiu calmly. An awesome Sky Absorbing intent filled the air. It could oppress any other kind of intent.

Chu Chun Qiu has absorbed so many people’s wills in his life. He’s probably much stronger than what he’s willing to show, thought Lin Feng. Then, the Source of the Nine Netherworlds appeared and encompassed everything. Demon intent slowly filled the air as well. At the same time, his nine words began rotating around him. He was like a king of the ten thousand things of creation, all his cosmic energies turning into demon strength.

---

“His demon cosmic energies are so powerful. When he fought against Ni Cang, he used cursing strength. When he fought against Yu Qing, he used earth strength. Now he’s using demon strength! He really controls the strength of the ten thousand things of creation. Besides, he can switch as he wishes. Is that his Dao? That would be a terrifying Dao! He’s releasing demon strength along with the strength of his Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song!”

“Kong Ming is moving too. His Dao strength is terrifying. If Kong Ming and Lin Feng fought, it would be great. Of course, Kong Ming is fighting against the deployment spell caster, so the battle is going to be interesting, too. Kong Ming is stronger than Jiu Ling Huang. His Buddhist techniques are incredible.”

The audience was excited. The three battles were all going to be awesome. They didn’t even know which one to watch!

---

“Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song.” Chu Chun Qiu raised his head and looked at the Source of the Nine Netherworlds. An incredible amount of intent exploded around him. He started forwards, the rumble of conflicting energies preceding him. A terrifying amount of vitality and intent rolled in waves chaotically.

Nobody could make him flinch, nobody could break his vitality and intent. He had absorbed so many emperors and great emperors' wills, he was an army by himself, the ground shaking at his footsteps.

However, the Source of the Nine Netherworlds seemed indestructible.

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards to meet Chu Chun Qiu. Demon intent rose to the skies. His Nine Netherworlds strength resonated with the cosmos, penetrating into Chu Chun Qiu's body.

Lin Feng was suddenly surrounded by dazzling Deva-Mara Kalpa lights. Lin Feng could sense that Chu Chun Qiu's Sky Absorbing intent was deadly, and could absorb his own intent. However, Lin Feng's intent was extremely stable when facing it, and the nine word incantation protected him. He was in symbiosis with the earth and sky, and Chu Chun Qiu's intent couldn't really affect his own so far.

"Lin Feng, sense my Sky Absorbing King intent!" said Chu Chun Qiu, smiling proudly. Behind him, an ancient king appeared, and slowly walked forwards. Lin Feng sensed that his vitality and will were trembling. It was a deadly intent. The Sky Absorbing King intent was explosive.

"Absorb!" shouted Chu Chun Qiu explosively. The ground kept shaking. Lin Feng was shaking from head to foot at his strength.

But the Nine Netherworlds strength remained!

Chu Chun Qiu is so strong, thought the crowd, seeing Chu Chun Qiu's Sky Absorbing strength. It was truly dreadful.

Lin Feng looked at Chun Qiu coldly as he roared out. He rose up in the air and released ancient intent, before jumping into Nine Netherworlds strength and becoming one with it. At the same time, an endless amount of demon lights condensed in the Nine Netherworlds strength.

The Nine Netherworlds strength moved forwards and bore down on Chu Chun Qiu. The Source of the Nine Netherworlds penetrated into Chu Chun Qiu's eyes, mind, and will.

Chu Chun Qiu raised his head and looked at Lin Feng coldly. Lin Feng surprisingly used Saint's techniques and fused them together with Nine Netherworlds strength!

"Let's see how powerful your Saint's technique is!" said Chu Chun Qiu disdainfully. He raised his head and Sky Absorbing strength began to hum. He was absorbing the strength of the earth and sky. The Source of the Nine Netherworlds streamed through the air. Even the Nine Netherworlds strength in which Lin Feng was merged was absorbed.

He was absorbing Lin Feng's Nine Netherworlds strength!

"How frightening! The Sky Absorbing scriptures allow him to absorb the strength of a Saint's technique?" The crowd was shaken at the sight. The Sky Absorbing strength could absorb the Nine Netherworlds?

Nine Netherworlds strength continued surging out. A gigantic Nine Netherworlds sword condensed at that moment. The Sky Absorbing strength suddenly turned into demon lights, it also contained Kalpa strength.

"That's the Kalpa Indestructible Deva-Mara skill. Lin Feng knows the skill of the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan!"

Many people were startled. The members of the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan were astonished, their faces frozen. How was that possible? How did Lin Feng know their skill?

But most people didn't pay attention to that skill, they paid attention to the Nine Netherworlds demon sword, how powerful would it be? Could Chu Chun Qiu resist such an attack? Could he absorb it?

Chu Chun Qiu raised his head and watched the demon sword

descend from the sky. He shouted furiously and punched out violently. Intent surrounded the Nine Netherworlds demon sword. Many kings appeared in front of the demon sword and oppressed it.

The space between Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu turned black, filled with demon lights. Energies fought loudly. The crowd realized that a demon cloud was condensing in the sky above them and that Kalpa lights were twinkling inside it.

“That’s... That’s what the Kalpa Indestructible Deva-Mara Skill does when a cultivator is about to break through!” someone blurted out. Lin Feng really had studied the skill of the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan. Was he going to level and break through to the Di Qi layer?

A terrifying Kalpa lightning bolt streaked across the sky and sliced through the air, crashing onto the gigantic sword dazzlingly. However, the gigantic sword didn’t break. The sword was Lin Feng!

“What’s going on now?!” The strong cultivators of the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan were furious, they all pulled long faces. Why was Lin Feng using their skill? Why was he bathing in Deva-Mara Kalpa strength?!

Boom! Another terrifying wave of Kalpa bombarded the gigantic sword again, and it trembled. After nine waves, Lin Feng’s strength was equal to that of the Di Qi layer!

“That’s not the signal that he’s going to break through to the Di Qi layer, Lin Feng hasn’t even reached the very top of the Huang Qi layer yet!” someone observed.

Chu Chun Qiu roared loudly and released even more explosive intent. He drove the gigantic sword back and ran forwards, craters appearing under his feet on the battle stage.

Lin Feng reappeared in the air, looking at Chu Chun Qiu with his

pitch-black eyes.

Chu Chun Qiu's vitality and intent were terrifying. He had felt oppressed. The Sky Absorbing strength was deadly, Chu Chun Qiu had absorbed so many strong cultivators' strength. He was the best there was in terms of intent.

Terrifying demon energies surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng's Deva-Mara Kalpa strength had just cleansed his body, strength, and soul. He was stronger. His Nine Netherworlds strength was incredible, even if he hadn't defeated Chu Chun Qiu. He had the impression he belonged to a new world. He could sense that he would break free from the Huang Qi layer some point soon. He had really reached the very top of the Huang Qi layer this time!

Unfortunately, I don't have time to bathe in a demon pond, if I could increase my Deva-Mara body using the Deva-Mara Body Cleansing Technique, I would surpass Zhou Rong Man in terms of physical strength, thought Lin Feng. He was standing there as demon strength kept penetrating into his body.

Chu Chun Qiu was stupefied. Lin Feng could resist his Sky Absorbing strength!

---

On the other side, Buddha's halos rose up in the air. Deployment spell strength surrounded the fighters. Lights flared and the air thundered from their intense battle. The ground kept trembling around them. Kong Ming and the Great Deployment Master's battle was electrifying!

Zhou Rong Man and Hua Qing Feng were not colliding at that moment, as neither of them could defeat the other. The crowd was stunned: Zhou Rong Man liked to brag, but he was really breathtakingly strong.

All six of them were stronger than anyone had expected...



## Chapter 2203: Thousand Arms

---

Lin Feng glanced at the others. Kong Ming was extremely strong, his power surpassed Lin Feng's expectations. Back then, in the small world, Kong Ming rarely showed up in public, he was extremely discreet. However, Lin Feng had never underestimated him. Back then, among the ten strongest young cultivators of Ba Huang, only Kong Ming was enigmatic and unfathomable.

Now, he was still discreet, but he was still shockingly strong, too!

When fighting against such opponents, you have to use your full strength and that's how you break through, thought Lin Feng. Just like him against Chu Chun Qiu. He had used the Ancient Holy Techniques and had turned the strength of the Ancient Holy Techniques turn into Nine Netherworlds strength, oppressing Chu Chun Qiu.

Then, he had turned the Nine Netherworlds strength into a Nine Netherworlds demon sword and used demon strength, too, before the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength had cleansed his body.

"My name is Zhou Rong Man!" said a voice at that moment. People turned their heads, including Lin Feng, looking at Zhou Rong Man.

What a guy. As if nobody knows he's called Zhou Rong Man!, thought Lin Feng. He was speechless. Zhou Rong Man was strong enough to compete with Hua Qing Feng, but he sounded a bit dumb. Zhou Rong Man... those three words were the words the crowd had heard the most during the competition!

"Hua Qing Feng, now, Zhou Rong Man will defeat you and become the strongest cultivator!" said Zhou Rong Man with a smile. He released an ancient bestial Qi, which filled the air. Zhou Rong Man had gone into a frenzy.

Hua Qing Feng was surprised to sense danger. Zhou Rong Man

was bestial and dangerous!

At the same time, in Zhou Rong Man's third eye, a red imprint appeared. Arms appeared on his back at the same time.

Hua Qing Feng's face stiffened, his face suddenly turning pale.

A thousand arms, Zhou Rong Man had a thousand arms! If anyone else had a thousand arms, it wouldn't have been a problem. But this was Zhou Rong Man, he already had a terrifying strength with two arms; with a thousand arms, it would be even more terrifying!

Everybody had noticed how terrifyingly strong Zhou Rong Man was. His physical strength was incredible, he could resist Hua Qing Feng's ordinary attacks with pure physical strength.

Now that Rong Man had a thousand arms, Hua Qing Feng, Godly Clouds' First Master, was starting to have a bad premonition. He wasn't as confident as before, he didn't think he was certain to win anymore.

"Zhou Rong Man!" The crowd was confused, they remembered his name. At that moment, Zhou Rong Man started walking towards Hua Qing Feng. Golden lights appeared in his third eye. With his thousand arms, he looked terrifying.

"Is that guy a human or a beast?"

Hua Qing Feng's celestial book was floating above his head, his robe was fluttering in the wind. He looked like a scholar. Ice-cold Sword intent filled the air, and his Qi was increasing.

He took a step forwards and said one word. A terrifyingly sharp sword energy shot towards Zhou Rong Man.

Zhou Rong Man's arms intertwined and turned into a gigantic fist. At the same time, he continued walking forwards as if nothing existed that could threaten him. He looked all-conquering!

Hua Qing Feng summoned the strength of the earth and sky, and

condensed a terrifying force. His gigantic arm streaked across the sky, two gigantic words appearing in the sky: ANCIENT STRENGTH. He condensed deadly strength, and then released it all.

A strong wind started blowing. The building energies were ominous...

Zhou Rong Man continued walking forwards, an overwhelming strength emerged from his gigantic arm. Nothing could injure him.

“Let’s see how incredible your defense is, you’re not a god!” shouted Hua Qing Feng coldly, infuriated now. He condensed more deadly strength. He was Godly Clouds’ First Master, he was truly strong! His strength shot towards Zhou Rong Man.

Zhou Rong Man raised his head, the golden lights in his third eye shining. He absorbed the strength which was moving towards him and it disappeared instantly.

At that moment, Zhou Rong Man looked like a monster that nothing could affect.

“Zhou Rong Man is a monster! With two arms, he’s terrifying already, but with a thousand, it’s even worse! His golden eye is indestructible, it can absorb such terrifying attacks!” swore one of the watchers.

Zhou Rong Man hadn’t shown his real strength during the meeting, remaining discreet the whole time. For the first time during the event, Hua Qing Feng was facing the risk of losing, and his first position with it!

Hua Qing Feng knew he was in danger. The guy everybody initially thought was a moron was extremely dangerous. His arms all contained powerful strength. It was difficult to evaluate how strong his attack was going to be. He could also use all his arms independently, so he could carry out different attacks at the same time.

At that moment, Hua Qing Feng's hand streaked across the sky, condensing strength in his celestial book. He wrote ancient words. They contained an astonishing amount of sword strength.

"Let's see how long your arms can protect you," said Hua Qing Feng coldly. The strength his celestial book contained, penetrated into the ancient words. They all crackled and then turned into one word with ominous strength.

"Die!" said Hua Qing Feng. At that moment, the gigantic word was filled with an endless amount of sword lights. At the same time, it moved towards Zhou Rong Man. Zhou Rong Man moved his arms, an illusion appeared and moved to intercept the ancient word. The ancient word and the arm collided and started crackling.

Zhou Rong Man's arms kept crackling. However, he stood his ground and continued walking forwards, although not very quickly.

"Argh!" Finally, he shouted out furiously and started running towards Hua Qing Feng. Hua Qing Feng's face stiffened. He spat out a sharp weapon at Rong Man, but it instantly exploded and broke into pieces. He was driven backwards as his face paled.

"Hua Qing Feng is going to lose."

"Zhou Rong Man is a terrifying monster. He can't lose. He's amazing both in terms of defense and offense. His soul defense is formidable!"

"Hua Qing Feng, you lost. I, Zhou Rong Man, am the strongest man of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!" said Zhou Rong Man, smiling.

At that moment, nobody dared make fun of him or say he was stupid. His voice echoed in people's heads unceasingly. His ordinary sentence became a symbolic sentence. My name is Zhou Rong Man!

Everybody knew that if Zhou Rong Man had been weak, everybody would have made fun of him, and his sentence would have become a joke. But he had defeated Hua Qing Feng. If people remembered the sentence My name is Zhou Rong Man!, it wouldn't be because they were amused, it would be because they remembered how terrifying he was!

“In the top ten, there were four First Masters, but now he's going to be sixth? That would be embarrassing for a former First Master of Godly Clouds!” murmured many people with schadenfreude.

Was Hua Qing Feng eliminated from the top five? If that was the case, he would lose his reputation. However, it also showed that there were many geniuses in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and First Masters weren't necessarily the strongest people!

When Hua Qing Feng heard Zhou Rong Man, he remained silent. Could he say anything? He was Godly Clouds' First Master, and he had lost against Zhou Rong Man. No matter what, he couldn't win! But even if he couldn't defeat Zhou Rong Man, he didn't deserve to rank sixth. Other people probably couldn't defeat him, but Zhou Rong Man's strength had exceeded everybody's expectations!

---

At the same time as they were fighting, Kong Ming and the Great Deployment Master's battle was taking place. An incredible amount of golden lights blotted out the sky. Buddhas were everywhere around them, and they were chanting mantras in mighty Brahmic voices.

At the same time, many deployment lights kept glittering. The Buddha and deployment energies kept colliding.

Kong Ming's eyes were closed. Behind him were 108 Buddhas with indestructible golden bodies. The Great Deployment Master found it difficult to resist him.

“Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha Solution, Indestructible Golden

Body, who are you?” said the Great Deployment Master, grimacing. His deployment spells couldn’t be weaker than those Buddhist attacks, but Kong Ming’s defense was awesome, far better than his own. With the Ten Thousand Celestial Buddhas and the Indestructible Golden Body, he seemed indestructible.

“His defense is also terrifying. Kong Ming might be stronger than Hua Qing Feng. In Holy Mountain, Kong Ming is discreet, but it doesn’t necessarily mean that Hua Qing Feng is stronger than him,” pontificated someone with the wisdom of stating the obvious.

—

Xian Ren was astonished, too. He was staring at Kong Ming and said,” That Bald Donkey has always been hiding his real strength. He’s actually this strong...”

—

The Great Deployment Master finally stopped fighting. He was injured, and admitted his defeat. Like Hua Qing Feng, he had lost. He wasn’t necessarily weaker than the four other cultivators. The battles had to continue, he definitely had the potential to finish in the top three!

“Those people are all terrifyingly strong. Zhou Rong Man proved he was stronger than Hua Qing Feng. Kong Ming is stronger than the Great Deployment Master. Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu’s battle was incredible, too! But this way the rankings aren’t accurate. They need to fight again!” the people exclaimed eagerly.

“Lin Feng, you and me, let’s fight,” said Hua Qing Feng at that moment, walking towards Lin Feng. He didn’t want to be eliminated because of his battle against Zhou Rong Man!

## Chapter 2204: Hua Qing Feng Loses Again

---

There were many people in the inner part of the city, but the numbers outside were far larger. There was literally an ocean of people. They all remained silent; used to it already, or maybe they had actually anticipated such results.

Someone appeared, wearing a black armor containing demon intent. He looked like a demon king. Next to him was a young man wearing the same kind of armor. They looked imposing and awe-inspiring.

People from the Demon Shrine are here!, thought Duan Feng when he saw that. He was startled. Those two people were strong cultivators from the Demon Shrine!

People from the other Shrines are here too, he realized. His eyes were glittering. He knew that the Fortune Shrine was in charge of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds this year. The fact that some young people from other Shrines came to watch wasn't surprising. What was surprising was that some extremely strong cultivators from other Shrines were there, too!

-----

There were some old men among the people of the Snow Clan. Zhe Tian looked at that young man next to him. The young man looked at those people and asked, "What's going on?"

"Watch and you'll see," said an old man. Then, he waved his hands and a few snow chairs instantly appeared.

"Little Zhe Tian, what do you think of the battles? Anything in particular?" an old man asked Zhe Tian gently.

"They're all extremely strong. Even in the Snow Clan, those people would be considered as some of the best emperors!" said Zhe Tian.

The old man of the Snow Clan smiled and nodded, "It's the

Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It takes place every century. Those people are the most outstanding cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Even in the Shrines, there aren't many cultivators as strong as them. At the same cultivation level, your uncle might be able to defeat them. But your mother has to practice cultivation really hard."

"Oh," replied Zhe Tian.

"Of course, in the future, you'll be even stronger than them!" said the old man, smiling and caressing Zhe Tian's head. The elders of the Snow Clan all attached lots of importance to Zhe Tian. Within twenty years, he'd become unbelievably strong, but for now he couldn't leave the Snow Clan freely. They first wanted him to become extremely strong, and after that, they'd let him go out and the people would all find out about his existence.

---

The Diviner understood what was going on. He could see everything around him clearly, but he acted as if he didn't know because he was focusing on the six fighters. He didn't care about anything else at that moment.

---

Lin Feng heard Hua Qing Feng shout loudly, turned around and looked at him. Hua Qing Feng seemed powerless when he was fighting against Zhou Rong Man. He didn't want to be eliminated from the top five either. Therefore, he didn't want to stop fighting.

Lin Feng studied Hua Qing Feng narrowly. Being able to fight against someone like Hua Qing Feng was an opportunity! A moment before, he had been cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. His soul and physical body had become even stronger. His cosmic energies had also become more powerful. Even if he hadn't used his Deva-Mara Body Cleansing Technique to cleanse his body, he had become stronger.



It was perfect because now Hua Qing Feng wanted to fight against him!

Lin Feng clenched his fists and Kalpa lights appeared. He suddenly looked like a demon.

Hua Qing Feng was walking towards Lin Feng slowly. Clouds appeared and a strong wind started blowing. He shouted angrily. He looked like a Confucianist monk, adhering strictly to his discipline. Hua Qing Feng wasn't only a Confucianist monk, he was also a very strong sword cultivator. Therefore, his strength turned into a sword and shot towards Lin Feng.

Hua Qing Feng continued walking forwards. The clouds became pale. The celestial book above his head summoned the strength of the earth and sky. He couldn't lose this battle!

“You lost against Zhou Rong Man, so you want to release your anger on me? This battle will be tragic for you!” said Lin Feng coldly. He released an ancient Qi and used his Sky Oppressing Holy Punch, the wind shrieked as it passed by and shattered the sword energies

Then, Lin Feng divided into three bodies.

—

Many strong cultivators who saw that were astonished. He practiced the strength of the three lives and ten thousand things of creation?

Of course, in the cultivation world, many people had learned how to clone themselves, but few people were as good as he was. Possibly they had studied similar spells, but not the exact same ones...

“Zhou Rong Man had a thousand arms, Lin Feng has clones. Does Lin Feng have more trump cards?” they wondered aloud. They saw a hurricane form. Lin Feng turned into a countless number of clones and they all moved towards Hua Qing Feng at the same

time, even as more kept appearing.

---

“Hmph!” Hua Qing Feng grunted coldly. An incredible amount of sword lights twinkled, the sword energies looked like snakes shooting in every direction towards different clones. Hua Qing Feng didn’t believe that Lin Feng’s clones were as strong as Zhou Rong Man’s arms!

Many clones raised their fists and smashed the sword energies. Hua Qing Feng was furious. he turned around and found Lin Feng’s real body behind him.

Hua Qing Feng didn’t hesitate, he ran at Lin Feng. At the same time, ancient words appeared in a split second. He punched out in Lin Feng’s direction.

Hua Qing Feng continued writing words in the air with his finger. A gigantic word appeared in the air: DIE. Deadly strength condensed in his celestial book.

At that moment, Hua Qing Feng frowned. Behind him, a silhouette crushed the ancient word. He suddenly sensed danger from pure demon intent. The Source of the Nine Netherworlds had appeared. The crowd knew what it meant when they saw the Source of the Nine Netherworlds. The Source of the Nine Netherworlds penetrated into Hua Qing Feng’s body.

“Surprise attacks from three sides!” Lin Feng’s clones contained offensive energies. At that moment, Hua Qing Feng didn’t know if the other clones contained offense strength or not!

Besides, the clones were very fast. In less than a few seconds, Hua Qing Feng was surrounded.

Hua Qing Fen’s face twisted. He shot towards a clone and kept releasing his strength. The gigantic DIE symbol kept humming. He suddenly turned around and looked at the clones which contained terrifying energies, as sword strength emerged from his celestial

book. Nine Netherworlds soundwaves penetrated into his body and he tried to block them with his intent.

He waved his hands, another ancient word appeared and moved forwards.

However, Hua Qing Feng suddenly felt exhausted, his eyelids heavy. He was falling asleep. The Nine Netherworlds strength kept bombarding his intent. He was falling asleep!

“Great Dream of Life Technique.” Hua Qing Feng ground his teeth, trying to remain determined.

“You’re already in a dream, enjoy the Nine Netherworlds strength!” said a voice. Hua Qing Feng grimaced. Was he in a dream already? Impossible, he couldn’t trust that voice, it was a demon voice trying to make him give up.

“That’s a dream I created for you. Look, don’t you feel powerless? Can you compete with my attacks?” said another demon voice, which also contained cursing strength. He was also being subjected to the Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song.

“Piss off!” shouted Hua Qing Feng, sword intent emerged and destroyed the attack in front of him.

“Have you seen that? You’re in a dream, it wasn’t a real attack. Otherwise, how could you have destroyed it so easily?” said a voice. It echoed in his head. Was he really asleep and in a dream?

Terrifying attacks filled the air in front of Hua Qing Feng. He kept releasing words which destroyed everything, but it really seemed that he was in an illusion.

“Are the attacks real or not? Why is Hua Qing Feng able to destroy them so easily?” thought people outside when they saw him destroy clones one after another.

“I’m not sure. Maybe that some clones contain attacks which aren’t very powerful.”

But they didn't know that Hua Qing Feng had started wondering whether he was in a dream or not. Hua Qing Feng destroyed more and more clones before he realized that a terrifying demon strength had appeared.

What's going on?, thought Hua Qing Feng. He was astonished. He raised his fists to block the attack, but Lin Feng's strength was terrifying. Bones snapped and broke loudly. The attack pierced through his fists and penetrated into his body.

"Piss off!" shouted Hua Qing Feng desperately while releasing energies. However, they instantly broke as well, and Hua Qing Feng was smashed away, fists continuing to crash down onto his body.

## Chapter 2205: Demon and Buddha's Battle

---

“Hua Qing Feng, Godly Clouds’ First Master, lost again.” Many people in Godly Clouds City were astonished. Godly Clouds’ First Master had lost again!

Lin Feng didn’t let him off though, he continued chasing him at the speed of light while demanding, “Say it!”

Fists were humming, preparing to renew the pummeling. A strong wind brushed against Hua Qing Feng’s body. He had lost. He couldn’t believe his eyes. He had thought he’d definitely finish first during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and at the very end, he had lost twice! He had suffered two crushing defeats! He felt humiliated, was he even going to continue battling?

I’ll have to reflect on my shortcomings after the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, thought Hua Qing Feng, before saying, “I, Hua Qing Feng, have lost.”

People in Godly Clouds City were shaking. Hua Qing Feng had admitted it! He ranked sixth now...

“Surprisingly, the most astonishing battles involved Zhou Rong Man and Lin Feng. Everybody thought they were going to get eliminated, and in the end the two of them defeated Hua Qing Feng. Nobody can doubt about their strength anymore!” nodded many people.

Five people were left on the battlefield. Kong Ming had defeated the deployment spell caster which meant Kong Ming was now fourth. The deployment spell caster had lost, but could he defeat the others? It was difficult to evaluate. He hadn’t fought against them personally, so he didn’t know.

One thing people were sure of now was that Hua Qing Feng

wasn't Godly Clouds' First Master anymore, because Kong Ming wasn't weaker than him, and Zhou Rong Man had defeated him, too. The First Master had to be someone else. Like Prince Wu Qing, he had to give up his title of First Master now. Lin Feng or Chu Chun Qiu would become the Dark Night Region's First Master.

"Four people are left. You lost. You're out," said Zhou Rong Man to the Great Deployment Master. The Great Deployment Master grunted in a cold way. He had sealed himself in a deployment mine for such a long time, and had to start from the Huang Qi layer again. Initially, he had thought he'd finish first, but in the end had lost. Everybody was pointing at him: he was out!

Kong Ming's Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha and Indestructible Golden Body make him terrifying. However, those people underestimate me! The Great Deployment Master stared at Zhou Rong Man defiantly.

Deployment marks appeared and flowed towards Zhou Rong Man. However, a thousand arms instantly appeared on Zhou Rong Man's body, and he destroyed the deployment spell with pure strength.

Zhou Rong Man walked towards the opponent. He had attacked by surprise? Zhou Rong Man didn't like that at all. The Great Deployment Master and Kong Ming's battle had been beautiful, this one wouldn't be beautiful.

The Great Deployment Master couldn't defeat Zhou Rong Man, but it was going to be difficult for Zhou Rong Man because he was good in close combat, and the Great Deployment Master was a deployment spell caster. He wanted to prevent Zhou Rong Man from getting too close, and he could achieve that using deployment spells.

At that moment, Zhou Rong Man stopped and said to the Great Deployment Master, "What is the point of this kind of battle?"

"You're going to lose it," replied the Great Deployment Master

coldly. Zhou Rong Man's offense and defense were incredible but if he couldn't get close, then the duel was useless.

The Great Deployment Master wasn't wrong. In the end, he would win if he continued this way. He could also try to attack, but it was true that this kind of battle was boring.

"Zhou Rong Man's weakness is speed. Even though he's very fast, if a little thing prevents him from using his agility technique, then he's stuck," pontificated someone in the crowd.

Kong Ming said to the Great Deployment Master, "You're a Great Scholar. Since you lost, admit it and leave."

Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu were also staring at the Great Deployment Master. The Great Deployment Master's face stiffened. He stood there with his hands clasped in his back and sighed. "The world has changed so much. New geniuses keep rising all the time. I'm out."

As Kong Ming had said, that guy was a Great Scholar, why did he need to occupy the battle stage like that? It wasn't that important anymore. Therefore, he moved aside and watched the remaining four people.

—

"The former first and second have been eliminated already, Hua Qing Feng ranks sixth and the terrifying deployment spell caster fifth. What about the four others?" everyone wondered. Hua Qing Feng and the deployment spell caster had been eliminated from the top four!

"Now, they're four, Zhou Rong Man, Kong Ming, Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng. Zhou Rong Man and Kong Ming have similar abilities, they're both incredible in terms of defense and offense. But Zhou Rong Man always uses pure physical strength, Kong Ming uses Buddhist techniques. Kong Ming has an Indestructible Golden Body. If they fight, I wonder who'll win? Lin Feng and Chu

Chun Qiu fought, but it was a draw...”

“Lin Feng, we were meant to meet again. We are four people left, Zhou Rong Man and Chu Chun Qiu can fight, and you and me can fight. Then, the winners fight one another and the losers fight one another,” Kong Ming said slowly and calmly.

“Kong Ming wants to fight against Lin Feng? He’s a Buddhist monk, Lin Feng is a Demon, their battle will probably be incredible!” The crowd was stirred up.

Lin Feng looked at Kong Ming. Kong Ming had an Indestructible Golden Body. He was much stronger than Zhuo Qing, who also had a king-type body too. Zhuo Qing had participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds too, but he had been eliminated quite early. He hadn’t even finished in the top thirty. There was a huge difference between Zhuo Qing and Kong Ming.

“Alright!” Lin Feng nodded. Actually, Lin Feng was excited to duel Kong Ming and see how powerful his Buddhist techniques were!

“The winner will fight against me, and we’ll compete for first place!” smiled Zhou Rong Man.

Chu Chun Qiu was speechless. Did this guy think he was going to win no matter what?

People in Godly Clouds City rolled their eyes. Even though Zhou Rong Man was extremely strong, they had also seen how strong Chu Chun Qiu was. Zhou Rong Man was simply too funny.

Chu Chun Qiu released Sky Absorbing intent towards Zhou Rong Man and oppressed him. Chu Chun Qiu hoped he’d manage to absorb this guy’s incredible will.

——

On Lin Feng and Kong Ming’s side, Buddha’s halos flashed. 108 Golden Buddhas appeared behind Kong Ming.



Lin Feng released dazzling demon lights. A demon cloud appeared and surged forth. The Source of the Nine Netherworlds spread in the air, Demonic soundwaves resonated. The atmosphere was filled with Buddhist and demon energies.

The Nine Netherworlds Song resonated. The demon lights corroded the Buddha's halos and started taking over.

“Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song, one of the strongest songs in the world. However, there's also a Buddhist song: The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī, it delivers all living creatures from suffering and torment!” said Kong Ming with his eyes closed. He had turned into a golden body. The ten thousand things of creation couldn't be corroded when they were protected by his Buddhist strength. The 108 Buddhas around him started chanting the Great Compassion Dhāraṇī at the same time, purifying everything.

The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī echoed far away. Everybody was surrounded by Buddhist halos, becoming selfless and calm.

---

Even the people in Godly Clouds City were affected, their hearts as calm as still water and selfless.

“What a powerful Buddhist song. The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī makes people want to give up fighting. However, they are fighting with it!” The sight shook many people. They realized that people around them had succumbed to the Great Compassion Dhāraṇī. They almost forgot that Kong Ming was using the Great Compassion Dhāraṇī to fight.

“The Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song attacks Kong Ming only. Kong Ming's Great Compassion Dhāraṇī influences everybody. Kong Ming is probably stronger than Lin Feng!” analyzed some detached observers. The Buddhist lights oppressed the demon lights already.

---

“Where did that Bald Donkey learn the Great Compassion Dhāraṇī?” Xian Ren was astonished and staring at Kong Ming. That Buddhist monk was so mysterious and discreet, even though he was probably the strongest cultivator of Holy Mountain!

## Chapter 2206: Unparalleled Attacks

---

Many people were watching the battle in Godly Clouds City. They had not expected that these few people – Kong Ming who was discreet before the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds; Lin Feng who had been offended by the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan; Zhou Rong Man who had no fame or reputation; and Chu Chun Qiu who was from the Dark Night Region – would be so dazzling during the last round.

They also hadn't thought that the Godly Clouds' First Master wouldn't be strong enough to fight against them.

The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī and the Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song energies collided. People in Godly Clouds City could hear the Great Compassion Dhāraṇī, and it influenced them. The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī purified all things. People didn't feel like fighting when hearing such a mantra.

The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī and the Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song were similar, they were both songs which affected people's wills. The Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song turned people into puppets. The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī wasn't as aggressive as the Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song.

The Buddha's halos and the demon lights kept colliding. Slowly, the Buddhist halos didn't look as powerful as before...

——

“The difference between Buddhist and demon cultivation is thin. If Great Compassion really existed, how could he be a cultivator? How could he try to stand at the top of the continent? Everything is fake, void. I practice demon cultivation, nothing can destroy my will!”

Lin Feng looked calm and unruffled. He wasn't affected by the Buddhist mantras. All he focused on was his opponent. Kong Ming

had an Indestructible Golden Body, and 108 Buddhas protected him. His physical defense was incredible. Ordinary attacks wouldn't do anything to him.

When Lin Feng thought about that, he condensed sword strength and a second later, it moved towards Kong Ming. Kong Ming didn't do anything to block the attack. The 108 Buddhas around him were part of his golden body and protected him. When the sword energies crashed onto the golden body, sharp and clear sounds rang out, Buddhist halos flashed and the sword strength disappeared.

As Lin Feng had thought, such attacks were useless against Kong Ming. His defense was too incredible. All Buddhist monks had an incredible defense, but coupled with an Indestructible Golden Body, Kong Ming's strength was even more impressive.

Demon intent surged. Lin Feng stretched out his hands, demon lights and Nine Netherworlds strength condensed. The energies didn't affect Kong Ming, but at least they oppressed his Great Compassion Dhāraṇī strength.

Kong Ming's eyelids twitched. He continued chanting his mantra in a mighty Brahmī voice. The 108 Buddhas around him chanted at the same time as him. Hands condensed in the air and turned into terrifying golden fists, like golden mountains and hurdled towards Lin Feng.

The atmosphere became oppressive. The mountain-like fists were also extremely quick and as sharp as blades. They moved forwards with the force of a landslide and the power of a tidal wave. It was difficult to breathe when facing such an attack.

When the audience saw the attack, their hearts started pounding nervously. Those punches could easily destroy mountain ranges and kill hundreds of thousands of cultivators at the same time. They could imagine that all the emperors who were standing in the crowd would die at the same time if they faced such an attack.

I'll see how strong I really am then! It's an opportunity!, thought Lin Feng. He proudly stood in the sky, his black hair fluttering in the wind caused by the mountain-like punches.

“He's not dodging, and he's not condensing strength to block the attack either!” exclaimed the crowd.

Lin Feng shouted furiously, his robe fluttering in the wind. He looked like a demon king. He bent down and then performed an uppercut. He used as much physical strength as he could in that punch. It felt like his strength could destroy everything in its way.

DONG!

Lin Feng had the impression he was going to suffocate beneath the golden punches, before he heard cracking sounds spread out, and thunder echo out. The golden mountain-like punches exploded in flashes of golden light.

Lin Feng was still standing there, his clothes still fluttering. He still looked like a demon king.

The watchers were astonished. Zhou Rong Man, Kong Ming, and Lin Feng's physical strength was astonishing. They could easily crush ordinary great emperors!

However, Lin Feng's attack didn't suffice to make Kong Ming open his eyes. He was still seated there calmly, his golden Buddhas floating around him. He continued using his Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha Solution techniques. Each time he attacked, he condensed the strength of his Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha Solution technique. Each time, the ground trembled.

He continued singing his mantra in his awe-inspiring Brahmic voice. The crowd saw the Buddhas rise up into the air at the same time. The Buddhas all opened their mouths and shouted furiously together.

“Ah...!” Some people in distant Godly Clouds City gave horrible shrieks as their eardrums trembled. Lin Feng's blood boiled

furiously in his ears. Buddha's cry was magnificent and dangerous!

It was just the beginning, the Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha attacks continued intensifying. The Buddhas raised their golden fists and 108 punches hurdled towards Lin Feng. Nothing could stop them.

Lin Feng frowned and released Ancient Desolate intent into the air. He condensed Sky Absorbing strength and punched out unceasingly in the direction of those Buddha's punches. Explosions kept erupting around them.

When all the strength was destroyed. Lin Feng looked at the 108 Buddhas as they moved again.

What an amazing battle. He had first used the Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song against Kong Ming's Great Compassion Dhāraṇī, but it hadn't worked. Then, he had used cursing strength, but Kong Ming was too strong, so cursing strength hadn't been very efficient, either. There were many mantras and other kinds of spells in Buddhist scriptures, so stopping cursing strength was easy for Buddhist cultivators.

Therefore, using the most powerful attacks possible was the only way. Direct attacks affected the golden bodies. Kong Ming was much, much stronger defensively than Hua Qing Feng or Ni Cang. Demon curses or Great Dream of Life strength was useless against him. Kong Ming's Buddhist strength had reached awesome levels, and his Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha Solution techniques were Saint's techniques, timeless and mighty.

Nine words appeared around Lin Feng, his body became hard to make out. He started chanting his incantation.

At the same time, he released ancient desolate Qi, which filled the air. The atmosphere suddenly smelled old, and energies moved in all directions.

Deployment lights started intertwining. Lin Feng carved words

with his hands, which turned into gigantic deployment spell words. A gigantic word, OPPRESSION, appeared in the sky. At the same time, Lin Feng started spinning. His veins and muscles were trembling.

The Ancient Holy Technique could change or oppress anything. Qin Shan had turned into terrifying cauldrons, which could oppress a Saint's strength in the whole valley back in the historical remains. Now, Lin Feng didn't need to oppress a Saint, he just needed to oppress Kong Ming!

Lin Feng rose up in the air and the crowd saw Lin Feng's body disappear suddenly. A dazzling cauldron appeared in the sky. OPPRESSION was blazing upon it. At the same time, the nine words twinkled and spun around the ancient cauldron. Sky Absorbing strength resonated with the nine words of the incantation and the ancient cauldron of the Ancient Holy Technique.

Brilliant lights flashed blindingly. Lin Feng's ancient cauldron moved towards Kong Ming. Kong Ming kept releasing Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha punches at the cauldron, but they all disappeared instantly. The cauldron could oppress anything.

Lin Feng's clones were standing there watching. Kong Ming wasn't going to just let Lin Feng oppress him!

The Buddhas' voices grew louder and louder. The 108 Buddhas then bowed, bathing in Buddhist halos. They summoned a gigantic golden Buddha twenty meters tall. It merged with Kong Ming. The 108 Buddhas gathered to protect him as halos illuminated everything.

The gigantic ancient cauldron oppressed everything. The gigantic ancient Buddha high raised his hands, his fingers like golden mountains, towards the ancient cauldron.

The ancient cauldron and the gigantic fingers stopped moving, they were both oppressed. The 108 Buddhas protected the gigantic

Buddha, and it couldn't move forwards anymore!



# Chapter 2207: Destruction of the Golden Body

---

“Kong Ming is really strong, like an ancient Buddha. His strength is incredible. He has really reached the peak of perfection in terms of Buddhist cultivation. And Lin Feng, in his ancient cauldron form, can oppress the gigantic Buddha. He’s also incredible!” mused some experts, enjoying the incredible duel.

——

On the other side, Chu Chun Qiu and Zhou Rong Man’s battle was also intense and fierce. Chu Chun Qiu’s Sky Absorbing intent was at its peak. He was absorbing Zhou Rong Man’s will. At the same time, his vitality and intent were both explosive. Zhou Rong Man had opened his third eye, where indestructible golden lights twinkled. His attacks were violent, intense, and fierce. However, Chu Chun Qiu kept some distance between him and Zhou Rong Man. He understood perfectly what Zhou Rong Man’s weakness was!

“That battle is extremely difficult for Zhou Rong Man. He’s better at close combat and Chu Chun Qiu’s vitality and intent are terrifying. He keeps absorbing Zhou Rong Man’s will, so Zhou Rong Man won’t be able to hold on much longer. His physical strength and defense are incredible, but his weakness is too incapacitating,” the experts discussed among themselves. Actually, Zhou Rong Man wasn’t slow, but in comparison with the finalists, he wasn’t fast enough.

At that moment, Buddha’s voices made the earth and sky shake violently. The crowd turned their heads and saw the gigantic Buddha and the 108 Buddhas chanting mantras in their mighty Brahmic voices again. Golden lights kept bombarding the ancient cauldrons, and it was shaking.

“Kong Ming’s 108 Buddhas can also chant mantras, which makes

the attacks against the ancient cauldron even stronger,” the experts nodded. Kong Ming’s abilities were better than Zhou Rong Man’s because he was very good both in terms of defense and offense, and he could also fight within a certain ranged distance and in close combat.

However, nobody knew just how fast Kong Ming could be because he never moved. He was like a statue when he fought. He just sat down in the air and stopped moving like an indestructible golden statue.

“Lin Feng’s clones can’t do much either over there. Maybe Kong Ming will destroy them and then destroy the cauldron?” some people predicted. He had released clones a while before, but they hadn’t done much so far.

Finally, they moved. They turned into Holy Spirit swords and fused together. At the same time, in the middle of them, a scroll picture deployment spell appeared as well as a celestial stage deployment spell. The clones moved extremely quickly.

The Holy Spirit swords turned into a gigantic sword. One of Lin Feng’s clones moved, and in the twinkling of an eye, the ancient sword streaked across the sky and penetrated into the celestial stage deployment spell. Its explosive strength became even more intense and the air began to shriek about it.

The energies moved towards Kong Ming. However, the crowd realized that the energies weren’t really moving towards Kong Ming, they contained some the force of the earth and sky and Ancient Desolate intent and they stopped next to the cauldron.

An even greater oppressive strength filled the air. The Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha strength weakened. The sound of the mantras also weakened.

“Lin Feng’s clones contain strength too. Those two guys are terrifyingly strong. They have both made it to the top of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“Lin Feng is still moving. He’s condensing a second sword!” the crowd was astonished. That second sword was made of Holy Spirits, also containing the force of the earth and sky. Around his sword, the atmosphere turned into Ancient Desolate strength.

Very quickly, the second sword made the atmosphere shake violently. The mantras kept weakening. They were being oppressed!

When the third ancient sword appeared, Kong Ming’s real body raised his head, and the 108 Buddhas also raised their heads.

They were bathing in golden lights. They kept chanting their mantras in magnificent Brahmic voices. All his Buddhist energies intertwined. Lin Feng’s clones moved extremely quickly too. Many swords appeared and condensed. Six more gigantic swords appeared, ran through the air, and absorbed the force of the earth and sky.

Kong Ming’s lips kept moving, soundwaves kept emerging from his mouth. Ancient golden imprints appeared and intertwined in front of him. Ancient Buddhist words moved towards the ancient cauldron.

“Oppress!” Six of Lin Feng’s clones were holding swords and stayed close to defend. At the same time, nine of Lin Feng’s clones who had swords moved forwards.

Kong Ming also attacked. The air thundered, and the ancient cauldron kept trembling. The ancient swords trembled as if they had were about to break apart, but held together.

One of Lin Feng’s clones stayed there, not attacking directly. He was carving deployment marks to oppress the Buddhist soundwaves. The deployment spells were forcing the Buddhas to lower their heads!

The deployment spells intertwined. The nine swords rotated. The atmosphere around turned into an ancient world oppressing

everything. The Buddhas were even more pressured.

“Three Saint’s techniques. Was the Diviner right, back in the days?” whispered Kong Ming. He had challenged Lin Feng for several reasons, the main one was that they were both from the same world. Another one was that he wanted to check whether the Diviner had been right back in the days. Back then, the Diviner had thought that Lin Feng was the strongest cultivator of the event.

Kong Ming didn’t need to prove anything. He was extremely strong and knew it, he didn’t need to defeat Lin Feng to satisfy himself. But since they both participating in this Meeting, why not fight?

Now the Diviner was here. On the inside, he wished he could have proven the Diviner was wrong... but no, the Diviner’s Destiny Technique was incredible. If Lin Feng had lost, it would have proved that the Diviner’s technique wasn’t that efficient.

Kong Ming practiced cultivation extremely diligently. He relied solely on himself. Back then, he hadn’t even thought of becoming a disciple of one of the twelve Shrines. He wasn’t interested. He actually had absolutely no weakness.

The swords kept rotating and oppressing him. The ancient cauldron was oppressing him, too. Gradually, clear breaking and snapping sounds spread in the air. One of the Buddhas cracked.

“It’s breaking,” murmured Kong Ming in a low voice. However, everybody heard him.

Kacha... another cracking sound. The Buddhas were breaking. They couldn’t oppress Lin Feng anymore.

“Go!” whispered Kong Ming. The 108 Buddhas raised their heads, solemn and respectful. They shot forwards even though Kong Ming knew they were going to break. As they pressed forwards, some of them exploded. However, some of them still managed to reach the cauldron, raising their hands and punching it.

The cauldron clanged and trembled. If the nine words of the incantation hadn't protected it, it would have broken apart.

The gigantic golden Buddha also started crumbling. Breaking and snapping sounds spread in the air. Kong Ming closed his eyes and continued chanting mantras in his Brahma voice. The thunder of crumbling Buddhas did not stop, as they continued breaking apart.

Kong Ming's golden body also started crackling. Suddenly, he was forced away and slowly descended from the sky. He raised his head and looked at the destructive strength above. He said, "I have lost this battle."

The nine swords disappeared. The ancient cauldron turned back into Lin Feng again. Lin Feng coughed. His face was pale, and his organs were twitching. This fight had been so difficult... and so rewarding too!

One last battle awaited him for the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

——

"Lin Feng won! He defeated Kong Ming! He ranked 100-something and now he's in the top five!" sighed the crowd, now pepping up again after being released from the Buddhist melody.

Nobody thought Lin Feng was lucky. They knew it had been very difficult for him to make it there. He had fought against some of the strongest cultivators of the competition. He had fought against Supreme Clouds' First Master, Godly Clouds' First Master, and others. Now, he had defeated Kong Ming.

As the four finalists had agreed, Lin Feng was going to fight one more battle!

"Maybe the last battle is not necessary. I don't think Kong Ming is weaker than Chu Chun Qiu," many people speculated. They didn't know what the last battles were going to be like, but one thing was certain, Lin Feng was definitely going to finish in the top

two!

## Chapter 2208: Final Ranking

---

Lin Feng and Kong Ming's battle was over. Everybody was now staring at Zhou Rong Man and Chu Chun Qiu.

At that moment, Chu Chun Qiu was oppressing Zhou Rong Man. Zhou Rong Man had an incredible strength, but he looked like he was in pain. He had the impression he was carrying the whole world on his shoulders. Chu Chun Qiu's Sky Absorbing intent kept absorbing his will.

"Ah..." Zhou Rong Man shouted furiously in pain.

"Hmph!" Chu Chun Qiu grunted coldly. He continued oppressing Zhou Rong Man. A vortex appeared and moved towards Zhou Rong Man's head. He was trembling.

Zhou Rong Man was in a frenzy, like an animal in a cage. However, he didn't want to give up, how could Zhou Rong Man, the 333rd son of the Zhou Clan, give up this battle?

"Argh!" Zhou Rong Man shouted desperately, suddenly raising his head. His golden third eye turned red as blood, like a gloomy sea of blood had appeared in his third eye.

Chu Chun Qiu continued absorbing his will with his Sky Absorbing intent. A horrible shriek arose as he was abruptly driven backwards violently, his eyes bloodshot.

What kind of intent is that?, thought Chu Chun Qiu, his face frozen. Chu Chun Qiu had the impression he was going insane after having absorbing that will. He was terribly angry. Zhou Rong Man, you bastard! What a monster!

Zhou Rong Man's eyes were bloodshot. He was staring at Chu Chun Qiu with his three eyes.

What a guy, thought Lin Feng and Kong Ming, looking at Zhou Rong Man. Truly a monster. Chu Chun Qiu was extremely strong, but the others didn't know what had just happened with that

shout.

Zhou Rong Man roared out, venting something deep inside. His third eye dimmed down. He was shaking, looking like he was trying to oppress the strength of his third eye.

Zhou Rong Man took a step forwards and then aside before sitting down cross-legged. He closed his third eye, and his violent will disappeared. He became extremely calm.

—

The crowd was astonished. Who had won?

“A moment ago, Chu Chun Qiu was oppressing Zhou Rong Man really bad, and then Zhou Rong Man went crazy. Chu Chun Qiu still should have won if he could defeat Zhou Rong Man. However, it’s still difficult to know who’s stronger between the two of them. Zhou Rong Man is such a monster...”

Three people could still fight: Lin Feng, Kong Ming, and Chu Chun Qiu. They were going to finish in the top three of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“Those last three cultivators have exceeded everybody’s expectations,” sighed many people. They would have never thought that those three people would end up in the top three.

Chu Chun Qiu turned around and stared at Lin Feng. Lin Feng also looked back at him.

They were both extremely strong. Chu Chun Qiu’s Sky Absorbing strength was terrifying. If Lin Feng wanted to defeat him, he would need to use his full strength, but could he still use his full strength? He was probably too exhausted. Killing such people was nearly impossible even in normal circumstances.

Such people became more and more terrifying with time, especially that Chu Chun Qiu, his cultivation speed was terrifying. Lin Feng thought very highly of Chu Chun Qiu.



“We fought before I broke through. Do you still have energy to fight against me?” Lin Feng asked Chu Chun Qiu calmly.

Chu Chun Qiu remained silent. He had seen Lin Feng and Kong Ming’s battle a moment before. It had been even more impressive than his own fight. Lin Feng had indeed become a bit stronger.

At this time, Chu Chun Qiu thought that fighting against Lin Feng would be difficult, indeed. He would never have thought that Lin Feng would become so strong so quickly. He should have killed him a long time ago!

Chu Chun Qiu was still thinking that if he had the opportunity, he would absorb Lin Feng’s will. It would be amazing...

“Chu Chun Qiu, fight against me,” said Kong Ming calmly. He had lost against Lin Feng. He didn’t need to fight anymore, but since Chu Chun Qiu was also a terrifying cultivator, he still wanted to try if he could best him.

Chu Chun Qiu turned to Kong Ming. He knew that Kong Ming was terrifyingly strong. His Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha Solution, Indestructible Golden Body and Great Compassion Dhāraṇī were incredible. He had reached the peak of perfection in all those skills and techniques.

“Use your full strength for this battle,” said Kong Ming calmly. An incredible amount of golden lights appeared. He immediately started chanting mantras in his Brahma voice, and 108 Buddhas appeared. He turned into a golden body and rose up into the air. He looked like a Vairocana.

The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī strength slowly filled the air. Many people made their hearing stop functioning this time because they didn’t want to hear the Great Compassion Dhāraṇī. It influenced their will. They were worried that such powerful attacks would have consequences to their cultivation.

Chu Chun Qiu was standing proudly in the air. An ancient king

appeared behind him. He looked like a peerless cultivator. His vitality and intent were explosive and terrifying. The Great Compassion Dhāraṇī couldn't affect his vitality and intent. On the contrary, his terrifying vitality and intent surged towards Kong Ming.

However, Chu Chun Qiu's vitality and intent attacks were far more effective against Lin Feng, due to Kong Ming's cultivation type. He was a Buddhist cultivator, and his Great Compassion Dhāraṇī protected him from such impure attacks. It was difficult to attack Kong Ming's will.

"If he wants to defeat Kong Ming, he has to do it like Lin Feng, using pure physical strength and crushing his golden body."

Chu Chun Qiu couldn't do the same as Lin Feng, because their ways of fighting were completely different. Defeating Lin Feng would be easier for Chu Chun Qiu than defeating Kong Ming, even if Lin Feng had defeated Kong Ming.

However, Chu Chun Qiu wasn't going to flinch. He continued releasing explosive vitality and intent. People's vitality and intent could influence attacks. Chu Chun Qiu wanted his attacks to be as powerful as possible.

He jumped forwards, the earth and sky became paler. His intent expanded aggressively. He could easily kill emperors of the top of the Huang Qi layer with such attacks, but his attack wasn't effective against Kong Ming. However, Kong Ming continued releasing strength.

Kong Ming continued using his Ten Thousand Celestial Buddha, his Buddha's lights becoming more and more dazzling. Golden words appeared in the sky. They turned into gigantic Buddhist imprints and rotated. They were getting more and more powerful. Kong Ming was using his most powerful attacks as well!

The twenty-meter high Buddha appeared, its head reached the sky. The imprints rotated around its body. Gigantic fists appeared

around it, radiating danger.

The gigantic ancient imprints penetrated into the words and moved towards Chu Chun Qiu. Instantly, Chu Chun Qiu was surrounded by Buddhist halos.

Chu Chun Qiu jumped forwards. His vitality and intent grew more and more powerful. His ancient king shouted furiously. The ancient Buddha shouted loudly as cracks appeared on it.

However, Chu Chun Qiu also had the sensation his arms were being crushed. He was thrown backwards violently and spat out blood.

The gigantic Buddha attacked for the fourth time. Chu Chun Qiu was furious, he stopping and moving forwards again. He punched out unceasingly, and the gigantic Buddha's hands finally cracked, losing their intensity.

Chu Chun Qiu smashed the Buddhist lights around him. His face was deathly pale and his blood was boiling.

"Chu Chun Qiu can resist against such attacks, he's a real genius, but he's going to lose anyway," the experts murmured.

But Chu Chun Qiu had defeated Zhou Rong Man, Kong Ming had defeated Chu Chun Qiu, and Lin Feng had defeated Kong Ming. The final ranking was already obvious, it was just that the final battle had already been fought by Kong Ming and Lin Feng.

Suddenly, everybody looked at Lin Feng, had he finished the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds in first place?

At that moment, people's hearts were pounding.

Jing, Qing Feng, Hou Qing Lin, Lang Ye, Jun Mo Xi, Jian Mang and the others, the members of the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan, the Pellet Kings Clan, Yao Yao and many, many other people had palpitations as they stared at Lin Feng!

# Chapter 2209: All Eyes Tracking

---

Back in the icy small world of the Snow Clan...

An old woman was standing in the snow. Next to her were a few old people.

“What’s going on?” asked someone at that moment. Someone appeared next to the old woman. If Lin Feng had been there, he would have recognized that person. It was the man who had taken Meng Qing away from him.

“Listen to them,” said the old woman calmly. At that moment, the man looked over at the group of people.

“All the Shrines’ members are at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said an old man in the group of people in front of the old woman. The person who had just arrived looked astonished. “It is quite surprising. The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds takes place every hundred years, one Shrine is in charge, and the others can’t get involved.”

“Yes, but you probably remember the Shrines’ great war a long time ago, though,” said the old woman indifferently. The old men frowned nervously. The Shrines’ war back in the days had shaken the whole continent. It had been tragic, and many people had died. Entire worlds had disappeared.

Back then, they had still been young. It had been a tragedy for the Snow Clan, too. Three of their kings had died back then. They couldn’t forget about it.

“The Fortune Shrine has an incredible Destiny Technique. The other Shrines have nothing like it. However, a short time ago, someone said that their Elder used the Great Destiny Technique,” said the old woman calmly. The crowd was astonished to hear about the Great Destiny Technique.

“The Fortune Shrine used the Great Destiny Technique? Why

would they tell people about that?” asked that person skeptically.

“I don’t know. But the Shrines are fierce. It’s not surprising,” said the old woman indifferently.

“Indeed. But the fact that the Fortune Shrine used the Great Destiny Technique is intriguing, meaningful, and thought-provoking.”

“Maybe it is due to the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. There is news about that kid. All the Shrines arrived at the battle stage of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

“Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?!” whispered that person. “The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds is going to end soon. I wonder who the Fortune Shrine will recruit!”

“No matter who they choose, we don’t need to get involved. We can’t compete with the Shrines. We can only watch silently. Let’s not waste energy,” answered the old woman calmly.

The man nodded. He knew that the Snow Clan couldn’t compete with the Shrines. They would need many, many years before being able to compete with the Shrines. Maybe if a peerless cultivator appeared in the Snow Clan, it would help them, like little Zhe Tian...

Everybody gazed into the distance. What was going to happen during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? It wasn’t going to be ordinary this year. The Great Destiny Technique required lots of energy, only core disciples of the Fortune Shrine had access to such techniques.

---

Back at the battle stage of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, everybody was staring at the fighters inside. They all had palpitations.

Little Zhe Tian clenched his fists. The young man in front of him had transmitted some news to the Snow Clan. He looked excited,

he knew things weren't over.

Behind him, Xue Shen Feng pulled a long face and stared at Lin Feng.

He came in first, how is that possible?, thought Xue Shen Feng. He felt desperate. How could Lin Feng become so strong, so quickly? Back during the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List, Lin Feng wasn't that strong. After today, Lin Feng would be famous everywhere in the Continent of the Nine Clouds! Everybody would know he had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. People in the Holy City and Champion University would also learn about it!

---

Actually, many people in Godly Clouds City kept using their jade talismans with the full strength of their godly awareness, using telepathy to tell distant people about events.

What a guy, he surprisingly finished first, thought Jing, staring at Lin Feng. She looked over at Qing Feng. Qing Feng was beaming, and looked bewitched. She was happy for Lin Feng!

He's first. He'd definitely be a good match for Qing Feng, thought Jing. She was still staring at Lin Feng. Where did he come from? He had defeated Ni Cang, Hua Qing Feng, Kong Ming... She had been amazed by Lin Feng's speed when he was fighting against Kong Ming, too.

---

Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, Ruo Xie, Jun Mo Xi, Lang Ye, Jian Mang, and all the others were happy for Lin Feng. Lin Feng had finished first. It was one more proof in his life, just another milestone.

"From now on, Lin Feng will be known as a splendid and glorious cultivator in Champion University. His name will always be carved at the top of the ranking list. They will make a statue of him. Such a cultivator will be without parallel in the history of Champion

University!” said Ruo Xie with a smile.

Best emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds! It was incredible. The top three cultivators of the meeting would become kings in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It was difficult to imagine. How strong would Lin Feng be a hundred years from now?

“I never thought that Brother Lin Feng would be so incredible. Even Brother Ling Huang isn’t as strong,” said Yao Yao, laughing.

Ru Feng was also astonished. Back then, they were worried when Lin Feng had fought against Wang Jie. Now, they knew that someone like Wang Jie was like an insect in Lin Feng’s eyes. They belonged to different worlds!

—

Of course, apart from people who were happy for Lin Feng, there were many people who were furious. The members of the Deva-Mara Thunder Clan all pulled long faces.

Lin Feng had finished first. He was going to become a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine. The Deva-Mara Thunder Clan wouldn’t be able to avenge Lei Dong Tian anymore. Would Lin Feng want to take his revenge against them? Probably. So he had to die, as soon as possible!

—

Hua Qing Feng was also staring at Lin Feng. He sighed and thought, “I’m a Confucian and sword cultivator. I control two types of Dao intent. I’m really strong. I was Godly Clouds’ First Master. But on the battle stage of the meeting, I ended up sixth. Those people even have Saint’s techniques, which they already master at their own level. If your Dao intent isn’t at the highest level possible, then you can’t pose a threat to those people.”

Hua Qing Feng now knew that he needed to study more. Lin Feng’s Saint’s techniques were terrifying. Kong Ming’s strength

was also astonishing, an expert in both defense and offense. All the people who had ranked better than him were terrifyingly strong cultivators.

---

The Young Beast Masters, Saint Tianhun, Zhuo Qing, they were all staring at Lin Feng. If Lin Feng joined the Fortune Shrine, he would become even stronger, even faster.

Lin Feng had finished first. He would become a core disciple in the Fortune Shrine. He would have access to all the Saint's Techniques of the Fortune Shrine. In the future, the difference between him and them would keep increasing. If Lin Feng became a member of the Fortune Shrine, they wouldn't be able to kill Lin Feng anymore.

---

In Godly Clouds City, there were people from everywhere in the Continent, so of course there were people from the Dark Night Region as well. There were people from all the dynasties of Qi Tian Holy Town. Some of them were very nervous. Back in the day, they had joined hands to attack Lin Feng by surprise. Would Lin Feng want to get his revenge?

Amongst people from the Dynasties, some people were also smiling broadly... the people from the Holy Spirit Dynasty! Their eyes were twinkling. He was their Holy Dynasty Prince! In the future, his son would become a Holy Emperor in their dynasty! Their future Holy Emperor's father would be a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine! It was incredible. A new era was starting for the Holy Spirit Dynasty!

---

The Diviner was standing in the air, smiling thinly. Lin Feng had succeeded, he had made it this far. He was the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Destiny Wheel had really



rotated because of him. He had guessed right!

The Great Destiny Technique can't predict everything; his destiny is in his own hands, we can't predict the future. The predictions of the Great Destiny Technique don't control his life, thought the Diviner. He was just waiting. Nobody was saying anything. He was waiting for people to recover.

---

After a long time, Prince Wu Qing recovered. Zhou Rong Man came back to his senses. The others finished recovering, too. The Diviner waved his hand and said calmly, "In the name of the Fortune Shrine, I'll announce the rankings officially: Lin Feng, first; Kong Ming, second; Chu Chun Qiu, third; Zhou Rong Man, fourth; Bestial Deployment Spell Caster, fifth; Hua Qing Feng, sixth; Yu Qing, seventh; Jiu Ling Huang, eighth; Prince Wu Qing, ninth; Mara, tenth!"

The crowd stared at the top ten.

However, at that moment, a few silhouettes appeared in the sky, they were wearing black armor and looked like demons. One of them said, "Congratulations everybody for finishing in the top ten."

That voice didn't sound harmonious at all, and he had just interrupted the Diviner. The Diviner was making a public announcement in the name of the Fortune Shrine!

## Chapter 2210

---

Everybody slowly turned to that person. Even the Diviner looked at them.

That person smiled coldly and looked at the top ten cultivators.

“Of course, these people are now members of the Fortune Shrine, I just wanted to congratulate them in the name of the Demon Shrine,” said that person, looking at the Diviner calmly. However, he was smiling ominously.

“I represent the Fire Shrine. Congratulations!” said someone else. He was wearing a fire robe. He had no Qi. However, people had the impression that he was bathing in flames at the same time. It was very strange. Next to him was a young man.

“I represent the Empty Space Shrine. Congratulations!” said someone else. That person seemed to be in another world. Next to him, there was also a young man wearing a golden cloak.

“I represent the Ice and Snow Shrine. Congratulations.”

People looked at all the members of the Shrines. What was going on?

“What are the members of the other Shrines doing here? Are they really here to congratulate the winners?” whispered the crowd uneasily.

Many strong cultivators frowned. Duan Feng frowned too and thought, The Shrines are not allowed to get involved when another Shrine organizes the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Only young people can come and watch, but now some extremely strong cultivators have come. What is going on?

“The top ten cultivators are extremely strong. Gu Xuan Tian, one of our disciples, is extremely strong and talented. All the other Shrines also have geniuses. Why not give young people an opportunity to exchange views on cultivation?” said the strong

cultivator of the Demon Shrine at that moment.

Everybody looked at the young man next to him. That must be Gu Xuan Tian...

“Gu Xuan Tian is one of the three strongest cultivators of his generation in the Demon Shrine. He’s terrifyingly strong. He went to the Supreme Animal World alone, killed a real dragon and used its body to make armor. Many people from the Dragon Clan in the Supreme Animal World were furious. They went to the Demon Shrine to capture him, three real dragons fought against Gu Xuan Tian, but they lost. Nobody has talked about it since,” reported some people.

That guy was terrifyingly strong, a core disciple in a Shrine. Even though the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were also extremely strong, they couldn’t win against him. After all, people from Shrines belonged to another world, especially core disciples who benefited from the Shrines’ teachings on a daily basis.

“Huo Xing Zi, a disciple of the Fire Shrine, also wants to exchange views on cultivation with the geniuses of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!” said a strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine calmly. Many people’s faces twitched.

“Huo Xing Zi, he’s got phoenix wings. All the young people of the Shrines know how terrifying he is!” some whispered. Did the Shrines want to cause trouble for the Fortune Shrine? All the emperors the Shrines had brought with them were terrifyingly strong.

“According to legends, Huo Xing Zi has a Godly Fire Body. He can absorb any kind of fire, transform it to make it his own, and at the same time increase his inherent fire.”

The strong cultivators of the different Shrines introduced the young people who were on their side. Many people gulped, dumbstruck. The top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the

Continent of the Nine Clouds were in danger!

The ten Shrines had selected their most outstanding emperors and come there to challenge the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, that wasn't fair at all. Maybe if the Shrines had selected the top ten cultivators they had, maybe the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds could defeat one or two. Like everyone, the Shrines' disciples were more or less stronger, but overall they were all overwhelmingly strong.

Now all those Shrines had brought their most outstanding cultivators; the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds couldn't defeat them.

"Only Lin Feng, Kong Ming, Zhou Rong Man and Chu Chun Qiu can resist those people, and that is not even sure. The last six don't stand a chance," thought the crowd. Even Duan Feng and the young man of the Snow Clan were astonished. The Shrines were too audacious!

The people from Godly Clouds City, as well as those who had participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, didn't understand. They had never heard those young people's names before, but they noticed that the observers were astonished. Were those people the strongest disciples the Shrines had?

"What is going on? I remember that a hundred years ago, the Fire Shrine organized the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and when it finished, they took all the geniuses with them. No Shrine got involved," whispered someone. For many cultivators, a hundred years wasn't long. Many of them had seen the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds before.

"And two hundred years ago, the Ice and Snow Shrine did the same, they recruited disciples and no other Shrine got involved. What is going on this time? "

Many people didn't understand and looked skeptical.

The Diviner raised his head and sighed. He wouldn't have thought that what the Shrine's leader had said would really happen. He gazed into the distance and looked at a palace in particular. The Fortune Shrine probably knew what was happening already.

---

People in the Fortune Shrine knew, obviously.

There was a distant celestial palace floating in the sky. There were many people in front of it. A white-bearded old man with the demeanor of a transcendent being had his back turned to them.

It was the Fortune Shrine's leader. He looked at all the stars in the sky.

He slowly turned around and looked at the blurry silhouettes in front of him. He smiled and said, "Dear friends, long time no see. I hope you're good."

"A thousand years have passed," said a crooked old man, also smiling indifferently. They looked friendly as they all walked towards a table.

"Indeed. A thousand years ago, you all came here. I remember we had a cup of tea here, too," said the Fortune Shrine's leader slowly. Glasses appeared and he gave everybody a cup of tea.

"We're old and tired now," said another old man, drinking tea and sighing. He raised his head and looked at the Fortune Shrine's leader. "Where are all the little boys who usually follow you?"

"I imprisoned them," replied the Fortune Shrine's leader calmly, as if he had said something normal. The others were astonished, smiling and shaking their heads, "Old friend, you're still quite tough!"

"They've been following me for so many years, and in the end, I realized they had been doing some things behind my back. They betrayed me and told some of my secrets," sighed the Fortune

Shrine's leader sighing. He looked disappointed. Some people who had been following him for at least a thousand years had told other Shrines about his secrets. He wasn't surprised.

"We know. No need to hide anything," said one of them indifferently. He looked at the Fortune Shrine's leader and said sharply, "Who's the person?"

At that moment, the others stopped moving and stared at the Fortune Shrine's leader.

"Why did the Destiny Wheel rotate?" asked someone else.

After remaining silent for a few seconds, the Fortune Shrine's leader smiled and said, "That's why I imprisoned them. I will check their memories. Even if I feel sorry for them, I have to know the truth."

"Oppress them, of course," said someone, staring at the Fortune Shrine's leader heartlessly. His voice sounded cold.

"It's not easy to oppress them," said the Fortune Shrine's leader, shaking his head.

"Then, kill them all. Don't let any of them off," said someone else emotionlessly. That person's demon intent was terrifying. He wanted to kill the ten best cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

The Fortune Shrine's leader shook his head. He didn't say much more. Since he couldn't predict the future, he could only do his best!

## Chapter 2211: Gu Xuan Tian

---

The light curtain around the platform of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds disappeared. Gu Xuan Tian and the nine other strong cultivators walked towards the platform as oppressive energies appeared.

Lin Feng and the others opened their eyes. They hadn't thought that right after the end of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the ten Shrines would send strong cultivators to fight against them.

Kong Ming looked solemn and respectful. He put his palms together as if nothing could affect him. Golden lights surrounded him and he started chanting mantras in his magnificent Brahma voice.

Chu Chun Qiu's expression was sharp and he released energies. Their enemies were extremely strong. It would be very difficult to fight against them.

"I didn't finish first, so now it's another opportunity to amaze the whole Continent of the Nine Clouds," said Zhou Rong Man, smiling when he saw all this. If he managed to destroy these people, everybody would admire him. Even in such circumstances he was smiling.

The other six were astonished. They were geniuses, they had finished in the top ten of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, they had gone through so much to achieve it. They had participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds to become stronger, and to join a Shrine. These geniuses were from Shrines, so the battles would be extremely difficult.

The Diviner didn't stop anyone, he looked unmoved. The crowd was surprised, but at the same time, some people understood that the Diviner couldn't stop those strong cultivators from ten different Shrines. However, how would they feel if they knew that

the leaders of all the Shrines were drinking tea together?

“I want this one.” The ten strong cultivators were standing halfway up in the air. One of them was pointing at Lin Feng. He was wearing a black robe, which was fluttering in the wind. He looked like a demon and was staring at Lin Feng with his pitch-black eyes.

“You did well. You know several Saint’s techniques, and you ranked first. Show me how strong you really are,” said Gu Xuan Tian, staring at Lin Feng in cold excitement.

Lin Feng looked back at Gu Xuan Tian, as a black spear appeared in the other’s hand. It was filled with Demon intent which pulsed around it. It could easily kill people. His demon energies were overwhelming and pressed down on Lin Feng. He looked like a proud, aggressive, and arrogant demon king overlord.

“Show me how strong the geniuses of the Demon Shrine are,” said Lin Feng releasing his own intent. A gigantic black demon sword appeared in his hand.

Huo Xing Zi landed in front of Jiu Ling Huang. Jiu Ling Huang released his fire Qi. Huo Xing Zi was a fire master, he looked at Jiu Ling Huang greedily. Jiu Ling Huang’s fire could help him become much stronger. The other strong cultivators from the other Shrines also landed in front of their opponents. In a few seconds, the air was humming with power.

“How strong!” murmured the participants of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds when they saw those people, including Lin Feng.

Gu Xuan Tian was holding his demon spear and walking towards Lin Feng. At his back, a demon shadow appeared and roared out thunderously. It looked exactly the same as him. His demon energies were getting stronger and stronger.

“The demon energies become more powerful as he walks



forwards,” observed the crowd watching Gu Xuan Tian. Lin Feng had ranked first during the Meeting, so many people focused on his battle. Many of those people found Gu Xuan Tian scary...

Lin Feng released a Holy Spirit sword, which swept away the demonic pressure, humming furiously.

Gu Xuan Tian suddenly accelerated, more demon shadows appearing and overlapping. The terrifying demon king's spear suddenly moved forwards, demon energies intertwining. The demon shadows all held spears and condensed, pressing forwards with an indomitable will. The energies in the spears were deadly!

Lin Feng sensed the aggressive vortex of energies rolling towards him. He suddenly stepped forwards and raised his gigantic sword. Sharp weapon energies rose to the skies.

The spear crashed against the sword, and the air began to shake. Lin Feng released more strength through his arms and put them into the sword. It was an incredible strength, but he still felt pressured. His opponent's spear was extremely hard!

“Break!” shouted Gu Xuan Tian furiously. His spear trembled. Lin Feng sensed that the demon king was coming towards him quickly.

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. His voice caused soundwaves to condense in a wave of power. The demon king started cracking. Cosmic energies roared out, shocking everyone.

“How terrifying. No wonder that Lin Feng finished first, his soundwave strength is terrifying. But Gu Xuan Tian is also formidable. His spear keeps evolving. If Lin Feng wasn't that strong, he would have died instant!” judged those watching.

Gu Xuan Tian was a genius of the Demon Shrine, one of their best emperors. People who didn't know him before were going to remember his name. There were such incredibly powerful cultivators in that place.

The crowd was astonished when they saw the second wave of destructive energies. The demonic Gu Xuan Tian exclaimed, "As expected, the first one is really strong."

He stepped forwards, accompanied by more thunder of energies in conflict. The ground was shaking violently. His energies roared out furiously, and his strength suddenly rose. His spear divided and turned into twelve spears, all shooting towards Lin Feng at the same time. Every spear looked like a black dragon, roaring eagerly. The sound alone could kill weaker people.

—

In Godly Clouds City, someone howled furiously. He had the sensation his head was going to explode because of the soundwaves.

"How scary." Many people put their hands on their ears and their hearts were pounding violently.

"How can Lin Feng resist such attacks?" wondered many people.

—

Lin Feng turned pitch-black and shot forwards in response. He raised the gigantic sword in front of him once again.

Lin Feng shouted like a dragon, making the ground tremble. Spears started breaking apart one after the other, but not all of them.

"Break!" Lin Feng shouted again. A gigantic axe appeared in front of him, and continued crushing the spears. Weapon Qi filled the air. At the same time, he used his gigantic sword to force Gu Xuan Tian back.

—

"Pfew... I wouldn't have thought that such battles would start right after the end of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!" Many people were clenching their fists.

“Lin Feng!” Qing Feng looked nervous. Even though Lin Feng kept forcing Gu Xuan Tian backwards, Gu Xuan Tian was extremely strong. His spear contained a terrifying strength. Even Lin Feng found him amazingly strong.

Hou Qing Lin and the others looked nervous, too. How strong. Gu Xuan Tian was strong, but so were Jin Xing Zi and the others. They were all peerless cultivators amongst emperors. Now they realized that there were people even stronger than those who had participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Those geniuses from the Shrines disdained everybody else.

“Brother.” Yao Yao was staring at her brother Jiu Ling Huang, Red Clouds’ First Master. He was incredibly strong, but Huo Xing Zi’s attacks were frightening.

“Brother Lin Feng, I hope nothing will happen to you.” Yao Yao looked at Lin Feng. When she saw that Lin Feng was fine, she took a deep breath, but her brother Jiu Ling Huang was now in danger. He was oppressed, and the others, too. Only Kong Ming, Chu Chun Qiu, and Zhou Rong Man had managed to resist their opponents.

However, it was impossible to say if any of them could defeat their opponents, because the fighters hadn’t used their full strength yet...

Gu Xuan Tian was staring at Lin Feng, his eyes like two dark caves.

“The first cultivator of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds hasn’t disappointed. Get ready to use your full strength now. What you’ve done up until now wasn’t enough,” said Gu Xuan Tian coldly. He was impatient. He had seen Kong Ming and Lin Feng’s explosive battle. He didn’t know how strong they really were, but he was self-confident and thought he could defeat them easily. He was even convinced he could defeat the other geniuses of the Shrines!

## Chapter 2212: Shrine and Massacre

---

Lin Feng watched Gu Xuan Tian. Another demon king had appeared behind Gu Xuan Tian. After that, demon lights glittered. Lin Feng saw Gu Xuan Tian's body divide into nine demon shadows. Five were at the bottom, three in the middle and one at the top, nine demon kings. A mighty demon Qi kept emerging from them. He looked like a peerless demon fighter.

A wave of demonic energies swept out from him. The demon looked extremely arrogant. The atmosphere became oppressive.

Lin Feng released an endless amount of Holy Spirit and modified Sky Absorbing strength. Nine words started floating around him. An ancient and oppressive Qi filled the air as he divided into three silhouettes. Lin Feng couldn't afford to be careless in front of a genius of a Shrine.

“Show me how strong you can get!” The nine demons shot towards Lin Feng, explosive strength emerging from them. The nine demons raised their hands at the same time and emitted furious shrieks. They had the same movements, and their explosive strength kept increasing.

Lin Feng looked cold and detached. He used his holy fist and roared out. Ancient Sky Absorbing strength surged out. A gigantic demon punch collided with the holy punch. Terrifying energies exploded. Gu Xuan Tian looked excited. He waved his hands, and terrifying demon strength continued moving towards Lin Feng. He wanted to destroy Lin Feng!

Lin Feng raised his head and released towering sword strength. A gigantic sword streaked across the sky and destroyed the gigantic demon hands.

—

“Lin Feng is really strong. Against all expectations, he can

compete with Gu Xuan Tian. I wonder how strong Gu Xuan Tian can be, though. People from Shrines can fight using many different methods.”

People from the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds weren't all like Lin Feng. Jiu Ling Huang had Vermilion Bird's wings. He was from a Shrine, and he couldn't be much weaker than Gu Xuan Tian. Fire appeared in his hands, looking alive. Jiu Ling Huang attacked the fire which was moving towards him with fire, but surprisingly, his fire instantly disappeared.

“Die!” shouted Jin Xing Zi at that moment. His fire turned into a fire mace, looking ever more terrifying. He wanted to crush his opponent!

Jiu Ling Huang released more flames, which looked like they were dancing in the air around him. The flames turned into a terrifying fire armor. Nine terrifying beams of light crashed onto the fire armor at the same time, but they didn't pierce through. Jin Xing Zi smiled coldly. He threw himself at Jiu Ling Huang and released even more fire. The fire pierced through the Jiu Ling Huang's fire armor and the armor started weakening. Many flames also emerged from Jin Xing Zi's fire mace and strengthened his attacks.

When the crowd saw that, their faces stiffened. Jin Xing Zi had a fire body, he could drain and absorb Jiu Ling Huang's fire. He could even absorb Jiu Ling Huang's nine flames. What could Jiu Ling Huang do against that?

“Jiu Ling Huang is in danger!” the crowd when they saw a vortex appear around Jiu Ling Huang's fire armor. Something was absorbing his fire. At the same time, his nine flames fled and returned to Jiu Ling Huang's body. Jiu Ling Huang couldn't let his nine flames move away from him, otherwise he would have lost his entire defense. When his nine flames were outside, his opponent could swallow them. Jiu Ling Huang couldn't afford to lose his fire!

“Come back.” Jiu Ling Huang sensed the danger. His expression didn’t change. He had recalled his fire into his body. Fire rotating around him. Nine flames glittered in his body. His opponent’s fire still couldn’t pierce through his body!

However, at that moment, Jin Xing Zi’s fire mace crashed onto Jiu Ling Huang’s body. A terrifying fire which could make anything explode bombarded Jiu Ling Huang’s vital organs. That fire oppressed his strength.

“Slash, slash!” Jiu Ling Huang grunted with pain and coughed up blood and flames as he was hurled away. He couldn’t stand steadily anymore. A terrifying fire was corroding his body. It felt like his opponent’s fire had planted fire seeds in his body.

Jiu Ling Huang closed his eyes. He made his inner fire move towards those fire seeds. He had to get rid of them. However, at that moment, Jin Xing Zi smiled evilly. He slowly walked towards Jiu Ling Huang.

A genius of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? He was a genius from a Shrine! He had gone through a lot in life. He had been chosen, selected, and eliminated many times during various events in his life. He had also gone through terrifying battles and killed many people. He was one of the three strongest emperors of the Fire Shrine, a core disciple of the Fire Shrine. He was an important element of the Fire Shrine! Most people at the same level, were too far behind to ever catch up.

—

“Oh no, the strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine wants to kill Jiu Ling Huang!” protested the crowd. Many people frowned. It was the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and now it was going to turn into a massacre?

“The strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine isn’t the only one. The other geniuses from the Shrines also want to kill their opponents!” people called out. Their hearts were pounding as they gazed into

the distance. They had never thought such a thing would happen.

“Ling Huang!” Ru Yun pulled a long face. How come? How was this possible? What was going on? Yao Yao looked extremely nervous and her face turned deathly pale. Her mouth twitched as she bit through her lips and blood appeared.

—

Jiu Ling Huang opened his eyes. He was burning and staring at his opponent.

“What a powerful fire. It’s going to become mine and I’ll break through to the Di Qi layer!” said Jin Xing Zi, staring at Jiu Ling Huang’s fire greedily. That kind of fire would be extremely beneficial for him!

He threw himself at Jiu Ling Huang, his fire mace leading the way.

Jiu Ling Huang didn’t only control fire strength. He could also carry out soul attacks. However, he had already tried them and they were useless against Jin Xing Zi because the latter managed to oppress them.

Jiu Ling Huang went into a frenzy. Jin Xing Zi’s fire pierced through his body. Jiu Ling Huang didn’t even block it. He used both hands to grab the handle of the fire mace and flames of fury burned in his eyes.

“Argh!” Jiu Ling Huang screamed defiantly. Scorching hot Qi rose. He turned into an ocean of flames and threw himself at Jin Xing Zi’s head.

Jin Xing Zi was shocked. He opened his eyes and spat out a fire bird reflexively. He wanted to absorb Jiu Ling Huang’s fire. However, Jiu Ling Huang’s fire continued pulsing out. Jin Xing Zi was astonished. He raised his hands to protect himself from the fire attack, jumping forwards as his own fire dashed to the skies. He disappeared in the fire and reappeared somewhere else. He

didn't even try to take back his fire mace.

He managed to injure me!, thought Jin Xing Zi. He was staring at his own hands. They were charred black, burned by Jiu Ling Huang's fire. He pulled a long face and stared at Jiu Ling Huang with murder in his eyes. A terrifying flame arose and surrounded him.

Jiu Ling Huang's face had paled. Jin Xing Zi really wanted to kill him!

Jin Xing Zi disappeared from where he was and turned into a fire shadow. Jiu Ling Huang waved his hands and condensed nine terrifying flames in a blazing inferno.

Even with charred hands, Jin Xing Zi still managed to destroy the fire and then threw himself at Jiu Ling Huang again. There was an explosion of impact, and Jiu Ling Huang was hurled again, coughing blood. He was severely injured.

—

At the same time, on the other side of the battlefield, Mara groaned with pain. An ice attack crashed onto his body. He had the impression he was going to turn into an ice statue. The cultivator of the Shrine wanted to kill him.

“Among the ten geniuses of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, two have been injured. They're in danger!” the crowd frowned, their faces stiff.

Lin Feng, who was fighting against Gu Xuan Tian, also noticed that the situation was worsening around him for the other participants of the meeting. He looked furious.

“You're not here to exchange views on cultivation, you're not here to compare yourselves with us. You're here to slaughter us. The strong cultivators of the Shrines have come to kill!” said Lin Feng coldly.

An ancient tree appeared. It contained the energies of the ten



thousand things of creation, radiating into the air. He condensed demon strength, shouted, and used a demon punch attack. Rumbling sounds spread out, and the sky trembled.

He moved quickly and landed next to Jiu Ling Huang. He said coldly, “If you have Great Imperial Weapons, use them. No need to be merciful. They’re not here to exchange views on cultivation!”

Lin Feng understood perfectly well that their Great Imperial Weapons probably weren’t as powerful as those of the members of the Shrines, but they were in danger, they had to resort to weapons. It was their last resort!

## Chapter 2213: Danger

---

The ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds had grave expressions. They agreed with Lin Feng. The geniuses from the Shrines weren't there to exchange views on cultivation, they were there to kill them. They didn't need to be merciful anymore. If they had been there to exchange views on cultivation, they would have stopped fighting after defeating their opponents, but Jiu Ling Huang had already been defeated, and his opponent continued attacking him!

Everybody had noticed that these people were not there to exchange views on cultivation, but to kill.

Gu Xuan Tian was astonished. Lin Feng was going insane and had a special tree inside his body. He was from a Shrine, he didn't know that this tree was from the Dark Night Region's Godly Wood Valley, it was a Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree.

Lin Feng had punched him and sent him flying. He was furious. He looked at Lin Feng and Jiu Ling Huang. Then, he jumped and landed behind Lin Feng and Jiu Ling Huang, while Huo Xing Zi was in front of them.

A terrifying Qi filled the air. It was incredible.

"Huo Xing Zi, let's play a game, let's see who can kill them first!" said Gu Xuan Tian to Huo Xing Zi.

Huo Xing Zi's eyes were filled with flames. His fire mace was already back in his hands. He said coldly, "That's exactly what I wanted to do."

—

"Those two guys will kill Lin Feng and Jiu Ling Huang, that's so cruel..." The crowd was shaking. Many people were furious. Lin Feng and the others were the strongest geniuses of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They had gone through a lot to reach the top of

the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds' rankings. Now the Shrines had sent their own geniuses to attack them by surprise and kill them. That wasn't fair at all!

“That bunch of bastards are core disciples in Shrines. They are naturally really strong. If Lin Feng and the others had practiced cultivation at a Shrine for a long time, they would definitely be stronger than them.”

“They made it to the very top of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, they just need more time to become unmatched cultivators. The Shrines don't want them to become stronger!” Many people were indignant. The Shrines had joined hands and were attacking the geniuses of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?! They had sent their core disciples on top of that!

“The ten Shrines are way too cruel!” some people in Godly Clouds City shouted furiously. Even those who were outside of the battle stage and who had been eliminated before were furious. However, what could they do? Nothing. They couldn't fight against the Shrines' geniuses. To the strong cultivators of the Shrines, those who had been eliminated were tiny little insects. The geniuses from the Shrines wanted to kill the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds; naturally they could easily kill those who had been eliminated before.

However, the crowd didn't understand why the Shrines had joined hands to attack the geniuses of the meeting? Was it because of the Fortune Shrine? After all, those ten people were supposed to become disciples of the Fortune Shrine!

—

At that moment, Gu Xuan Tian and Huo Xing Zi charged Lin Feng and Jiu Ling Huang. Fire and demon energies intertwined. Gu Xuan Tian was surrounded by demon lights and Huo Xing Zi was holding his fire mace. They wanted to kill their opponents.

Lin Feng looked at them coldly. He said to Jiu Ling Huang, “Jiu Ling Huang, block Gu Xuan Tian’s attack and I’ll attack the guy from the Fire Shrine.”

Huo Xing Zi hadn’t fought against Lin Feng yet, but he had bet with Gu Xuan Tian, they wanted to kill Lin Feng and Jiu Ling Huang first. Lin Feng was going to use that opportunity to attack him by surprise.

“Alright, I have Great Imperial Weapons. I’ll use them to stop him, but these people are from Shrines and they probably have powerful Great Imperial Weapons, too. If they use them, we’re going to die,” replied Jiu Ling Huang. That’s why he hadn’t taken out any Great Imperial Weapon, because the members of the Shrines probably had even more powerful weapons on them.

“No choice. If we continue like this, we’ll all die here,” said Lin Feng. They were all telepathically, the talk was done in an instant. He released a terrifying amount of wind and empty space cosmic energies around himself and faced Huo Xing Zi.

“Are you getting ready to escape?” said Huo Xing Zi, staring at Lin Feng coldly. That kind of wind cosmic energy was good for moving fast. The battlefield was too small. He looked at Lin Feng as if he were looking at prey.

The fire in Huo Xing Zi’s fire mace became even more denser. Finally, he smiled cruelly and said, “Let’s see how strong the one who ranked first is!”

He advanced on Lin Feng. At the same time, he raised his fire mace and continued condensing fire in it.

Ling Huang raised his fists and punched out. A strong wind started shrieking as energies blotted out the sky.

More flames appeared in Huo Xing Zi’s eyes. He ran towards Lin Feng without the least hesitation. His fire became more and more powerful. If that fire penetrated into Lin Feng’s body, his physical

body wouldn't be able to resist it. Even Jiu Ling Huang was badly injured, even though he was from a fire family.

Dang! A cauldron echoed and shot towards Huo Xing Zi. Deadly lights rotated around it. Lin Feng had condensed as much energy as he could inside to attack Huo Xing Zi's soul! Death soundwaves also started pulsing out. Everything around the cauldron smelled like death.

Dang! The cauldron rang again. Huo Xing Zi wasn't far from the cauldron, but his body had already turned black, his soul trembling. He had the impression he was going to be crushed. The Death intent swept over him and bore down on his flames.

Lin Feng released death swords. His Death intent was astonishingly strong.

He moved like the wind, terrifyingly fast, appearing in front of Huo Xing Zi in the twinkling of an eye. Huo Xing Zi was trying to get rid of the death strength which was corroding his body. When he saw Lin Feng appear in front of him, his face stiffened.

"Die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. His demon voice made Huo Xing Zi's eardrums tremble. Lin Feng raised his fist and punched out towards Xing Zi's head furiously.

Huo Xing Zi's expression stiffened as he stared at Lin Feng. Two killing fire lights emerged from his eyes. Lin Feng sensed the danger, but he continued punching out without hesitation.

"How insane!" the audience said when they saw that. Their hearts were pounding violently. Huo Xing Zi was a strong fire cultivator from the Fire Shrine, Lin Feng took great risks to attack him.

"Explode!" shouted Huo Xing Zi furiously. Huo Xing Zi was surrounded by fire lights and rose up into the air. The ancient cauldron followed him, making him look numb.

"He has some precious treasures in his eyes!" Lin Feng noticed.

Huo Xing Zi shook his head, blood appearing down the sides. He glared at Lin Feng.

“How terrifying, Lin Feng surprisingly nearly destroyed Huo Xing Zi’s skull! His fist didn’t reach Huo Xing Zi’s face, but if it had, with Lin Feng’s strength, his head would have exploded!” the experts noticed.

Jiu Ling Huang had used a Great Imperial Weapon to stop Gu Xuan Tian’s attack. The other battles were also becoming more and more terrifying. The strong cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds gathered together. Zhou Rong Man had saved Mara, who had almost been killed.

They all belonged to the same group now. The people from the Shrines wanted to kill them!

“Very good.” Huo Xing Zi’s fire mace turned into fire lights and moved back into his body. At the same time, two other fire maces reappeared in his hands. They were three zhang long and filled with fire. They looked dreadful.

Gu Xuan Tian was now wearing a demon king’s armor, he looked like a demon god. Nobody could pierce through his defense.

“Oh no, the strong cultivators from the Shrines have extremely powerful Great Imperial Weapons!” The crowd was shaken even more. However, the finalists of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were surrounded. The battle didn’t look good for them, and nobody could help them.

Jing was staring at Lin Feng’s familiar cauldron. As expected, it was really was him, but at that moment, she was worried about Lin Feng. She wanted to understand why the ten Shrines had joined hands to fight against them. What had happened? Why was all this happening? The Shrines had extremely important positions in the world, such things never happened unless there were special circumstances. Did they want to oppress the new disciples of the Fortune Shrine?

# Chapter 2214: Battle in the Ancient Times

---

Jing wasn't the only one who was nervous, everybody was!

“Why?” asked Chu Chun Qiu at that moment. He had also gathered together with the others. He was staring at the members of the Shrines. “We come from different places of the continent. We came here to join the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. We tried to improve our living conditions, we wanted to join a Shrine. But now, why are you attacking us, the ten best cultivators of the meeting?”

Chu Chun Qiu's Sky Absorbing strength pulsed. He hadn't expected this. How could he be happy?

All the others felt the same. Why? Why were the Shrines doing this to them?

None of the disciples of the Shrines replied. They were holding their Great Imperial Weapons and Qi was sweeping out from them.

Kong Ming kept chanting mantras, golden lights rising around him. A mala necklace appeared in his hand, and a terrifying curtain of light appeared around him. He looked like an indestructible Buddha.

“Are you ready to fight?” said Kong Ming calmly. Everybody understood that it wasn't the right moment to ask why all this was happening. The Shrines' cultivators wanted to slaughter them as soon as possible. They needed to fight!

The Deployment Master looked at the cauldron floating in front of Lin Feng coldly. That cauldron was his! Lin Feng couldn't use all its powers to the fullest. Back when he was still a Great Deployment Master, the cauldron was extremely powerful. Back then, he had never thought that someday someone would steal his cauldron and modify it!

Silhouettes flickered. The ten strong cultivators of the Meeting of

the Continent of the Nine Clouds were holding their Great Imperial Weapons, and getting ready to attack.

Lightning descended from the sky and bombarded the curtain of lights. Breaking and snapping sounds could be heard. One attack, and the light curtain exploded!

“If the Shrines’ strong cultivators had taken out Great Imperial Weapons before, the ten strong cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds would have died already. They didn’t do it straight away because they were just playing.” the crowd murmured.

More melodious breaking and snapping sounds spread out, and deadly energies filled the air. It was getting dangerous for the ten cultivators of the Meeting, their eyes were bloodshot and their faces stiff. What had they done to make the Shrines want to kill them?

They didn’t know that one of them had made the Destiny Wheel rotate. In the history of the continent, some people at the top of the Shrines couldn’t accept that. Therefore, they wanted to kill those people to be sure that the one who had made the Destiny Wheel rotate would be killed!

Actually, all the Shrines had already gone so far, they didn’t mind being cruel even if it meant killing geniuses. The Destiny Wheel didn’t affect only one Shrine, so they had to take measures. Therefore, destruction was the only solution. None of them could remain. They didn’t know who had caused the Destiny Wheel to rotate, they could only guess that one of the top ten cultivators of the meeting had done so, and more probably someone who was in the top five.

A terrifyingly strong cultivator from the Demon Shrine looked cold and detached, like a demon king. He was staring at the ground and thought, In the ancient times, because the Destiny Shrine rotated, the Fortune Shrine became much, much stronger. All the



other Shrines were in danger, so they had joined hands and a terrifying battle took place and made the whole continent shake. No place was spared. Back then, the Fortune Shrine was eventually oppressed. After that, the Fortune Shrine remained discreet for a very long time. Such a thing can't be allowed to happen again.

People learned from history. That terrifying battle remained symbolic in many powerful people's memories. That had happened in the ancient times, and after that, the Shrines had become weaker, including the Fortune Shrine. They had existed for many years, but it wasn't a flourishing era for them anymore.

However, many years had passed and the ancient days were long past. The Shrines had also started becoming a little bit more famous once again. It was a new era. Some terrifying cultivators had risen. However, a thousand years ago, the Destiny Shrine had rotated again. However, nothing special had happened. The Shrines had asked the Destiny Shrine about it, they hadn't found anything strange.

Now, a thousand years later, the Destiny Shrine had rotated again, and it was again the Fortune Shrine's turn to organize the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Therefore, the Fortune Shrine had decided to use the Great Destiny Technique.

The other Shrines couldn't keep calm. That was the reason for this battle. They wanted to kill the ten strongest cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, because they didn't want another war like in the distant past. The Shrines had never forgotten that war.

The leaders of the Shrines were people who lost their parents, ancestors and teachers during that war. They didn't want another war to start!

"Why does the destiny wheel rotate each time it's the Fortune Shrine's turn? Is it good for them or bad?" thought that strong cultivator. Back then, the Fortune Shrine had risen after the

Destiny Shrine had rotated. Many strong cultivators had emerged from the Fortune Shrine. A new flourishing era had started for them. However, the battles had started and they had lost an incredible amount of strong cultivators, too.

This time, it was the second time the Destiny Wheel had rotated in a thousand years, what did that mean?

Ching! A clear and melodious sound rang out as Kong Ming's light curtain broke apart. A terrifying attack came crashing down. Many people trembled. Were the ten strongest cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds really going to die?

"Initially, I wanted to play with you, but since you want to bring about your own destruction, then I'll help you. I should have done it earlier!" said Gu Xuan Tian coldly. He started walking forwards, destructive energies filling the air as he stepped forwards. His demon armor was domineering.

"No..." Yao Yao's face turned deathly pale. She looked terrified. Qing Feng started running forwards, she wanted to join the battle.

"Feng!" shouted Jing. That girl was insane. She was going to die if she joined the battle. The enemies were the Shrines' strongest emperors!

A dazzling light descended from the sky and illuminated everyone. The members of the Shrines jumped away, and a second white beam of light filled the air.

"Where is he?" The strong cultivators of the Shrines were stunned. When they had appeared, nobody had prevented them from attacking. Now, the first beam of light had taken someone away.

"Is the Fortune Shrine finally going to get involved?" thought the crowd. They were astonished. Only the Fortune Shrine could make the battle stop. Had the Fortune Shrine attacked? Why had the Shrine taken someone away? Had the members of the Shrines

come to attack because of that person, and not because of everybody? Why did the Shrine let the strong cultivators of the other Shrines chase him?

When the crowd saw that one of the fighters was missing, they were astonished. The Fortune Shrine had taken someone away and now they let the other Shrines chase him? That was strange.

And the person who had been taken away was... Chu Chun Qiu!

“Why did the Fortune Shrine take Chu Chun Qiu away, and only him? Does it mean anything?” wondered a lot of people.

The disciples of the Shrines all looked furious. A moment before, only five people had been able to compete with them: Lin Feng, Kong Ming, Chu Chun Qiu, Zhou Rong Man, and the Deployment Master. The others were weaker. Therefore, it could have been any of them!

“The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds is over. Those from the top ten, follow me to the Fortune Shrine. You will receive your rewards in the Fortune Shrine,” said the Diviner at that moment. He wasn’t smiling anymore, sounding quite cold.

The Shrine cultivators were stunned. The strongest cultivators of the ten other Shrines weren’t there anymore, so they couldn’t prevent the Diviner from doing that.

“The ten members of the Shrines chased after him. Nobody stayed there. That guy was too important!” murmured the crowd. The Diviner landed in front of the fighters, lights surrounded them, and the nine disappeared.

“They’re gone.” The ten disciples of the Shrines were astonished now. Two lights beams appeared, delivering some of the strongest cultivators of two Shrines. The ten cultivators of the Shrines had first chased after the one who had been taken away, and then they had realized that the Fortune Shrine had probably done that on purpose.

Possibly. Those ten people were all possible candidates, especially those of the top five. Of course, the one who had been taken away was also a possible candidate...

# Chapter 2215: Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds

---

When the Diviner took Lin Feng and the others away, the crowd looked confused.

“The Diviner left quickly because of the other Shrines,” they realized. The other Shrines had joined hands and finally, the Fortune Shrine had decided to react and to take away the strongest cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds away. That also officially the end of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Everything was going to happen behind the scenes after that.

Duan Feng’s eyes were twinkling at that moment. He didn’t understand either, what was going on?...

The members of the Snow Clan were stupefied. Zhe Tian clenched his fists. The young man in front of him smiled indifferently and said, “Interesting.”

The two strong cultivators from the two Shrines who had just appeared, disappeared again. Some members of the Fortune City appeared to sort things out there. They took those of the top fifty to Fortune City to become members. At the same time, the top hundred would also be able to travel to and from the inner part of Godly Clouds City freely.

After that, people slowly left the platform and everything returned to normal. People from Godly Clouds City also slowly started leaving. They were confused and astonished. The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was over? They had the sensation things hadn’t ended the way they should have. They were still thinking about all the great battles...

The watchers slowly left. The inner part of Godly Clouds City and the outer part were divided once more. People from the twelve

towns of Godly Clouds City couldn't see what was going on in the inner part of Godly Clouds City anymore.

Only those who had the permission to come to the inner part of Godly Clouds City could see what was happening there, like the top hundred cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They wanted to explore the inner part of Godly Clouds City and see what it looked like, as it was a legendary place.

—

Hou Qing Lin, Lang Ye, Jun Mo Xi and the others were in a city they knew nothing of. They could see celestial palaces floating in the air. It was an incredible sight.

“That celestial city which is floating in the air is Fortune City.” The friends were amazed.

“The Qi here is incredible. The cosmic strength is thick and dense. Is this the inner part of Godly Clouds City?” wondered the people glancing around. There were spectacular buildings everywhere containing celestial Qi.

The top hundred cultivators of the meeting started walking around, many people sighing. What a mysterious world! Sometimes, people passed and when they saw them they looked surprised, some of their eyes glittering. The people who had just arrived were all new geniuses.

“Let's go to Fortune City.” At that moment, the top fifty cultivators of the meeting headed towards Fortune City. At that moment, a group of young people with astonishing Qi appeared in the distance. They smiled at the crowd when they arrived and said, “Congratulations and welcome to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!”

“Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?” The fighters were taken aback. This place was the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

.....

In Fortune City...

There was a starry sky above when Lin Feng and the others arrived there with the Diviner. They all stood there and looked at the dazzling stars. They looked so close and so far away at the same time.

Lin Feng looked at the rest of the crowd. One of them was missing: Chu Chun Qiu. He had been taken away a moment before them. The strong cultivators of the other Shrines had chased after him. Lin Feng didn't know what it was all about.

Some people in white robes came up to them slowly. Their Qi was only barely discernible, they looked aloof from worldly strife, and their cultivation level was hidden. They were obviously extremely strong.

"We shouldn't have let you go through this, but it was also a test for you. You'll go to different places now and choose your path," the Diviner informed them. He nodded at the people in white clothes.

"Kong Ming, come with me," said one of them to Kong Ming.

"Zhou Rong Man, come with me!" said another one. The fighters didn't understand and had their doubts, but they were in the Fortune Shrine now and people from Fortune Shrine would definitely take care of them. Everybody left but Lin Feng. He was left behind, alone with the Diviner.

"Lin Feng," the Diviner said, smiling gently.

"Master," said Lin Feng respectfully. They had met again, after such a long time.

"Lin Feng, first, congratulations to you for your achievements. You must have many questions. But now I'm going to tell you some very important things. Listen carefully," said the Diviner seriously.

“Alright...” said Lin Feng when he saw how solemn the Diviner looked. It probably had something to do with what had just happened.

“I need to tell you what about what happened on the continent in the ancient past. Strong cultivators can create small worlds when they reach a certain level. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were more and more people being born. In the small worlds, the same thing happened. So the Continent of the Nine Clouds became too small, and Qi even became rare.

“As a result, some of the strongest cultivators started creating rules. They wanted a unified continent. But people fought for power, which is how the Shrines were created. They started fighting for supremacy.”

Lin Feng listened carefully. His heart was pounding. As he had always thought, someday he’d join a Shrine and learn about the behind-the-scenes stories. That moment had finally come. He was going to learn more about the real world.

“Nobody knows how long those supreme cultivators fought. However, it stopped long ago. In the ancient past, there were nine Shrines establishing their dominance: The Starlit Sky Shrine, the Time Shrine, the Countless Shrine, the Empty Space Shrine, the Life Shrine, the Fire Shrine, the Ice and Snow Shrine, the Dazzling Gold Shrine, and the Earth Shrine. Those were the original Shrines, with the Starlit Sky Shrine now called the Fortune Shrine. The Countless Shrine is the current Buddha Shrine. The Time Shrine disappeared a long time ago.

All the other Shrines emerged with time.”

“However, no matter what, the nine Shrines are symbolic because after their establishment, the ancient wars and chaos ceased. At the same time, because of the scarcity of Qi, nine extremely strong cultivators built nine worlds which would never change: the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”



Continent of the Nine Clouds..., thought Lin Feng. His heart was pounding. The Continent of the Nine Clouds had been created by strong cultivators?

“So the place where we are now... is the real, only, and original world?” asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed. It’s called the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds now.

“This world became a symbol of the ancient days because of the nine Shrines. After that, many strong cultivators rose and created their own worlds: Hell, the Supreme Animal World, and so on. But those worlds’ histories aren’t as old as the Continent of the Nine Clouds’ history, and those worlds are controlled by some individuals most of the time. For example, Hell is controlled by the Hell Shrine. The Continent of the Nine Clouds is the most mature world, and it has no leader. Many strong cultivators keep rising in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and then they also create their own small worlds.”

Lin Feng listened calmly. Even though the Diviner said the Continent of the Nine Clouds had no leader, the Shrines were the supreme leaders there. They controlled the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

“Nobody has ever managed to control this world alone. No Shrine has ever managed to completely take control over this world,” said the Diviner. Raising his head, he gazed into the distance and said, “Until now, it has never happened.

“Back then, the Destiny Wheel rotated, and an incredible cultivator appeared. He took control over the Fortune Shrine and made it rise. He could pose a threat to all the Shrines. Therefore, back then, all the other Shrines joined hands and attacked us. Every part of the continent was affected by the battle. That war has two names: The Destiny Battle, or the Shrines’ Dusk War.

“That battle ended long ago, and the strongest Shrines remained.

The weakest Shrines weakened. Some other powerful groups also started rising. The different groups have always been competing, but there hasn't been such a great war again. But a thousand years ago, the Destiny Wheel rotated again, and all the Shrines came to the Fortune Shrine."

Lin Feng shivered. The Destiny Wheel had rotated and a terrifying cultivator had appeared, a great war had happened. A thousand years ago, something similar happened again.

And the Diviner continued, "And now, after a thousand years, the Destiny Wheel has rotated again."

Lin Feng's heart was pounding violently.

# Chapter 2216: Forbidden Legends

---

The Destiny Wheel had rotated again. Lin Feng understood why the Shrines had attacked them now.

“In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there’s an expression to describe people who make the Destiny Wheel rotate: Forbidden Destiny, or Forbidden Person. Such people can’t live, all the Shrines want to kill them,” said the Diviner.

Lin Feng’s face stiffened. He was shaking.

“However, in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, people think of such cultivators as extremely strong, and they even call them Shrines’ Champions. Most people think they shouldn’t be called Forbidden People or Forbidden Destinies. In the ancient past, there were only a few people like that. After the great war, no other Forbidden Person has appeared. Maybe it’s due to the scarcity of Qi or, maybe cultivators have become too weak.

“But now a new one has appeared,” said the Diviner, staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng understood why he was being stared at now.

The Diviner said, “During the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Destiny Wheel rotated. Therefore, one of the finalists could be a Forbidden Person. And that person is probably you, Lin Feng!”

“Pfew...” Lin Feng took a deep breath. Did he have some kind of forbidden body? There were legends about a forbidden or taboo body in the continent. But people didn’t know what it meant, and didn’t know that the Shrines had fought during the Shrines’ Dusk War because of someone who had a forbidden body.

Lin Feng maybe might have a forbidden body, he might be a Forbidden Person. However, they had taken Chu Chun Qiu away, was it to hide the true one from the others’ field of vision? If the Shrines didn’t manage to do what they wanted, and kill the one

who had activated the Wheel, then they wouldn't stop looking for him. They didn't want to see a Forbidden Person rise!

“Only you, me, and three people from the Shrine know this. You can't tell anyone about this. We will probably send you to different places of the continent. We can't keep you in the Destiny Shrine, it would be useless for you. The Destiny Shrine will do their best to calm the situation down, like a thousand years ago,” the Diviner said.

A set of starry clothes appeared indistinctly. He said to Lin Feng, “This an illusion robe. Wear it and you can easily change your facial features, Qi, eyes, everything. Nobody can recognize you with such an item.”

Lin Feng was astonished, but took the clothes. Even though Mister Xiao's masks were great, they also had limits. Extremely strong cultivators could still recognize him when he wore them. He couldn't hide from Saints. But this robe would probably allow him to do so!

“Besides that, you deserve something for having ranked first. What do you want?” asked the Diviner, smiling at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was surprised and said, “I know a Saint, he was injured badly long ago. He has one thread of consciousness left. I also know a Celestial Emperor, his body has turned into Dao. I have another friend, a girl, she's an emperor who was injured by a great emperor, I sealed her, and she has only one thread of Qi left. I hope you can heal them.”

“For the Saint you know, it's going to be troublesome, especially if his soul has also been destroyed. But at his cultivation level, he can survive, the Life Shrine has some Godly Medicine of the Immortals, it can help cultivators who have only one thread of consciousness left return to life. Then, the cultivator needs to study the Rebirth Scriptures and have their consciousness give birth to soul strength. But it's going to be extremely difficult to

fully recover,” the Diviner told him. “Concerning the Celestial Emperor who has died to turn into Dao and the girl whom you sealed, one drop of Godly Medicine of the Immortals is enough. We have good relations with the Life Shrine, I can give you three drops as a reward for your first position.”

“Thank you very much!” Lin Feng thanked him happily. Godly Medicine of the Immortals was incredible. Even though the Diviner mentioned that remedy in such a relaxed way, Lin Feng knew how priceless it was. As long as a Saint still had any consciousness left, they could come back to life thanks to the Godly Medicine of the Immortals. Even to the Life Shrine, Godly Medicine of the Immortals was priceless. However, the Diviner had agreed to give him three drops, it was incredibly generous.

If Saint Tianhun knew this, he would do all he could to kill Lin Feng. He had come to the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, that medicine was his biggest hope. He had hoped he’d be able to get Godly Medicine of the Immortals. The body he had captured wasn’t great, Godly Medicine of the Immortals could help someone like him become as strong as back in his prime.

But even with such a medicine, Saints needed to study the Rebirth Scriptures to come back to life. Saint Qin Shan had almost died. His injuries were unbelievably serious.

Minister Uptala, as well as Qing Qing, were weak in comparison to the powers of the Godly Medicine of the Immortals. Even if they only had one thread of Qi left, they could completely recover with the Godly Medicine of the Immortals. Even if Minister Uptala had turned into Dao, the Dao still contained his soul!

“Come, I’ll take you somewhere,” the Diviner said. Lin Feng followed him as they left.

——

They were walking through the starlit sky. After a very long time, Lin Feng didn’t know where he was, but they were in a starry

world when the Diviner finally stopped.

At that moment, they were surrounded by stars.

“Continent of the Nine Clouds!” Lin Feng was astonished when he looked at the starry sky: Godly Clouds, Purple Clouds, the Dark Night Region... All the regions of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were in the sky.

Apart from the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there was Hell and even some unfinished worlds.

“What’s that?” asked Lin Feng to the Diviner. He was curious.

“The Continent of the Nine Clouds, Hell and some small worlds’ entrances,” said the Diviner to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was astonished. “You can go to the Continent of the Nine Clouds or Hell from here?”

“Indeed. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was created by a supreme cultivator back in the days. It’s also a small world. The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds is the real world. There are passages to many small worlds here. The Supreme Animal World is one of them. Of course, there are many, many small worlds. Nobody can invade the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, because the Shrines are here,” the Diviner explained to Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, you will spend a few days here, I will give you some skills and techniques. You’ll tell me if you want more. Of course, you are a Forbidden Person, so they are not really useful for you. Your future can’t be determined by destiny, either.

“You’ll need to create your own strength. In a few days, you’ll leave Fortune City and practice everywhere. You can go anywhere: the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, or other worlds.”

“Alright, I’ll practice elsewhere and when I become a great emperor, I’ll come back!” agreed Lin Feng. He hadn’t forgotten

about the agreement with the Snow Clan: twenty years! He had to save Meng Qing and his child!

“Master, the Snow Clan is probably in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, right? How strong are they?” asked Lin Feng.

“Yes, they are a very old Clan. They’ve existed since the ancient times. But during the great war, they lost many people and became quite weak. But two new monarchs have appeared in the Snow Clan now, so they’re really happy.”

Two monarchs? Xue Ao and...? With Meng Qing, there should be three..., thought Lin Feng.

“Why are you asking me about the Snow Clan?” said the Diviner.

“We are in conflict.” Lin Feng’s eyes glittered.

“Oh, even though the Fortune Shrine can help you, right now, you should remain discreet, and not only you, but all the others of the top ten of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. You all need to travel and become stronger. When the situation calms down, if you need the Fortune Shrine to help you, tell me. Then, you can head to the other Shrines and show them that you’re not the weakling you used to be. Someday, they won’t be able to do anything to you anymore.”

“Definitely!” promised Lin Feng. He took a deep breath. The Snow Clan’s Saints despised him. He was a nobody to them. Xue Ao was aggressive and extremely strong. He needed to become stronger. Back then, if Qing Feng hadn’t brought Shi Jue Lao Xian, the Snow Clan would have killed him. If he had died, Meng Qing would have killed herself. Lin Feng didn’t dare think about such things.

Lin Feng would definitely get his revenge for everything they had done to him, Meng Qing, and their baby.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the stars. He had ranked

first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Finally, he was becoming a really strong cultivator. No matter what, he had to press forward with indomitable will. Now, he was a Forbidden Person, the Shrines wanted to kill him. He had to become extremely strong.



## Chapter 2217: Influence

---

The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds hadn't been influenced by the ten Shrines. The other Shrines didn't dare do anything to the Fortune Shrine. A thousand years before, something similar had happened, and the Fortune Shrine had managed to calm the situation down. Of course, apart from people from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, nobody else knew about it in the outside world.

The Great Emperors' Meeting had incredible repercussions. However, the Emperors' Meeting also amazed many people, as the Shrines' appearance had astonished everybody. There were many rumors in Godly Clouds City now. Some people said that Chu Chun Qiu might be a Forbidden Person, and the Shrines possibly feared him. Some people even said that in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

People who had just joined the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds walked around and observed. There were many powerful cultivators there. Many people wanted to become stronger there. The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was over, and most of the people who had just arrived were cultivators of the very top of the Huang Qi layer. They wanted to break through to the Di Qi layer!

—

Qing Feng was in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds as well. She was staying with Jing. Jing was actually from a Clan of the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Qing Feng was too, but she didn't want to go back. She wanted to go to Fortune City, but apart from disciples of the Fortune Shrine, other people couldn't really go there.

Of course, the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds also had repercussions in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the

Nine Clouds. Some people who had participated also started traveling in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

---

In the Dark Night Region's Holy Spirit Dynasty...

A ceremony was being held for the ancestors. On the altar were many jade talismans. The names of the core disciples were written on those jade talismans. Lin Feng's name was written on a particular one. His name was written differently than other people's names, but nobody disagreed.

"Qiong Sheng, that's the Holy Dynasty Prince's name, your father! In the future, you'll be like your father!" said the Holy Emperor to Lin Qiong Sheng solemnly. Lin Qiong Sheng was now 1.50 meters tall. Even though he looked young, he wasn't weak at all.

Lin Qiong Sheng looked at the talisman, he felt proud. His father, someone who wasn't from the Holy Spirit Dynasty, had the most important position in the Holy Spirit Dynasty: Holy Dynasty Prince! How glorious!

"Qiong Sheng, your father is the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. You have to continue making efforts!" said the Holy Emperor happily. He had chosen Lin Feng back then, and it was the right decision. Now, Lin Feng was the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and he had become one of the Fortune Shrine's core disciples. Lin Feng would become splendid and glorious in the future.

---

However, apart from the Holy Spirit Dynasty, the other dynasties in Qi Tian Holy Town weren't happy at all. When the news spread, many people looked worried. Back then, they had joined hands to attack Lin Feng, Now that he had become the strongest emperor of the continent and was a member of a Shrine, if Lin Feng came back

to Qi Tian Holy Town a few years later, would he come to get his revenge?

—

Of course, the biggest city in the Dark Night Region wasn't Qi Tian Holy Town, it was the Holy City.

The Ji Clan, the Pei Clan, and others were all terrified. Lin Feng had finished first at the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, how strong would he become in the future?

Back then, they hated Lin Feng more than anything. They had tried to kill him many times, especially the Ji Clan. They had dreamt of killing Lin Feng before he could become strong enough.

The whole Dark Night Region was shaken because two of their people had finished in the top three of the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

Lin Feng had finished first! Chu Chun Qiu had finished third!

Celestial Godly University was happy and proud for Chu Chun Qiu. Champion University was proud and happy for Lin Feng.

In Champion University's Champion Palace, Lin Feng's name had already disappeared from the ranking list. He didn't need his name there, and he didn't need to be considered a Champion, either. He didn't need to be like Ji Chang back in the days. Lin Feng was the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He was a real Champion!

Lin Feng's name was carved in the walls, there was a commemorative place in his honor.

On that plate was written: Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, First Place

That simple sentence said it all.

At the same time, at the foot of the cave with a waterfall at its mouth, there was a gigantic statue of Lin Feng. It was ten zhang

tall, and very lifelike. The statue depicted him as a demon cultivator.

—

Someone went up to the statue and stayed in front of it for a long time before turning and leaving.

“Now, apart from Lin Feng, the second strongest cultivator of Champion University comes here every day and looks at Lin Feng’s statue. Lin Feng has become a goal for him,” whispered many people.

That person wasn’t the only one though. Many people, including many beautiful women, came to look at Lin Feng’s statue often.

“That’s my fellow disciple, he’s handsome, talented, and extremely strong. I will never catch up with him.”

“Yes, Brother Lin Feng has achieved many things in his life. Back in the days, Ji Chang and his Ji Chang’s Club acted arrogantly and treated others with disdain. Ji Chang considered himself unexcelled in the world. Only Lin Feng dared create Tiantai and challenge him. Back then, at Ji Chang’s Champion ceremony, Lin Feng even provoked him. Then he defeated Ji Chang during the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List. How strong! He progresses really quickly, too. Nobody can catch up with him.”

“If I could become Lin Feng’s wife, I’d be so happy. I’d stay with him all the time!” said a beautiful woman.

“Dream on. Lin Feng’s wife is Meng Qing. She’s a celestial being. She is above worldly material attractions and not interested in mundane affairs. She’s also extremely strong and talented,” said some girl jokingly.

At that moment, they stopped laughing, as a woman was coming up to them. She also looked like a celestial being, aloof from worldly strife.

“How beautiful.” thought the first women. That girl was so

beautiful, but they had never seen her before.

“She looks like a celestial being. Who is she?” Many men watched her. She ignored them though, only looking at Lin Feng’s statue.

“Sister Baguio!” said a young man to that celestial woman at that moment, smiling at her.

Xue Baguio turned around and smiled at the young man, “You also came to look at the Master.”

“Yes, I miss him. I haven’t seen him in such a long time,” said Xiao Chen smiled. His eyebrows looked as sharp as swords.

“That’s Ye Chen, Lin Feng’s disciple. A member of Tiantai,” whispered some people, looking at Ye Chen with admiration. He was Lin Feng’s disciple. Ye Chen would probably become terrifyingly strong after reaching the top of the Huang Qi layer.

—

Up in the air, above the clouds, two old men looked at that and smiled to themselves.

“Old buddy, my sense of judgement is quite good. If I hadn’t been there, we wouldn’t be so famous. Now, many geniuses want to study here in Champion University,” said Ancestor Shi Tian smiled.

“Bullshit, I found Lin Feng. It has nothing to do with you!” said Ancestor Xuan Tian.

“You’re talking nonsense. I found him!” said Ancestor Shi Tian. The two old men started arguing again. The earth and the sky trembled, many people looked at the sky and shivered. The two Ancestors were arguing and making the clouds roll around like waves!

Many people also had cold sweats when they heard the Ancestors argue in the sky. Surprisingly, the Ancestors were arguing about who had found Lin Feng first!

---

In the Vast Celestial Ancient City, outside of the Animal World...

An elder was gazing into the distance.

“Little boy, Forbidden body, finally, you’re growing up. The Shrines will put pressure on you now. The Fortune Shrine will help you, but in the future, you’ll have to rely on yourself,” mused the elder.

Qing Feng, you must have bumped into Jing as well. You should also go to your clan sometimes. I can’t do much for you. If Lin Feng grows up and succeeds, he’ll help you accomplish many things in life, thought the elder with a smile. He looked happy.

Many people in the Dark Night Region were thinking about the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and especially Lin Feng!

## Chapter 2218: Pressure from the Shrines' Leaders

---

The situation wasn't as simple as what the Diviner had told Lin Feng. Maybe he didn't want Lin Feng to feel pressured. The Destiny Wheel had rotated again, it was the second time in recent history. The other Shrines were extremely nervous. If Forbidden People became strong, wouldn't it lead to another terrifying war, like back in the days?

Therefore, the Shrines' leaders didn't want such a thing to happen again. The other Shrines' leaders came to the Fortune Shrine and chatted with the leader of the Fortune Shrine; it was an invisible and intangible form of pressure. All of them were terrifyingly strong. Who knew? Maybe they would go insane? Even though they were chatting about everything like good old friends, nobody could guarantee they weren't going to go crazy and attack.

"So many days have passed and you still want to see people from the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds," said the leader of the Fortune Shrine. All the other Shrines' leaders were there again.

"Of course, you took someone away. Otherwise, we wouldn't have stayed here," replied one of them, smiling calmly. He actually sounded quite nice.

"Alright, since you want to see them, no problem. But I have to say something. This time, we organized the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and those finished in the top ten of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds are now authentic disciples of the Fortune Shrine. If you kill the cultivators of the top ten, we'll have to settle accounts," said the old man of the Fortune Shrine calmly. Face was important for these people.

"You understand me, right?" said the leader of the Fortune Shrine.

“What do you want?” asked the leader of the Demon Shrine. He looked like a peerless demon, staring at the leader of the Fortune Shrine.

“Very simple, everybody, call your core disciples, if you kill our disciples, then we’ll kill yours. One life for one life. That way, the Fortune Shrine will not lose face,” said the leader of the Fortune Shrine calmly.

All the leaders looked pensive. If there was really a Forbidden Person in the Fortune Shrine, then losing ten people was fine, but if there were none in the Fortune Shrine, then losing core disciples would be a tragedy.

“Alright.” said the leader of the Fire Shrine. His eyes were filled with scorching hot flames, but he sounded ice-cold.

“I agree, too,” said another leader. He wanted to see if the leader of the Fortune Shrine would dare hand someone over.

“Alright, some come with me,” said the leader of the Fortune Shrine calmly.

Their silhouettes flickered and they disappeared from there.

——

In the starlit sky, someone was seated cross-legged, bathing in starlight. At that moment, someone wearing white clothes slowly appeared in front of him. He opened his eyes and smiled. “Master!”

“Lin Feng, many years ago, I told you that if you ever came to the Shrine, I’d take you as my disciple. Even though you’re not necessarily my disciple, you can call me teacher,” said the Diviner smiling gently.

Lin Feng smiled and nodded. “Teacher!”

“Alright.” said the Diviner smiling, “Lin Feng, the leader of the Shrine told us that the other Shrines aren’t going to give up. They want to see the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent



of the Nine Clouds.”

Lin Feng frowned but tried to keep calm. No matter what, the Fortune Shrine was probably going to ensure their safety, so he didn't need to worry.

“Actually, the leader managed to come to an agreement with them. If we show them the top ten cultivators, then, they have to bring some of their core disciples as well. If they kill one of you, we'll kill their core disciples. Therefore, we'll see if they're ready to take risks,” said the Diviner.

Lin Feng remained silent. That was a big bet. Would the other Shrines dare take risks?

The Diviner didn't seem worried though, he smiled and said, “Lin Feng, the Shrine has already organized everything. Everything will be fine, but we still have to be vigilant. What kind of cloning technique do you know?”

“Three-Lives Scriptures,” Lin Feng replied honestly. His new biggest secret was that he had a Forbidden Body, and the Diviner knew that. His life was in the Fortune Shrine's hands. Therefore, he didn't hide anything from them. They wanted to protect him and help him rise.

“Alright, leave a clone here and come with your real body. After all, if you made a clone go, they'd notice it immediately and things could deteriorate,” said the Diviner after remaining silent for a few seconds. He was amazed on the inside, however. Lin Feng had studied the Three Lives Scriptures! He had really started walking on the path of a Forbidden Person!

In the ancient days, after the great war, a few strong cultivators had started rising, and the Three Lives Emperor was one of them back then!

Lin Feng left a clone behind and gathered with the others. The Diviner appeared later, not arriving with Lin Feng. That way,

nobody would know that Lin Feng and the Diviner were close, not even people from the Fortune Shrine themselves.

Their group gathered in a celestial palace. When the strong cultivators arrived and saw the geniuses, the geniuses all shuddered.

How strong!, thought Lin Feng when he saw them. One of them looked like a peerless demon god. People would submit just by looking at him.

“How come someone is missing?” asked someone coldly. Indeed, someone was missing from the top ten cultivators. Chu Chun Qiu wasn’t there.

I guess the teachers did that on purpose to make them think Chu Chun Qiu is the Forbidden Person..., thought Lin Feng.

“He’s not a disciple of the Fortune Shrine anymore so he isn’t here,” said the leader of the Fortune Shrine calmly.

“What does that mean?”

“Your people chased him so he didn’t feel safe in the Fortune Shrine. He decided to leave after that. So we took him to the Supreme Animal World,” said the leader of the Fortune Shrine calmly.

The outsiders were astonished: Supreme Animal World?

“He went to the Supreme Animal World?” asked the leader of the Ice Shrine coldly.

“Ganges Time, Supreme Animal World’s Godly Forbidden territory,” replied the leader of the Fortune Shrine. The crowd was astounded.

“You’re insane!” said the leader of the Ice Shrine coldly.

“I don’t believe you,” added the leader of the Demon Shrine.

The leader of the Fortune Shrine smiled and waved his hand. Instantly, lights appeared in the sky, and a few silhouettes

appeared there. Behind them was the Ganges Time Godly Forbidden territory.

All the leaders' expressions changed drastically.

"You took Chu Chun Qiu to the Supreme Animal World? How can we be sure it's him?"

"I'm not sure but anyway, now Chu Chun Qiu has nothing to do with the Fortune Shrine anymore. The nine others are here, so do as you wish. But no matter what you do, if you touch our disciples, the same thing will happen to your disciples," replied the leader of the Fortune Shrine calmly.

The leaders grunted coldly and stared at Lin Feng and the others.

Ganges Time, Godly Forbidden Territory, what kind of place is that?, wondered Lin Feng. The Fortune Shrine had paid the price to prepare that plan and convince the Shrines' leaders that Chu Chun Qiu was the one who had made the Destiny Wheel rotate. That way, they would pay attention to Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng would be able to become stronger in peace. But as before, he had to be vigilant and remain discreet. The more he displayed his strength, the more people would doubt.

At that moment, something happened in Lin Feng's mind. In his consciousness, he saw a flatland materialize. In the air was a fire mountain. The leader of the Fire Mountain was there, his eyes filled with flames. Lin Feng's soul trembled.

"Kneel down!" shouted the leader of the Fire Shrine angrily. Lin Feng's face stiffened, and his legs shook. However, he steadfastly stood his ground. He was just staring at the man coldly.

The Shrines' leaders are terrifyingly strong. One glance and they can make you submit, thought Lin Feng. This man could crush his soul and will.

The leader of the Fire Shrine looked at him disdainfully. Lin Feng lowered his head submissively.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng heard some grunt coldly in his mind. Flames flew throughout his soul.

“Leader,” said another voice at that moment. The leader of the Fire Shrine looked at his disciple, startled.

“If you inspect their memories, I do the same. If you find some skills and techniques you weren’t supposed to find, you can’t blame us if anything happens,” said the leader of the Fortune Shrine coldly.

The leader of the Fire Shrine grunted coldly, but he still stopped. Lin Feng’s inner body, however, was still burning. It felt like his soul was burning. The leader of the Fire Shrine looked at him coldly and said, “Reply and tell the truth. If you make one mistake, I don’t care whether my disciple dies, but you’ll die too.”

## Chapter 2219: Leaving

---

“Before the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, where were you?” asked the leader of the Fire Shrine of Lin Feng, making his soul tremble.

“Dark Night Region,” replied Lin Feng calmly. “I’m from the Dark Night Region, but I grew up in a small world. When I was around twenty, I came to the greater world. There are many strong cultivators in the greater world. So I practiced really hard and took many risks. Now, I’ve been practicing cultivation for forty years, and I finally made it in the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

The leader of the Fortune Shrine was staring at Lin Feng. Forty years to reach the top of the Huang Qi layer was a very long time, Lin Feng wasn’t really talented enough. However, he was from a small world, so it wasn’t bad. Even though he didn’t practice cultivation quickly, he was determined. Could the Forbidden Person possibly be Lin Feng?

“What skills and techniques do you practice? What kind of spirit do you have?” asked the leader again. Lin Feng frowned. He knew that that person could see many things. Lin Feng had to be clear and precise.

“I study different kinds of skills and techniques. In the small world, skills and techniques were really bad. I obtained some demon skills and techniques. I also study the Kalpa Indestructible Deva-Mara skill all the time. I have a powerful physical strength. At the same level, I almost always have the advantage. Apart from demon cultivation, I also studied deployment spells from books. My cultivation is a bit complex,” replied Lin Feng honestly. He didn’t tell the most important things about himself, naturally.

“Insolent!” shouted that person explosively. Thunder shook his soul, blood appeared on his face and his face paled. “You’re saying

a stupid skill like the Kalpa Indestructible Deva-Mara skill could help you have a powerful physical body?”

“I went to the Milky Way battlefield in Hell, and I’ve killed extremely strong demon cultivators from the Ancient Demon Clan. I obtained some nice spells from them, including the Deva-Mara Body Cleansing Technique. It also helps me improve my physical strength,” replied Lin Feng coldly. At his cultivation level, Shrines’ leaders were like gods to him. He couldn’t say anything against them.

He was too weak to do anything, and this guy was oppressing him. Lin Feng was a nobody in front of such people.

Lin Feng kept calm for now, but someday, he’d come back as an extremely strong cultivator and would settle accounts.

“Besides, by a lucky coincidence, in Qi Tian Holy Town in the Dark Night Region, I fought against many people from the different dynasties and I obtained some Saint’s techniques,” Lin Feng went on.

The leader of the Fire Shrine was looking at Lin Feng disdainfully. He was thinking that this kid guy was determined and talented, but his cultivation speed wasn’t fast enough. He was just lucky. He thought Lin Feng was less likely to be the one who had activated the Destiny Wheel.

The other leaders didn’t let the others off either, even if the Fortune Shrine had taken Chu Chun Qiu to the Supreme Animal World.

After some time, the leader of the Fire Shrine grunted coldly, a terrifying fire surrounded Lin Feng and the air shook. Lin Feng had the impression he was in an ocean of painful flames.

A terrifying strength made him tremble. Fire appeared in his mind again. The leader of the Fire Shrine could kill Lin Feng instantly if he wished.

Lin Feng was driven violently back, still surrounded by fire. He could die anytime. The others were also being oppressed by the other leaders.

The leader of the Fortune Shrine jumped in front of the enemies' disciples. Beams of light appeared and he attacked their souls. Someone gave out a horrible shriek.

"A life for a life!" said the leader of the Fortune Shrine coldly. He didn't pay attention to Lin Feng and the others, but he was ready to kill the enemies' disciples mercilessly if anything happened.

"Hmph!" someone groaned coldly. One of the leaders rose up into the air and said, "Dear friend, we'll see how long he'll stay in the Supreme Animal World!"

The leaders rose up into the air, not killing Lin Feng and the others. As the Diviner had said to Lin Feng, they'd try, but they probably wouldn't kill. They couldn't be sure if one of them had caused the Wheel to rotate. To the Fortune Shrine, it was a dangerous bet, but it had worked.

The disciples they had brought with them were core disciples in their Shrines. They didn't want to lose them stupidly.

Of course, it didn't mean they trusted the Fortune Shrine. They had also been watching the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and they were also going to watch Chu Chun Qiu.

"See you," said the leaders of the Shrines coldly, and then they left with their disciples.

The leader of the Fortune Shrine watched them leave and after a long time, he took a deep breath, turning around and saying to the group, "I'm sorry, you just joined the Fortune Shrine and you already have to face danger."

Everybody bowed before him. They had heard the old stories, so they couldn't blame the Fortune Shrine. They respected the Fortune Shrine, especially since the leader respected them.

But they were wondering whether Chu Chun Qiu was really the Forbidden Person or not.

Nobody could be sure. Kong Ming glanced at Lin Feng. Back then, in the small world, the Diviner had chosen Lin Feng. Did it mean anything?

---

The other people left. In the starlit sky, the Qi was dense and thick, so Lin Feng decided to practice cultivation here. The Diviner appeared and said to Lin Feng, “The Shrines won’t give up. I’ll take you away. You can leave a clone here in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Sometimes, you can walk around so people will think you’re still there. Use your real body to break through to the Di Qi layer and then come back. As a great emperor, your social status will be different.

“What do you think?” asked the Diviner.

“Alright, I think it’s a good plan,” Lin Feng nodded. He would need to break through to the Di Qi layer, and then he’d come back. He needed to become a great emperor to oppress the Snow Clan and the Shrines. He was in a rush, and couldn’t waste time. He was going to travel the world to become stronger!

“Where will you go first?” asked the Diviner pointing at the different stars, “Continent of the Nine Clouds, Hell, many small worlds. Where do you want to go?”

“Hell!” said Lin Feng without hesitation. He wanted to avenge Minster Uptala and Qing Qing!

“If you go to Hell, you’ll end up in the Milky Way battlefield first. From there, you’ll be able to go to Hell or to the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” replied the Diviner.

“Alright!” Lin Feng nodded. As expected, the Milky Way battlefield!

Back then, the one who had an innate king-type body had



descended from the sky. Lin Feng remembered him. He was arrogant and wild. That guy was probably from the Supreme Animal World, as the Supreme Animal World also had passages to every realm in the world.

“When are you going to leave?” asked the Diviner.

“In a few days, Teacher,” replied Lin Feng.

“Alright, enjoy practicing cultivation in the Fortune Shrine!” the Diviner nodded. “I’m off. You choose your own path. The Fortune Shrine supports you.”

“I understand!” Lin Feng nodded.

He watched the Diviner leave before he closed his eyes and went into his spirit’s world.

——

In front of him was a giant, his Qi terrifying. It was Saint Qin Shan, his consciousness growing larger all the time. Regarding Minster Uptala and Qing Qing, Lin Feng intended to avenge them. After all, Saint Qin Shan was different, he would need lots of time to recover. But they were different, one drop of medicine and they would recover completely.

That Qi is incredible. Saint Qin Shan’s consciousness is improving. We’ll be able to fuse together and fight at some point. After Hell, I’ll back go to the Dark Night Region to get the Rebirth Scriptures. Then I’ll travel the world and continue focusing on cultivation and becoming stronger, thought Lin Feng. His goal in life was to become a peerless cultivator!

# Chapter 220: Back Into the Milky Way Battlefield

---

In the Celestial Country's Milky Way battlefield, people were still fighting unceasingly. Corpses were still falling into the Yellow Springs, which accepted them eagerly. The battles there were cruel.

In that place, battles never stopped and never had. In the Yellow Springs, there were billions and billions of corpses.

Deep inside the Milky Way battlefield, there were two men and two women. They were encircled and pulling long faces. Five people were surrounding them, their demon Qi surging. The five looked at them as if they had cornered their prey.

"Their physical strength is terrifying. One of them is so strong physically that spells are useless against him, and he also understands Dao, what can we do?" asked a woman to the two men next to her telepathically. Her face was deathly pale.

However, at that moment, the two men also pulled long faces. They felt powerless.

"I wouldn't have thought that the situation would be like this right after arriving. We were too careless and confident. We came to the Milky Way battlefield, and these people dared come from the other side, they are extremely strong." said another woman. Her Qi was weak and trembling. She was very talented, she didn't want to die here. Her name was already on the Celestial Champion Ranking List at university. A bright future awaited her!

"No solution. We can only fight our way through!" said a young man coldly. The four of them nodded and charged at full speed.

The five demon cultivators suddenly punched out in their direction with a sound like thunder. The four people used spells to block the attacks. The demon cultivators wanted to kill them!

The demon cultivators hadn't said a word. The first and most dazzling cultivator of the Ancient Demon Clan, Juzi, had died, and many people thought that the Ancient Demon Clan was weakening. But now the Ancient Demon Clan was actually becoming stronger and stronger. They had more and more powerful demon cultivators. Many of their descendants were even more talented than their fathers. The Ancient Demon Clan was rising again!

At that moment, Qi began to roll through the Milky Way. The strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan raised their heads together and looked at the sky. Death strength surged and descended from the sky.

Some precious items are falling from the sky!, the Ancient Demon Clan cultivators thought. They frowned, their pitch-black eyes twinkling. A pitch-black death mountain descended from the sky and diffused death Dao power into the air slowly.

"Mark of the Path?" the crowd frowned. The members of the Ancient Demon Clan forgot about the four people. They were staring at the mountain descending from the sky.

Two cultivators rose up into the air and headed towards the ancient mountain. They punched out in the direction of the mountain. There was a thunderous crack, and the death mountain broke apart.

Someone wearing a pitch-black cape appeared from within it. He looked like a demon king ready to conquer all, and his Death intent was terrifying!

—

Lin Feng glanced around and saw many people. He didn't care, though, he just sighed. The battlefield was a mysterious place. It contained many treasures which descended from the sky. Shrines threw things away which were considered precious treasures here.

Lin Feng's black robe fluttered in the wind. He looked in the direction of Hell and got ready to head there.

"Ah!..." At that moment, he heard someone shout out. Lin Feng frowned and saw that a woman was staring at him. She looked at him with great respect.

"Brother Lin Feng!" said that woman. Lin Feng looked like a demon king, but she still recognized him. It was because the statue looked like him. Many people in the Holy City kept talking about him and his achievements, he was the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

"It's indeed Brother Lin Feng!" The man next to her was astonished, his heart started pounding. Before the opening of the Celestial Country, he had seen Lin Feng's statue in Champion University. Many people studied at Champion University and admired Lin Feng, the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

And now in the Celestial Country, they amazingly saw him for real. He was there and had descended from the sky. He looked confident and at ease.

The strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan were surprised. They released their Qi. The four people they had attacked called that guy Brother and looked at him with respect and admiration. He was much stronger than they were.

"Die!" said one of the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan. One of them punched out in Lin Feng's direction. He was very strong, as strong as the people of the Ancient Demon Clan Lin Feng had bumped into back in the days, and they controlled Dao strength too. In the Celestial Country, such people were considered extremely strong.

Lin Feng looked at him, intent emerged from his eyes and corroded his opponent's will. A terrifying death strength shook his opponent's mind. The strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon

Clan suddenly looked frightened. They could sense that Lin Feng was extremely strong!

Lin Feng raised his fist. A terrifying strength emerged and crashed onto his opponent's body. Lin Feng was much, much stronger than he was back when he had been in the Milky Way battlefield before. He now belonged to another world. If Juzi had appeared in front of him, Lin Feng could slap him and kill him instantly. Juzi was a disciple of a Shrine, but he wasn't a core disciple.

Lin Feng was the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Only core disciples of the Shrines could compete with him now.

"How strong!" The four people were stunned when they saw that.

"Brother Lin Feng!" said another girl. She was astonished. Was that really the strongest emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

"Escape!" shouted the strong cultivators of the Ancient Demon Clan. They punched out in Lin Feng's direction again, but Lin Feng punched the attacker without the least hesitation. There were cracks of breaking bone, and that person's head immediately exploded, his body falling down into the Yellow Springs.

"Let's go!" cried the the Ancient Demon Clan cultivators. Their faces were all pale. Lin Feng turned to another one and released death strength. That person's soul immediately exploded, and his body fell down into the Yellow Springs as well.

Lin Feng continued walking and punching the Demon clansmen. Quickly, they were all dead, and their corpses vanished into the Yellow Springs.

The young people of Champion University gulped down in astonishment. Lin Feng was much stronger than them. He truly

belonged to a different world!

“Brother Lin Feng, he’s so strong!” The two women’s hearts were pounding. How magnificent!

“The Milky Way battlefield is dangerous. Don’t go to the depths of the battlefield,” Lin Feng said to those people, before disappearing from their field of vision.

“Can Lin Feng stay alone in here?” those people wondered...

—

Lin Feng crossed the Milky Way battlefield. When he arrived on the side of Hell, a light appeared above his head.

“Hmph!” The strong cultivators of Hell grunted coldly when they saw him. He was an invader, since he had a light above his head. Someone glared at Lin Feng, but Lin Feng looked back at him, death strength emerged from his eyes and crushed that person’s soul. His corpse fell down into the Yellow Springs.

“Eh?” Many people were astonished when they saw that, and released death Qi. Lin Feng released sword strength, two people looked at him, a death sword streaked across the sky and he killed them instantly. At the same time, he released a river made of death energies and killed everybody in his way.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng. Instantly, many people around him suddenly stopped moving, their faces stiff with terror.

# Chapter 221: Mountain of Corpses

---

On the vast Milky Way battlefield...

Lin Feng's appearance didn't astonish people too much. People were just surprised to see so many people die fighting against Lin Feng. Most people just sighed; another terrifying killer!

Someone stood in the air and shivered. He looked after the demon lights which had disappeared. He stared at Lin Feng. A group of people from had Hell died against Lin Feng. How strong was he? He was just at the top of the Huang Qi layer, but he was already so strong...

No matter how strong his opponents were, one strike and he managed to crush his enemies. Nobody could stop him. Even an army couldn't stop him!

How could he be so strong?

At that moment, Lin Feng continued moving. Around him, Death intent rolled in waves. He looked like a demon, his eyes filled with demon energies.

Some people continued moving towards him to kill him, but were slaughtered instead. Nobody could stop him.

----

Seven days later, Lin Feng was standing at the top of a mountain and gazing into the distance. He wouldn't have thought that he would be so unlucky. The Celestial Country had just opened. He needed to wait for almost a year to get out.

He sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. The air began to hum quietly.

When a passing person saw the light above Lin Feng's head, he was stupefied. This guy was so audacious, he was from the other side and he dared stay there as if nothing had happened? On top of

that he was seated cross-legged. He probably considered everybody and everything beneath his notice. How arrogant!

However, many people saw all the corpses around him and didn't get any closer. He was probably extremely strong.

More and more people appeared there and gathered around Lin Feng. They wanted to kill him. They felt ashamed because he had come from the other side, and he had killed so many of their people.

“Kill him!” said someone coldly.

“Everybody, let's attack him together!” proposed some people. They headed towards the top of the mountain.

Lin Feng suddenly opened his eyes. Some horrible shrieks spread through the air. Death and cursing strength surged around him and crushed some people. Lin Feng could kill those people in the blink of an eye!

The crowd was astonished. They screamed out, “Die!”

Lin Feng looked expressionless, his eyes filled with death Qi. There were ten thousand death imprints around him. His death Qi surged out in all directions and carried everything away. People who were in the way all died instantly. His death Qi was horrifyingly powerful.

Those who were still alive were terrified when they saw all those people die instantly.

Lin Feng slowly stood up. His black robe fluttered in the wind. At that moment, it seemed like the world belonged to him. He jumped forwards and the ground trembled.

After a short time, he came back to the top of the mountain, only countless corpses left all around him.

——

However, nothing stopped. People continued coming in from the



distance.

Three months later, on and around the mountain, it smelled like death. So many people had died there.

Half a year later, around the mountain, no grass could grow anymore. There was only death Qi.

Ten months later, at the top of the mountain, everything was dead. People who were a bit weak could not even get close or they died because of the death Qi. People who were strong couldn't come in either, because the death Qi was too powerful.

That place became a forbidden area. Nobody dared come there anymore.

---

Most people were now getting ready to go back to Hell. People gathered there and looked in the direction of the forbidden mountain.

“I’ve heard that a terrifyingly strong cultivator of the top of the Huang Qi layer is there, and that nobody can go there because nobody can withstand a single attack. There are endless corpses there, and they have already turned into a mountain.”

“I’ve heard that he’s from the other side. He looks like a conquering hero. Nobody can get close to him or they die.”

“Hmph! He must have a terrifying death-type item if his death energy is powerful. How could an emperor be that strong?” said someone.

“You can go and check,” said someone mockingly.

The forbidden area had become legendary. Thankfully, the passage of the Celestial Country was going to open again.

---

The terrifying amount of Death intent disappeared abruptly. The crowd was stupefied. What was going on? The forbidden area had

disappeared?

“The Death intent has been recalled.”

When the crowd saw the death Qi disappear, their hearts started pounding. They shot forwards, however, as they moved forwards, mountains of corpses appeared in front of them. The corpses were intact, but the people were dead.

“They probably all have incredible treasures,” whispered the crowd, trembling. Who had done this?

Finally, the death Qi completely disappeared. They could see someone at the top of a mountain. There were still pale death lights around him.

His death Qi could still kill people.

“That death Qi has reached the peak of perfection at that cultivation level,” someone pointed out. For an emperor, such a terrifying Dao was incredible.

“Indeed, no wonder he killed so many people. If we fought against him, we’d die!”

Everybody was afraid of Lin Feng.

—

There was a Holy Spirit in front of Lin Feng, and he looked satisfied. “This is a great Holy Spirit. It’s strong and can use the strength of the earth and sky. It’s much better than ordinary Great Imperial Weapons.

“Back then, the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s Saint could form 33,000 small Holy Spirits and 137 great Holy Spirits. It was probably terrifying to see that!” mused Lin Feng. He waved his hands and the Holy Spirit disappeared. At the same time, he stood up and glanced around. The passage to Hell was going to open soon.

Lin Feng headed towards the crowd. People moved aside and let him pass without attacking him. He was like a death god at this

time, they didn't dare offend him. He was from the other side, but the question was: how did he control death strength so well? His death strength had reached the peak of perfection. Was he going to Hell?

When Lin Feng was finally far away, people went insane and started looting the corpses. They all had incredible precious treasures on them.

However, Lin Feng didn't care about them. He was the First Emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He had become member in a Shrine. The other Shrines had oppressed him. He had gone through so much. What he needed now was real strength!

He stood at the exit. His black robe fluttered in the wind, nobody dared get close. He had killed too many people already. Some people hadn't even gotten close to him, and had died anyway. He was glaring like a tiger eyeing its prey. The people from Hell didn't provoke him.

A few people unwisely got angry and felt humiliated; they approached him, but died instantly.

"What kind of a monster is that?" people sighed.

"How terrifying."

Everybody wanted to get far away from Lin Feng. Lin Feng was calmly waiting to go back to Hell. When the passage opened, Lin Feng turned into a beam of light and went back through.

He appeared in a gigantic valley, but he continued moving at top speed. Very quickly, he appeared at the top of a mountain and stopped. He took a deep breath and put on his illusionary cloak. Instantly, his Qi, face and body changed.

"Hell." Lin Feng flew in the direction of the Great Imperial Song City.

# Chapter 222: Resuscitation

---

At the Great Imperial Song City...

Outside of the gates, people were always fighting. Those who managed to win a hundred battles were considered heroes and could get inside. They were then allowed to become members of the inner part of the city, where they obtained more resources to practice. The battle stage at the gate of the city outside was a symbol.

Of course, winning a hundred times wasn't easy.

Two people were seated in the bleachers and watching the battles. Not far from them, two people were looking at them respectfully, because they were Ministers who controlled a part of Hell. One of them was Minister Kalasutra.

Next to Minister Kalasutra was his daughter, Qin Yao.

Qin Yao was already a high-level emperor, looking valiant and heroic. Her Qi was extraordinary. She didn't look as proud as in the past, and seemed even more beautiful that way.

"Do you think some people can compete with you on the battle stage of the high-level emperors?" asked Minister Kalasutra, smiling at Qin Yao.

"Maybe," replied Qin Yao nodding. However, she looked absent-minded and preoccupied. Her father had been busy and had come back to spend some time with her and watch battles. She didn't know why, but she kept thinking about that man.

Back then, when he was only a low-level emperor, he had won a hundred times. She had thought she was strong, but after a short time, she had realized he was so strong that she couldn't catch up with him anymore, the distance between them had continued increasing. If he hadn't been there, she would have died in the battlefield of the Celestial Country.

“What are you thinking about?” asked Minister Kalasutra when he saw that his daughter looked preoccupied.

“Father, do you remember Minister Uptala and Qing Qing?” asked Qin Yao.

Minister Kalasutra was surprised and nodded, “Of course I do. Poor Uptala. Hm... Qin Yao, Wang Xiao doesn’t want people to talk about them anymore, so don’t.”

“I know. But back then, Lin Feng didn’t die, how strong is he now?” Qin Yao wondered calmly.

Minister Uptala was surprised. Back then, Minister Uptala had turned into a Blue Uptala Lotus to protect Lin Feng and Qing Qing. Lin Feng was really strong, Qin Yao had told him about the battles in the Celestial Country.

“Lin Feng was terrifyingly strong. At the same cultivation level, few people could compete with him. Besides, he had incredible comprehensive abilities,” murmured Minister Kalasutra. He remembered Lin Feng perfectly.

——

In a room not far from the city...

In front of Lin Feng was a Blue Uptala Lotus with a dimly discernible Qi. It contained the strength of the ten thousand things of creation. Inside the Blue Uptala Lotus was a frozen young woman. She looked beautiful and pure.

Lin Feng was holding two small bottles which contained some life Qi. But the bottles were firmly closed, so no Qi came out of them.

“Qing Qing,” said Lin Feng, looking at the frozen young woman. He waved his hands and released fire and life strength. Ice began to break and snap. Fire containing life strength filled the air as the ice melted rapidly. Qing Qing’s body appeared quickly.

“Life!” said Lin Feng. Life strength penetrated into her body. At the same time, he broke a bottle and poured a drop on Qing Qing’s body. Her body absorbed the medicine. Beautiful pure lights quickly surrounded her body.

“Godly Medicine of the Immortals!” Even though Lin Feng knew that Qing Qing was going to be fine, he was nervous. Lights surrounded her as the strength penetrated into her body thoroughly. Even if she had only one last thread of consciousness left, that medicine would heal her, so Qing Qing was going to be fine.

Lights and Qi floated around her. Very quickly, her cheeks became pink again.

When Lin Feng saw that, he smiled. She was going to be fine. Then, he broke the other bottle and poured medicine on the Blue Uptala Lotus on which Qing Qing was laying.

The same thing happened, life strength surging out to surround the flower.

Lin Feng stood there, a bit nervous. Qing Qing’s hair bristled, and Lin Feng shivered. She slowly opened her beautiful eyes, looking confused.

Wasn’t she dead?

She looked pure, innocent and beautiful. When she saw Lin Feng she shivered.

“Lin Feng,” she said. She looked confused, “Am I dreaming?”

Lin Feng shook his head, bent down and smiled broadly. “Qing Qing, you’re fine now. Have you completely recovered?”

“Eh?” Qing Qing moved. Life Qi filled the air. She felt fine...

After that, she looked at the Blue Uptala Lotus on which she was sitting, “That’s... my father’s Qi...”

She suddenly looked scared and her cheeks became white again,

“Lin Feng, is my father...”

“He will recover too. I gave him Godly Medicine of the Immortals as well,” replied Lin Feng.

Qing Qing was astonished. Godly Medicine of the Immortals? She got up and caressed the Blue Uptala Lotus. Her eyes twinkled. A silhouette was gradually appearing around the Blue Uptala Lotus.

“Qing Qing!” an ethereal voice spoke out.

Qing Qing’s heart started pounding. She looked at the silhouette and said, “Father, I thought I’d never seen you again.”

“Thank you very much, Lin Feng,” said Minister Uptala looking at Lin Feng, “I’ll never be able to pay you back for the medicine you gave Qing Qing and me.”

Qing Qing was astonished. Her father was Minister Uptala. He was a Celestial Emperor and he was saying he couldn’t pay Lin Feng back for that medicine? It meant that Lin Feng had paid a terrifying price to save her father and her.

She felt as if she had died and come back to life. However, Lin Feng had saved her. She had recovered, and so had her father.

“Uncle Uptala, how could you compare your lives and something material? Material can be bought. A life can’t,” Lin Feng smiled. “Besides, nothing would have ever happened to you if I hadn’t been there. It was my fault. I had to do something for you.”

“How could I blame you?” replied Minister Uptala, shaking his head. His silhouette became more and more real. In contrast, the Blue Uptala Lotus slowly became illusionary.

“Lin Feng, where are we?” asked Minister Uptala.

“Great Imperial Song City,” said Lin Feng. Minister Uptala and Qing Qing were astonished. Great Imperial Song City?

“Wang Xiao won’t let us off.”

“Several years have passed. I came back for Wang Xiao,” said Lin

Feng coldly. Murder appeared in his eyes.

Minister Uptala shook his head, “Lin Feng, you’re talented and you were lucky to obtain godly medicine, but you’re not a great emperor yet. You can’t defeat Wang Xiao, it’s impossible. Besides, he’s a High Official’s descendant. You will not have any opportunity to kill him.”

“No...” said Lin Feng shaking his head, “Uncle Uptala, I came to Hell to kill Wang Xiao, and then I’ll leave. I want to travel around the world. And regarding the way I intend to kill him, I have a plan.”

“I won’t stop you, then. If you need anything, you can tell me,” said Minister Uptala.

“Yes, Uncle Uptala, what do you intend to do?” asked Lin Feng.

“I’ll see if I can find my former army. I can become an official Minister in another city. I don’t need to stay in the Great Imperial Song City,” replied Minister Uptala.

Lin Feng nodded. He had come to Hell to help Minister Uptala and to avenge them. Then, he’d travel the world and become a great emperor. After that, he’d have more things to do.

Snow Clan, Moon Palace, Shrines!

-----

Lin Feng, Minister Uptala, and Qing Qing chatted for a long time. They had both fully recovered. Lin Feng didn’t need to worry about them.

Lin Feng put on his illusionary plaited bamboo hat and a cloak again, his Qi and face changed again. He headed towards the Great Imperial Song City.

-----

Outside of the city, there was the same ocean of people as before. Great Emperor Song liked battles, so it influenced people from the



Great Imperial Song City. There were always people fighting on the battle stage.

Qin Yao didn't look that excited anymore, she looked at Minister Kalasutra and said, "Father, let's go back."

"Why? Don't you want to watch battles anymore? One last fight and we'll go back," said Minister Kalasutra, smiling and shaking his head. At that moment, someone slowly walked onto the high-level emperors' battle stage. His skin was really white and it wasn't easy to see his facial features because he had his head lowered. He had a strange Qi. Minister Kalasutra looked at him, his eyes twinkled, "That guy must be extremely strong."

Qin Yao looked at her father's eyes. Why did her father think that?

The young man's opponent was a cruel middle-aged man. At that moment, he had already won twenty-three battles. When he saw the young man, he shouted, "You want to die!" before charging to the attack.

The pale young man suddenly raised his head, pitch-black death lights shot towards his opponent. In an instant, the middle-aged man was petrified, he couldn't move anymore, and he started trembling.

"Get down!" said the young man coldly. His opponent's face was as grey as death. He didn't say anything, and jumped off the battle stage. His legs were still shaking. He had the searing impression the young man could have killed him like a fly.

# Chapter 223: Hundred Victories

---

The crowd was astonished when they saw the battle. Initially, Minister Kalasutra and Qin Yao wanted to leave, but suddenly, they were excited.

“Father, you were right, that guy is extremely strong,” exclaimed Qin Yao, staring at the young man on the battle stage. Even though she didn’t consider herself quite strong, she could have defeated the middle-aged man with the twenty-three victories, too.

However, that young man had defeated him easily, he hadn’t even need to move!

The challengers understood that as well. Therefore, after the young man won his first battle, nobody challenged him for a while.

The young man was naturally Lin Feng. At that moment, he didn’t know where Wang Xiao was, so he had to be admitted into the city by winning a hundred times.

Someone else finally walked onto the battle stage. That person looked at Lin Feng, whose eyes were closed, so he became angry. Lin Feng disdained the other fighters?

“Please, let’s exchange views on cultivation!” said that person coldly. Lin Feng suddenly opened his eyes, pitch-black Death intent moved into his opponent’s eyes. That person’s life was quickly corroded, and he started hallucinating. He could really die! He understood why the previous fighter had left the battle stage willingly!

“Get down!” said Lin Feng. His opponent looked glum, but Lin Feng’s death voice resonated in his skull. He turned around and left the battle stage, just like the previous fighter.

“Pfew...” Many people in the crowd swallowed and took deep breaths. What a strange and mysterious fighter. One glance, a few words, and people left the battle stage willingly.

The same thing happened during the third battle.

But some extremely strong cultivators wanted to try, mostly because Lin Feng didn't resort to terrifying and explosive attacks to fight. So, how did he win so easily? However, his method worked, and his number of victories increased quickly.

"His Death Dao has already reached a certain level. It might be extremely powerful even," said Minister Kalasutra as he watched Lin Feng. Because of Lin Feng, they hadn't left.

"Twenty-eight victories already and people keep losing because of a single glance?" Qin Yao's face stiffened. She was extremely strong, and she had Hell Fire. Her attacks were explosive and she also understood Dao intent. But this guy seemed to be so strong, as if they were not even worth mentioning in the same sentence.

"Mo Shang is going onto the battle stage. Mo Shang is extremely strong, and his Death Dao is formidable. This battle is going to be brilliant."

"Mo Shang." When Qin Yao saw Mo Shang, she shook her head. Mo Shang was only as strong as her. Even if he was extremely strong, he couldn't defeat that young man; but he probably wouldn't be defeated by a simple glance, either.

"Your Death Dao is not bad," said Mo Shang, staring at Lin Feng, "I also control Death Dao. Therefore, let's fight. Your Death Dao is useless against me."

After that, suddenly, terrifying death lights emerged from Lin Feng's eyes and bombarded Mo Shang's eyes. Mo Shang's soul started trembling. He sensed Death intent penetrate into his body, and his face turned grey.

Lin Feng jumped forwards and landed in front of Mo Shang, staring at him.

"Ah...!" Mo Shang shrieked, and fell down backwards onto his arse. He was terrified.

When the crowd saw that, they swallowed. Mo Shang pulled a long face. He didn't dare look at Lin Feng again. He turned around, crawled to the edge of the battle stage, and jumped off it.

"I underestimated him. He's much stronger than I thought," said Minister Kalasutra, quietly astonished. "His Death Dao has already reached the top of the first phase in terms of Dao strength. Among cultivators at the very top of the Huang Qi layer, people who don't have a very advanced understanding of Dao strength can't compete with him."

"Yes," agreed Qin Yao. She remembered someone, especially the last time she had seen him. He looked like a death god and he could release rivers made of death energy which could sweep anything away. He had killed so many people. Back then, even high-level emperors couldn't withstand a single attack from him.

And now on the battle stage, there was a guy whose Death Dao was equally terrifying. He didn't even need to move to defeat his opponents. He could even kill them easily if he wanted!

—

The fights continued. 50, 60... 90 victories... from the beginning to the end, the young man hadn't needed to fight at all. He glanced at his opponents and defeated them.

The crowd was astonished. Some extremely strong cultivators came out of the Great Imperial Song City.

"That's Minister Enuo, and Minister Asura. Minister Asura is an assassin and a demon king. He's one of the most terrifying Ministers of the Great Imperial Song City. What is he doing here?"

When the crowd saw the Ministers, they were startled, and their hearts started pounding. The young man on the battle stage was too strong, so he had drawn the attention of those people? Many people had won a hundred battles and those Ministers had never come out because of that. Maybe there weren't too many emperors

who were so strong in Hell...

Minister Asura released blood Qi, his hair turning red. Similar to the man on the stage, he could also look at people and at first glance, he could defeat people. At that moment, he was standing there with his hands clasped behind his back, calmly watching the fights. There were several other Ministers next to him, all of them terrifyingly strong.

Minister Kalasutra was surprised. What were those guys doing here?

Lin Feng couldn't help but glance at the bleachers. He smiled coldly on the inside. He didn't mind drawing some attention, because after killing Wang Xiao, he'd try to leave Hell through the Great Imperial Song City. The Celestial Country's passage was already closed. Without using special spells or power, he'd need to wait for another year to leave. If he did wait, then he would have wasted two years stupidly.

He had just come to Hell to kill Wang Xiao and help Minister Uptala. It would have repercussions, but he'd be able to solve all those problems later after becoming extremely strong.

The fights ended quickly each time. In the blink of an eye, Lin Feng had won 97 battles. Nobody could defeat him.

"Avīci, you go," ordered Minister Asura indifferently. Someone jumped onto the battle stage and instantly released a terrifying death blood Qi. From his expression, one had the impression he could kill Lin Feng easily.

(Ed. Note: Avīci is the lowest level of Naraka, one of the Buddhist Hells, and means 'waveless'. It is not a tribute to the singer.)

"That's Avīci, he's Minister Asura's disciple. He's very talented, and will replace Minister Asura in the future."

"Avīci! I've heard that he almost passed the exam of the Hell Shrine! He's really strong. He controls Avīci Hell Dao. He can drive

people into the abysses of the Avīci and kill them.”

Lin Feng glanced his opponent... a strong cultivator, this time.

“Surprisingly, Avīci is getting involved. That guy’s victory spree is going to come to an end, even if he’s extremely strong.”

Even though the crowd found Lin Feng terrifying, they knew that Avīci had almost become a member of a Shrine. He was extremely strong. Probably only a few emperors in the Great Imperial Song City could compete with him.

Avīci was staring at Lin Feng. A terrifying amount of Dao intent drove towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had the impression he was falling into a terrifying and sanguinary cage of Hell. The Dao power tried to pierce through his skin.

Lin Feng was surprised. He released Death imprints around himself and took some steps forwards. His eyes were still filled with death strength, and he was staring at his opponent.

“Die!” shouted Avīci coldly. Avīci’s red Avīci Hell strength turned into terrifying energies which shook Lin Feng’s soul. However, Lin Feng just grunted coldly and millions of threads of death strength appeared around him. They turned into a black death dragon and shot towards his opponent.

Avīci grunted coldly and continued releasing energies. He formed a cross with his hands, and a red cross appeared in front of him. Thunder rumbled, the earth and sky trembled. It was a terrifying collision.

“How strong. But Avīci will win!” the crowd believed. However, they saw Lin Feng punch out, and the red energies were cut in two. Lin Feng jumped into the newly created path. Death strength moved towards his opponent.

Avīci also jumped into his own red energies. When he saw Lin Feng’s death energies surging towards him, the path Lin Feng had

opened turn into an Avīci Hell again.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng coldly. Millions of death strength lights kept appearing. Avīci moved both hands continuously. Red crosses kept blocking off the death strength.

The death strength pierced through. Lin Feng continued walking forwards and punched out, explosion detonating. Avīci sensed a terrifying amount of strength moving towards him and retreated quickly.

However, the death strength was already surrounding him!

His face stiffened. “I lost!”

The red lights disappeared. Avīci jumped off the battle stage without even turning his head around.

The crowd was astonished. This new guy was terrifyingly strong. Nobody knew who he was, and someone as strong as Avīci couldn’t even compete with him. It seemed like this guy was even much, much stronger than Avīci, as if they belonged to different worlds.

Lin Feng won a hundred battles easily. In the bleachers, someone Lin Feng knew had appeared: Wang Xiao!!! He had heard that Avīci had been defeated, so he had decided to come and see this new fighter!

# Chapter 2224: Killing Wang Xiao!

---

Minister Asura studied Lin Feng calmly, but inside, he was astonished. This guy was terrifyingly strong, and his Dao power was astonishing. Maybe it hadn't only reached the first phase, maybe it had already reached its peak! He was only an emperor and his Dao power was so terrifying, how strong would it be if he became a great emperor?

There were several Ministers in the bleachers already. They were all amazed, Lin Feng was extremely talented!

“What’s your name?” Minister Asura asked.

“Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng?” When Minister Kalasutra, Qin Yao and the others heard that, they were astonished, and Wang Xiao looked at him coldly. But then he controlled himself, this couldn't be the Lin Feng he knew. They had a different Qi and a different face. They were completely different.

It's not him, thought Qin Yao, a touch sadly.

“Lin Feng, are you interested in joining the Asura army? I can recruit you as a disciple,” said Minister Asura to Lin Feng calmly.

Everybody was impressed. Minister Asura was one of the strongest Ministers of the Great Imperial Song City, and he wanted to recruit Lin Feng as a disciple. It meant Lin Feng was extremely strong and talented.

Lin Feng was more than strong enough to join the Asura army.

“Minister, is there a way to go to the Continent of the Nine Clouds from the inner part of the Great Imperial Song City?” asked Lin Feng calmly. Minister Asura's social position was higher than Wang Xiao's.

“Eh?” Minister Asura was surprised. Continent of the Nine



Clouds? Who was this guy?

“What do you mean?” asked Minister Asura. He frowned.

“Nothing. I already have a teacher, and I’m not interested in going to the Great Imperial Song City, I came here because I was looking for Wang Xiao,” said Lin Feng, looking at Wang Xiao.

Wang Xiao was astonished and his expression became weird. This guy was called Lin Feng and he had come for him?

“Someone whose name is the same as me is looking for you. If you want to see him, you can come with me,” said Lin Feng said calmly. Then, he turned around and started walking away. He wasn’t interested in going to the Great Imperial Song City at all.

Wang Xiao’s face stiffened. Someone who had the same name as him was looking for him? Qin Yao and Minister Kalasutra’s face was also funny. Was that Lin Feng?

“Have the army come with me,” said Wang Xiao to someone telepathically, as he followed after Lin Feng. Was an emperor trying to deceive him?

“Lin Feng, you killed my son, Wang Zhuo, and you dared come back? You really want to die,” said Wang Xiao coldly. Minister Uptala had turned into a Blue Uptala Lotus, been injured, and then Lin Feng had taken him away. Wang Xiao had looked for Lin Feng everywhere, but hadn’t found him. Now, surprisingly, Lin Feng was back!

“Let’s follow and watch,” said Minister Kalasutra to Qin Yao, and they trailed after Lin Feng. Minister Asura was interested and also followed. A whole group of people ended up following Lin Feng.

“Let’s go!” said many people, curious now. Lin Feng had come back for Wang Xiao? What did he want?

Lin Feng didn’t walk too far and stopped to enter a courtyard. Wang Xiao stopped in the air and stared at Lin Feng.

After a few minutes, the door creaked and a few people came out. Wang Xiao was stunned.

“How is this possible?” said Wang Xiao coldly. He couldn’t believe it his eyes. Those people were dead, how was this possible?!

“Uptala!” said Wang Xiao coldly. Minister Uptala had transformed into a Blue Uptala Lotus, that change was irreversible! How could he be standing here now?

Finally, Wang Xiao looked at Lin Feng coldly and said, “Was it you a moment before?”

“Wang Xiao, welcome to Fortune City!” said Lin Feng with a smile. An illusion appeared and turned into a vast castle. The illusion surrounded Wang Xiao and the others.

“This is... empty space castle.” Wang Xiao was staring at the empty space castle. “Fortune City?”

Wang Xiao wasn’t the only one who was astonished, Minister Uptala and Qing Qing’s hearts were pounding too. That Fortune City was a... precious item? What was going on? They had come back to life thanks to Godly Medicine of the Immortals, then Lin Feng had changed his face and Qi, and now he could summon Fortune City’s empty space castles? Was this a terrifying Great Imperial Weapon?

—

In the outside world, Minister Kalasutra and the others arrived just behind them. However, they just saw an illusionary empty space. It was a deployment spell.

“What a formidable illusion item! What’s going on inside? Who’s in there?” Minister Asura arrived and was astonished too. He was worried for Wang Xiao.

Not long after, an army arrived. The leader of the group was astonished when he saw that and said to Minister Asura, “Minister Asura, should we attack?”

Minister Asura glanced at them and said nothing. He didn't like Wang Xiao. Even though Wang Xiao was an heir in the Great Imperial Song City, Minister Asura didn't have anything to do with that. If Wang Xiao died, it wasn't Minister Asura's problem. That Lin Feng had dared take Wang Xiao inside there and had a terrifying treasure, he wasn't ordinary.

"Let's go!" said the leader of the army when he saw that Minister Asura didn't ask them to attack. They released their energies and attacked the illusion. However, it was useless, they were way too weak. Besides, they couldn't see anything, everything they saw in the illusion was fake.

—

Within the little Fortune City, Lin Feng faced Minister Uptala and said, "Uncle Uptala, this small Fortune City can only be broken by Saint Emperors. Nobody will disturb us here."

This small Fortune City was like the plaited bamboo hat and the cloak, the Diviner had given it to him. It was a powerful item Lin Feng could use to protect himself. People from outside didn't know what it was. Of course, if they knew what was inside, it wouldn't matter, either. As the champion of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, it was normal that Lin Feng had received such items.

"Uncle Uptala, we can kill that guy, right?" said Lin Feng to Minister Uptala. Wang Xiao had been injured by Minister Uptala's Blue Uptala Lotus back in the day, and even though a great deal of time had passed, he hadn't really progressed. He was still weaker than before.

Minister Uptala nodded and slowly walked forwards. Uptala Dao filled the air. Cosmic energies intertwined. In his hands, Blue Uptala Lotuses appeared.

"Don't kill him completely. Leave him one last thread of Qi," Lin Feng said coldly.

Wang Xiao pulled a long face. He also released a terrifying Qi. At this moment, it wasn't time to ask them how they had survived, it was time to fight!

Their battle was as explosive as Lin Feng had expected. Wang Xiao hadn't progressed, and had actually become weaker. He could only rely on soul strength. Lin Feng released Qi to protect Qing Qing. Even though Wang Xiao had become weaker, he could easily kill Qing Qing. Lin Feng had to shield her.

Lin Feng also released the Qi of the ten thousand things of creation. They intertwined and death Qi appeared inside. The Qi of the ten thousand things of creation completely turned into death.

Millions of Blue Uptala Lotuses appeared and turned into sharp weapons. They all shot towards Wang Xiao's soul. His face turned deathly pale, his eyes were filled with murder. How could he die now?!

"Lin Feng!" swore Wang Xiao coldly. Minister Uptala and Qing Qing had come back to life, he had saved them, and he had this Fortune City item!

"Die!" Wang Xiao released strength, bombarding Uptala and forcing him back before he shot towards Lin Feng.

"Die!" shouted Wang Xiao explosively. Terrifying cosmic energies streaked across the sky after Lin Feng. Lin Feng released a death sword and destroyed the attack. A terrifying amount of death strength roared out from him. Millions of threads of death strength turned into sharp death spears, which shot towards Wang Xiao.

"How is this possible?" Wang Xiao's expression changed drastically. What a powerful attack! How could a mere emperor carry out such a terrifying attack!? Lin Feng's death strength could threaten him!

"Sleep!" said Lin Feng. Suddenly, his cosmic energies changed

and turned into Dream of Life cosmic energies. Wang Xiao suddenly felt drowsy. The death strength also turned into terrifying dragons biting for him.

“Piss off!” shouted Wang Xiao furiously. He came back to his senses and released as much strength as he could. Rumbling sounds spread in the air. The spears broke apart. However, Wang Xiao felt weak, and right then a Blue Uptala Lotus penetrated into his body and bombarded his inner strength!

## Chapter 2225: Qin Shan's Appearance

---

The terrifying power of the lotus attacked Wang Xiao's inner body. He went insane.

"Argh..." Wang Xiao shouted furiously. He desperately released his soul strength at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's face was sharp. Death strength emerged from his third eye, and his energies exploded in front of him as he retreated. Even though Wang Xiao had become weaker, he was still a Celestial Emperor. Even if he had regressed to an ordinary Celestial Emperor, he was still quite strong, and as long as he had a thread of soul strength left, he could still attack Lin Feng!

Lin Feng resisted. Wang Xiao was doomed, anyway. Minister Uptala slapped Wang Xiao's head, and more Blue Uptala Lotus lights penetrated into his body. At the same time, a gigantic Blue Uptala Lotus turned into a cage and surrounded Wang Xiao. His soul strength weakened swiftly!

"Lin Feng!!!" shouted Wang Xiao furiously. He hated Lin Feng! He had to kill him!

"Wang Xiao!" shouted Minister Uptala coldly. Another Blue Uptala Lotus flashed into him and attacked his soul, weakening it further.

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards, his eyes filled with death strength and staring at Wang Xiao. When Wang Xiao saw Lin Feng's eyes, he was finally terrified and desperate.

"I'm an imperial descendant of Great Imperial Song City! Will you dare kill me in front of everyone?!" demanded Wang Xiao coldly. He was trying to scare them, of course.

Lin Feng and Minister Uptala both ignored him. They continued walking forwards and releasing ice-cold Qi. Wang Xiao was trembling in front of them.

“If you want to die without suffering, tell me who can take me to the Continent of the Nine Clouds from the Great Imperial Song City,” said Lin Feng coldly.

“I’ll take you there!” replied Wang Xiao. Lin Feng released a terrifying demon fire which contained an ice-cold Yin Qi.

Back in the day, Wang Xiao had captured Qing Qing to threaten Minister Uptala and put some destructive energies in Qing Qing’s body. If Minister Uptala hadn’t transformed into a Blue Uptala Lotus, Qing Qing would have died, and Lin Feng as well! Minister Uptala had saved them both. Now, they were safe and sound after Lin Feng gave them some Godly Medicine of the Immortals. Otherwise, they would have died a long time ago.

Lin Feng released terrifying demon fire strength which moved towards the imprisoned Wang Xiao. He shrieked horribly. His soul was injured and had started burning. It was extremely painful.

“You think I’ll let you live?” said Lin Feng coldly. “Don’t worry, I won’t destroy your soul that quickly. If you tell me the truth, I will kill you without torturing you. However, if you lie, I’ll never destroy your soul and I’ll torture you forever.”

An ice-cold wind brushed against Wang Xiao’s body, caused by Lin Feng’s voice. Wang Xiao was already suffering too much and he said, “You need to find someone who can control an altar, there is a path which leads to the Continent of the Nine Clouds in the Great Imperial Song City. The High Priest can do it. He is the second most powerful person after Great Emperor Song, and controls the School of Hades. But they almost never use it because people who know about the Continent of the Nine Clouds are extremely strong, talented, and usually they are Great Emperor Song’s descendants. The others have to rely on themselves by passing the challenge of the Celestial Country.”

When Lin Feng heard that, he recalled his fire and looked at Minister Uptala. Minister Uptala nodded and said, “The High

Priest really has incredible privileges in the Great Imperial Song City.”

“What is the High Priest’s cultivation level?” Lin Feng asked Wang Xiao coldly.

“Many years ago, he was already at the very top of the Sheng Di Layer. I don’t know whether he has already broken through or not,” replied Wang Xiao numbly.

Hell was an independent world. It had been created by some terrifyingly strong cultivators in the ancient past. It wasn’t connected to the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and had changed a lot with time. People from the Continent of the Nine Clouds don’t really know about Hell, and people from Hell didn’t really know the Continent of the Nine Clouds existed.

With the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, that was like three different worlds. Hell consisted of ten worlds and a countless number of minor Hells. Those Hells were all controlled by the ten cities, which meant that Hell was in the hands of the Ten Yama Courts’ Kings. Those people had to be terrifyingly strong. They were probably Saint Emperors at least, or maybe even Saints. Since the High Priest’s position was just under one of the Ten Yama Courts’ Kings, he had to be extremely strong.

“Lin Feng, the strongest Ministers of the Great Imperial Song City are Saint Emperors at the top of the Sheng Di Layer. They are terrifyingly strong. Minister Asura is one of the three Ministers. His strength is enigmatic and unfathomable. The High Priest is the leader of all the Ministers. He’s stronger than Saint Emperors, but he probably isn’t a Sage yet,” said Minister Uptala.

Lin Feng probably couldn’t ask the High Priest to help him, then. It would be too dangerous.

“Almost a Saint?” whispered Lin Feng, then he looked at Minister Uptala, “Uncle Uptala, do you want to come to the Continent of the Nine Clouds with me, or do you want to gather



your army and go to another city?”

If Minister Uptala and Qing Qing stayed in Hell, they'd be able to have a normal life in another city. Therefore, Lin Feng couldn't be sure without asking.

“I don't intend to leave Hell for now. I just came back to life. I want to travel around and go to several Hells. I want to become a Saint Emperor, and then I'll go and see the outside world.” replied Minister Uptala. Hee looked at Qing Qing and asked, “Qing Qing, do you want to stay with me, or travel with Lin Feng?”

When Qing Qing heard Minister Uptala, she blushed and lowered her head. She remained silent. Then, she raised her head again, looked at Lin Feng and smiled, “I'll stay with my father. Lin Feng, will you really go to the continent?”

“Yes,” nodded Lin Feng. Since Minister Uptala and Qing Qing had decided to do that, he could only wish them good luck.

“Uncle Uptala, Qing Qing, one of my masters will go to the Great Imperial Song City. He'll tell them not to do anything to you. I'm convinced Great Emperor Song will give him face,” Lin Feng said calmly. Wang Xiao was just a descendant of Great Emperor Song, and didn't even progress anymore. Great Emperor Song wouldn't get angry because of someone like Wang Xiao!

“Alright!” Qing Qing nodded.

Lin Feng looked at Wang Xiao and said, “Is the High Priest in Great Imperial Song City now?”

“I guess so,” Wang Xiao nodded.

“Lin Feng, we don't need him anymore,” said Minister Uptala calmly.

Lin Feng nodded and sat down cross-legged as Minister Uptala destroyed Wang Xiao's soul.

Minister Uptala watched Lin Feng.

A strange Qi emerged from Lin Feng's body and surrounded him. After a short time, the Qi slowly dispersed. Lin Feng disappeared... and a terrifying giant appeared instead!

“How strong!” Minister Uptala started trembling. This Qi was terrifying. Was this Lin Feng's Master? Where was Lin Feng?

What a man!, thought Minister Uptala. No wonder he had obtained Godly Medicine of the Immortals and he had the Fortune City item. Lin Feng was incredible!

Qin Shan stood up and waved his hand. The small Fortune City disappeared.

Minister Uptala was astonished. What was going on? Wasn't the Fortune City item Lin Feng's? Why could this giant use it too?

At the same time, there were many people gathered outside. When they saw Qin Shan, they were shocked.

“What a terrifying giant. One glance is unbearable.”

Minister Asura was astonished. That was a Saint's Qi!

“Are you Minister Asura?” Lin Feng asked Minister Asura calmly. His voice sounded extremely deep and made the earth and sky shake.

Minister Asura was intimidated and quickly replied, “Indeed, Master!”

“Master, Minister Asura is calling that guy Master? How terrifying!”

“A Saint! A Saint is in the Great Imperial Song City!”

Minister Kalasutra and Qin Yao were astonished. Where was Lin Feng?

Lin Feng had disappeared! Minister Uptala and Qing Qing had come back to life! And now a Saint was here!

# Chapter 2226: Back to the Small World

---

Qin Shan looked at Minister Asura and said, “I killed Wang Xiao. Bring me to the High Priest.”

Minister Asura was astounded. This giant wanted to see the High Priest?

Minister Asura was one of the strongest Ministers of the Great Imperial Song City, and he could indeed go and see the High Priest. He didn’t really care about Wang Xiao’s death.

“I guess you had your reasons to kill Wang Xiao, Master. However, why do you want to meet the High Priest, Master?” asked Minister Asura.

“Of course, Wang Xiao had to die. Just bring me to the High Priest. You don’t need to know anything else. Also, Uptala, his daughter, and my disciple are connected. Don’t do anything to them,” said Qin Shan calmly.

Minister Asura nodded, “I understand. The Great Imperial Song City will not do anything to Minister Uptala and his daughter. Please come with me to the Great Imperial Song City, Master.”

Wherever a Saint appeared in the cultivation world, people were terrified. It was something too astonishing. Saints, or Sages as they were sometimes called, could scare anyone to death. One simple sentence, and people could collapse. How could the Great Imperial Song City dare harm Minister Uptala and his daughter if a Saint protected them? Nobody cared about Wang Xiao, especially if a Saint had killed him.

The Saint turned around and looked at Minister Uptala and Qing Qing. They heard, Uncle Uptala, Qing Qing, I hope we’ll meet again.

Qin Shan turned around again and followed Minister Asura. They both left.

Minister Uptala and Qing Qing were trembling. That was Lin Feng's voice!

They watched him leave with mixed feelings. Lin Feng was following Minister Asura and was going to leave Hell; would he ever come back?

Minister Kalasutra and Qin Yao also watched them leave. They were wondering whether Lin Feng had become a Saint's disciple...

"Uptala," Minister Kalasutra said to Minister Uptala. "I didn't think you'd come back to life. Even though we weren't really friends, I'm happy for you."

Minister Uptala nodded, "It's all thanks to Lin Feng. Anyway, keep your distance from me."

Minister Kalasutra understood Minister Uptala. They had just killed Wang Xiao, and even though the Saint had said that the Great Imperial Song City couldn't touch them, Minister Kalasutra was different because he was still a Minister of the Great Imperial Song City. It was better for Minister Kalasutra to avoid doing anything which could arouse suspicion.

"I did not think that guy would become so strong so quickly. Even though he hasn't broken through to the Di Qi layer yet, he can already defeat ordinary Great Emperors," Minister Kalasutra sighed. "I really wonder why you didn't leave with him."

"Everybody has different goals in life. He has his own life. Maybe we'll meet again, here or in another world," said Minister Uptala calmly.

Both remained silent.

-----

The Celestial Country battlefield...

There were many battles going on, and one battle was particularly explosive. One of the fighters was terrifying.

“Ye Que, you do it!” said a beautiful woman at that moment. If people from Qi Tian Holy Town had been there, they would have been astonished, because that girl was the Ancient Jade Dynasty’s holy woman!

“Alright!” nodded Ye Que. He released deployment spell energies and captured some people. They just hurt them, they didn’t kill them.

“Lei Dong Tian, be careful when you attack!” the Holy Jade Princess warned an insane fighter. Lei Dong Tian was extremely strong. However, his attacks were too explosive. People had to be far away from him when he fought. Lin Feng had turned them all into perfect puppets.

Lei Dong Tian glanced at the Holy Jade Princess coldly. She was so talkative. If Lin Feng hadn’t given them orders, Lei Dong Tian would have killed her already. She pissed him off all the time.

Ji Jiang was also fighting. After having been captured by Lin Feng, he had started becoming stronger and stronger, and was progressing extremely quickly. However, in front of the other puppets, he was still too weak.

As for what they were doing, Lin Feng had given them the Demon Puppet technique; they could turn other people into Demon Puppets as well.

The battles were nonstop. People on the battlefield were not surprised, because battles never stopped in that place. Lei Dong Tian, Ye Que, the Holy Jade Princess, all them were extremely strong, especially Lei Dong Tian. He had hoped to finish in the top ten of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Nobody on the Celestial Country’s battlefield could compete with him.

That small army kept fighting and they kept growing stronger.

———

As for Lin Feng, he had turned into Qin Shan and was with the

High Priest of Great Imperial Song City. The High Priest was skinny and looked like an ordinary dying old man. Only his eyes showed how dangerous he was.

But he was very polite to Qin Shan. He brought Lin Feng to a palace. Lin Feng had the impression that palace was the real Palace of Hades.

“When you cross the door of the lowest depths of Hell, the eighteenth Hell, you can exit Hell and you’ll arrive in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. I’m not sure where you’ll end up, however,” said the High Priest to Lin Feng. He looked at a flight of stairs.

Lin Feng found the exit extremely mysterious. The priest didn’t know where he would end up?

Where am I going?, wondered Lin Feng. Qin Shan stepped on the flight of stairs and his silhouette became blurry.

After a short time, Lin Feng crossed the door. There was death black water beyond. Without hesitation, Lin Feng jumped into it. He remembered when he had first come to Hell from Jiu You. He had jumped into black water as well.

—

The black water rolled in low, oily waves. The sound of splashing was a jarring intrusion. A silhouette appeared in Jiu You’s forbidden area, and came out of the black water.

Lin Feng glanced around, smiling indifferently.

Lin Feng took a deep breath and whispered, “I’m back. This is Jiu You’s forbidden area. Surprisingly, the exit in the Great Imperial Song City leads to the small world in which I used to live. Nobody dares come here, but for Qin Shan, how could it be a forbidden area?”

Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered. He turned back into Lin Feng again. Qin Shan went back into his spirit world. Even when he

controlled Qin Shan, he used his own strength in order not to tire out Qin Shan. He wanted Qin Shan to recover.

There were some people outside of Jiu You's forbidden area. They were stupefied when they saw a silhouette streaking across the sky. They wanted to say something, but when they looked at that cultivator, they stopped talking.

That was a terrifying emperor. Was he from the twelve empires of Jiu You? Was he one of the great emperors?

Lin Feng didn't care about what those people were thinking. He glanced around and continued flying.

Even though I took everything away from Xue Yue, there must be something new there, thought Lin Feng. Xue Yue's Qi was great; the people suddenly disappeared from there; but there were probably new cultivators there.

Actually, Lin Feng was right. New people had moved to Xue Yue, and it had become a country again. There was no leader though, people competed for power.

Yangzhou City had become a great place to hunt for treasures.

A Zun cultivator protected Yangzhou City. People admired her. She was extremely strong and beautiful. Many people dreamt of being engaged in a relationship with her. However, people in Xue Yue could just dream about it.

That woman was called Qing Meng Xin. Even though she was a woman, she was much stronger than men.

At that moment, that woman was standing before a gigantic statue. She had spent a great deal of time making that statue. It was three zhang high, people had to raise their heads to look at it. That statue was the entrance of Yangzhou City!

# Chapter 2227: Mortal Life

---

After Lin Feng took everything away from Yangzhou City, many things had changed there. It was Xue Yue's center, so people came to Yangzhou City because it was interesting in terms of history.

The gigantic statue was a statue of Lin Feng. There were still large streets and small lanes in Yangzhou City. Lin Feng was considered a hero there.

Even though Qing Meng Xin had become a Zun cultivator for a long time and was very strong, she wasn't proud. She knew that she was much weaker than that young man. Back in the day, they had both appeared on the battle stage of the Great Competition of Xue Yu. However, after that, she had realized how weak she was.

"Lin Feng, where are you now and what is your cultivation level?" whispered Qing Meng Xin.

She was staring at Lin Feng's statue. Many people were watching her. Many men were in love with her. In the past, she used to be sexy, now she was just purely beautiful.

At that moment, in the distance, two silhouettes appeared. One man and one woman. The man looked extremely strong and the woman looked beautiful. They got closer to the statue.

"It doesn't look like him at all," sniffed the woman, looking over the statue. She didn't look satisfied.

"Not bad," the man smiled.

"What? No! It doesn't look like him. It's so bad!" said the woman. Even though the statue looked lifelike, she wasn't satisfied. It was because that statue was Lin Feng the way he looked in the past. He had changed afterwards.

The young man smiled. Actually, he didn't think the statue really looked like him. His Qi was different.



“The best sculptor of the empire carved that statue, Master Ou Ye! He’s a Zun cultivator, he’s extremely strong, and you dare criticize his statue!” said someone when they heard those two. How disrespectful!

“How conceited!” said someone else, staring at the two.

The young man smiled thinly. People were similar everywhere in the cultivation world.

Qing Meng Xin heard a sound. She turned around and saw the two of them. She was surprised.

A strong wind blew, and Qing Meng Xin appeared in front of the man and the woman. She stared at them.

“Qing Meng Xin doesn’t like them either!” snickered the crowd when they saw that. But the young man and the young woman just smiled at Qing Meng Xin. They looked quite composed.

“You...” Qing Meng Xin suddenly remembered so many things. Lin Feng and Tang You You were back! On top of that, she couldn’t see their cultivation level. Even though they were smiling, she understood those two were already very, very far ahead of her.

“You You is my wife,” smiled Lin Feng.

Qing Meng Xin was astonished. She smiled and said, “Congratulations!”

“Thank you,” replied Lin Feng. He said, “I’m going to Yangzhou City to take a walk.”

“Alright, should I come with you?” asked Qing Meng Xin.

“No need. We’re just taking a walk,” said Lin Feng while shaking his head. Then, they entered Yangzhou City.

Qing Meng Xin turned and watched them. She took a deep breath. She was a Zun cultivator, but those two were... how strong were they? They already belonged to a different world.

When the crowd saw that, they were astonished. Qing Meng Xin

knew those two?

“No, that young man looked familiar,” said someone. He looked way too familiar!

“I have the same feeling. As if I had just seen him.” said someone else. Quickly, people looked at the statue.

“There!” Someone swallowed and pointed at the statue. That was the common point!

Many people then looked over at Qing Meng Xin.

“He’s Lin Feng,” said Qing Meng Xin. Those people had the impression their brains were going to explode.

The one who had just talked was Lin Feng. They had just said his wife was talking nonsense! That extremely beautiful woman could criticize the statue if she wished, Master Ou Ye was a nobody in front of them.

“According to legends, Xue Yue disappeared in just one day because of Lin Feng. And now he’s back!”

“Indeed. Lin Feng is too strong. I wonder what his cultivation level is now.”

The people sighed. The news spread quickly in Yangzhou City, and soon everybody knew that Lin Feng had come back.

—

At that moment, Lin Feng and Tang You You were still having a walk in Yangzhou City. They looked like ordinary pedestrians.

Tang You You was smiling, “As expected, the Xue Yue you created is almost the same, but now it has started changing. Your Xue Yue is like it was in the past.”

“Of course. My parents are there. They like to feel like at home, it’s their hometown.” said Lin Feng smiling. Someone who hadn’t grown up in Xue Yue wouldn’t be able to see the differences though. The people in Lin Feng’s Xue Yue didn’t know they were

somewhere else.

“Why did you want to come here?” asked Tang You You, holding Lin Feng’s arm and smiling gently.

“I initially wanted to go back home with you. Isn’t it a good thing?” replied Lin Feng with a smile.

—

They spent some time in bars and restaurants. The news that Lin Feng had come back had already spread in Yangzhou City, and many people noticed them. However, the two simply rose up into the air.

“It’s Lin Feng, it’s really him!” said someone when he saw them.

“Lin Feng!” The crowd raised their heads, but Lin Feng and Tang You You had turned into beams of light and disappeared.

“How fast! How strong!” People ran after them, but after a few steps, they stopped, unable to follow. What a pity, they wished they could have seen Lin Feng!

——

After leaving Yangzhou City, they crossed the Empire of Xue Yue and headed to Dragon Mountain to see Tang You You’s family. Tang Yi Yi and Tang Rui were already quite strong and had their own lives.

Lin Feng and Tang You You came down in a courtyard and looked at the sunset. Behind them, Tang You You’s father looked at them and smiled kindly. He couldn’t see how strong they were anymore.

Unfortunately, his grandchild wasn’t here. Tang You You told him that he was going to become a Holy Emperor in a Dynasty, but her father didn’t know what a Dynasty or a Holy Emperor were. He just thought that a Dynasty was probably much stronger than an empire like Dragon Mountain.

He couldn't imagine what a place like Qi Tian Holy Town looked like, just like Lin Feng in the past before he had left the small world.

Lin Feng and Tang You You didn't tell him too much. Telling him too much would just disturb their peaceful lives.

"Sister, when are you leaving with your husband? Stay here for a few days, alright?" said Tang Yi Yi, who was lying down on another side.

"We'll leave in a few days. We'll come back more often in the future," replied Tang You You. She knew that Lin Feng needed to become stronger and break through. They were traveling to become stronger. Lin Feng wanted to break through to the Di Qi layer!

"Ah, I'll come with you!" said Tang Rui.

"No," said Tang You You, shaking her head. Tang Rui was growing up, but he continued acting like a kid.

"Alright, but your husband will stay with me for a few days!" said Tang Rui.

"Alright!" agreed Lin Feng whimsically. Spending a few days here and enjoying the peace and tranquility was a good thing!

# Chapter 2228: Tribes' Goddess

---

A couple was walking on the snow holding hands. The woman looked extremely pretty. She let go of the man's hand and ran on the snow, laughing. She was so beautiful that the snow around her could have melted, just like the man's heart.

“That's Tian Chi Snow Peak there. Is that where you studied back in the days?” Tang You You asked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng gazed into the distance, smiled, and nodded. In front of them was the city of Tian Chi. Many people were walking towards the city, aiming to become Tian Chi's disciples.

“Let's go and see!” exclaimed Tang You You, waiting for Lin Feng. She grabbed his hand again.

—

Many people who wanted to become disciples of Tian Chi were waiting at the foot of the snowy mountains. Many people looked at Lin Feng and Tang You You, viewing them as competitors.

Lin Feng and Tang You You were talking in low voices. They immediately entered Tian Chi, but some people came up to them quickly. “You can't enter Tian Chi!”

Lin Feng was still holding Tang You You's hand, and smiled gently. “You can't follow.”

The two blurred into the wind and disappeared. Those people were astonished, and spun around. The two people were already far away. The guards' hearts started pounding. Those people had entered Tian Chi without permission!

“What to do?”

“He said we can't follow him. He's probably a strong cultivator from abroad. We can't disturb them. Let nature take its course. They don't look evil.”

A few disciples from Tian Chi nodded agreement with those words.

—

Lin Feng and Tang You You arrived at the top of a snowy peak. Lin Feng remembered his time there. He was wondering how his Zun level teachers were doing.

These days, the main peak of Tian Chi was Tian Xuan Snowy Peak. There were two leaders there.

Tian Chi Xue was at the top of a snowy peak. She sensed something and turned around. She suddenly looked astonished, and her eyes became dazzling.

Lin Feng nodded and smiled at her. Tian Chi Xue's mouth was wide open, she wanted to say something, but she was speechless.

A strong wind started blowing and both of them disappeared from her field of vision. Tian Chi Xue's face stiffened. She gazed into the distance and saw Lin Feng already far in the distance.

What is his current cultivation level?, wondered Tian Chi Xue, still speechless. She didn't chase after him.

—

Lin Feng and Tang You You continued walking from peak to peak, enjoying the beautiful scenery, then continued flying. The Huang Sea was still a stormy place, but Lin Feng and Tang You You could travel freely there. Now and then, they passed a boat, and when the people aboard saw two figures flying across the Huang Sea, they were stupefied.

Lin Feng and Tang You You had shaken the entire region of Ba Huang; the northern part of Ba Huang, the western part of Ba Huang, the southern part of Ba Huang, the central part of Ba Huang... Lin Feng had already spent five months in the small world. He just rested there.

---

Lin Feng and Tang You You left the small world crossing the passage between the small world and the Dark Night Region. They crossed the desert, where many tribes still lived. They were all connected.

Lin Feng arrived in a tribe walking on the warm yellow sand. People seemed extremely busy.

Back then, Emperor Yu and he had come to this, tribe and Mu Yun had taken care of them.

Lin Feng knew the place. After a short time, he noticed that many people had gathered at the foot of a tree.

The sunlight was scorching hot, so the people spent time in the shade. There was a beautiful woman in white clothes over there, looking busy. Someone was helping her put healing herbs in a cauldron. Of course, that woman could easily heal light injuries herself.

A young man whose arm was wounded was seated next to Mu Yun as she healed his wounds. He smiled at Mu Yun and said, “Mu Yun, if I could get married to you, I’d be so happy.”

Mu Yun smiled at the young man. Someone next to them admonished him, “Aguta, Mu Yun is the most beautiful woman of all the tribes. She’s nice, gentle, and generous. She’s like a goddess to all the tribes. Why would she want to marry you?”

“Aguta, you’re not even a cultivator of the top of the Zun Qi layer. Mu Yun is an emperor. How could you get married with such a goddess?”

“If a great hero appeared in our tribe, he’d be able to get married to Mu Yun!” said an old man in a solemn and respectful way.

“I will become the hero of our tribes then!” Aguta grinned.

Mu Yun smiled gently, looking like a celestial being. It was the

same thing every day, young men told her such things. Every day, they kept saying they wanted to become heroes and get married to her. However, even if they did, would she want to get married to them?

Lin Feng was standing in the distance. When he saw that beautiful woman, he smiled slightly. She had gone back to the tribe and hadn't left. Nothing had changed, she was just as beautiful as before.

"Lin Feng, don't you like her?" Tang You You asked Lin Feng. Her lips twitched as she stared at him. Lin Feng was staring at the woman and remained motionless.

"I owe her a lot. She's both gentle and generous. Back then, she saved Emperor Yu and me," whispered Lin Feng.

"I'm asking you if you like her?" asked Tang You You. She looked like a little girl. Her eyes twinkled. Lin Feng was a pervert and he liked many women.

"A little bit," Lin Feng admitted. "But I came here just to see if she was alright." He caressed You-You's face gently.

"As expected!" said Tang You You, pursing her lips. She continued, "If you really like her, take her with us. She seems like a good girl, she looks gentle and beautiful. You keep hurting women's feelings!"

"Eh..." Lin Feng looked surprised, he smiled wryly and said to Tang You You, "Meng Qing, Xin Ye, I still haven't solved their problems. We don't know what awaits us in the future. Before becoming stronger, I won't accept other women in my life. I already owe you and the others a lot."

"So someday, when you become a great emperor, you'll continue hurting women's feelings?" said Tang You You, pursing her lips, her eyes twinkling. What a guy!

Lin Feng had cold sweats. "I'll hurt you first!" said Lin Feng,



grabbing Tang You You's arms and laughing.

Tang You You said, "Go and see her. I'm waiting here."

"Eh?" Lin Feng was surprised.

"If she sees me, she'll be sad," Tang You You smiled. She let go off Lin Feng and rose up into the air. As she left, she turned around and smiled back at him.

Lin Feng grinned and shook his head, before walking over to Mu Yun slowly. Mu Yun was focused on her patient, she didn't notice Lin Feng. After all, many people came to her every day.

The others looked at Lin Feng, he looked like a scholar. He was different from the other young men, and probably wasn't from a tribe.

"Help me," said Lin Feng, walking up to Mu Yun.

"There are many people, you need to get in line," said Mu Yun, without looking at the one speaking. However, she sensed that he wasn't moving, and the voice sounded familiar, too.

She raised her head and looked at him. When she saw his broad smile, her heart skipped a beat.

"Lin Feng!" said Mu Yun. She was surprised. She didn't think she would ever see him here.

"Are you alright?" asked Lin Feng, smiling back at Mu Yun.

"Yes, good old routine. My life is peaceful and tranquil. I'm happy!" replied Mu Yun. "What about you? What are you doing here?"

"I was in the region and thought I'd come and see you," said Lin Feng smiled.

Mu Yun blushed despite herself. Then, she looked at the people waiting and said, "Could you all come back tomorrow?"

The people waiting were stunned, everyone looking at Lin Feng.

Who was this guy? Mu Yun never wasted a minute when it came to healing patients. This was a man.

Lin Feng sensed that many men were looking at him coldly.

“No need, I’ll help you,” said Lin Feng smiling. He released life cosmic energies around everybody. People all sensed an incredible vitality surround them.

Some astonished people realized that their injuries were instantly healed. Who was that guy? His cosmic energies were incredible. He was a powerful emperor!

Mu Yun laughed when she saw that, and continued healing people with Lin Feng’s help.

## Chapter 2229: Great Changes Over Time

---

Lin Feng was extremely strong, he could easily heal ordinary injuries instantly. For injuries which weren't obvious, Mu Yun had some remedies. Together they quickly finished healing everyone. When they left together, people stayed there and watched them leave.

Some were envious and jealous. Mu Yun was like a goddess to them. She was looking at that man with admiration and kindness.

At that moment, they were wondering whether their Priestess Mu Yun was in love with him or not. Was it the reason why she refused to be with anyone else? Because she liked him?!

—

Lin Feng and Mu Yun smiled at one another.

“Lin Feng, since the last time you came to Yao Ye Island, how much have you progressed?” asked Mu Yun, smiling lightly.

“I’m now at the top of the Huang Qi layer,” replied Lin Feng easily.

“How fast!” Mu Yun’s lips twitched. “Your fighting abilities have always been higher than your cultivation level. I wonder how strong you are now?”

Lin Feng gave a noncommittal reply. He looked at Mu Yun and said, “I’m traveling because I want to become a great emperor now.”

“Oh, I’m sure you will succeed!” said Mu Yun confidently. She had faith in Lin Feng. He had achieved so many things in life. Back then, he had destroyed the Celestial Qi Castle!

“Yun, what do you intend to do in the future?” asked Lin Feng smiling.

“What could I do? I’ll stay here and leave a peaceful life. That’s

the best for me!” Mu Yun smiled. Her eyes twinkled. It was difficult to know what she was thinking.

“Your entire life?” Lin Feng asked her.

“Yes, I like it that way. I like the environment here, and I like people here, too,” Mu Yun nodded.

“If you’re happy here, then it’s perfect. I hope you’ll always be happy.” said Lin Feng.

An old man arrived. When he saw Lin Feng, he was surprised and smiled, “Little Lin Feng! You came to see Little Yun?”

“Uncle Qiu, yes, I came to see Yun,” Lin Feng answered politely. This old man was Mu Yun’s neighbor. In the past, Lin Feng had lived in their tribe so he knew her neighbors. Back then, they sometimes chatted together.

“Alright, good. You should take her with you. Even though the tribe needs her, she’s bored here alone,” Uncle Qiu smiled. Lin Feng was surprised, and glanced at Mu Yun.

Mu Yun blushed and said, “Grandpa Qiu, what are you talking about?”

“You tell me!” said Uncle Qiu. “I saw you grow up. I know how you feel. Each time you talk about Little Lin Feng, you seem to be happy, your most beautiful smile appears on your face. You think I don’t understand those things?”

“Eh...” Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. Mu Yun blushed even more. She lowered her head and glanced at Lin Feng.

“Yun, I don’t want you to leave, but I hope you can go with Little Lin Feng. This little boy is a good boy.”

“Please stop...” said Mu Yun, stamping one foot. In the distance, the crowd saw that. As expected, Mu Yun liked him!

“Alright, if you don’t want to. I don’t know what you think,” said Uncle Qiu, shaking his head in exasperation.

Lin Feng looked at Mu Yun, Mu Yun raised her head and said to Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, don’t listen to Uncle Qiu. I’m happy in the tribe.”

“I understand,” said Lin Feng, nodding and sighing. He walked to Mu Yun, put his hands on her cheeks and smiled, “If you need anything, ask me.”

“Alright,” Mu Yun nodded. She didn’t dare look Lin Feng in the eyes.

“I’m off. When I have time, I’ll come back and see you,” said Lin Feng.

Mu Yun raised her head and stared at him. She looked sad. He had just arrived, was he leaving already? She forced herself to smile and nodded, “Alright, that’s a promise.”

“That’s a promise,” Lin Feng nodded. They looked at each other for a few more seconds, Lin Feng took his hands back and turned around. Then, he rose up into the air and disappeared.

Mu Yun looked sad and nostalgic as she stared after him for long minutes.

——

Lin Feng and Tang You You continued their journey.

Tiantai controlled the nine great celestial castles these days. Qing Di Mountain didn’t have much power there anymore. Tiantai had too many contacts: Gold Fire City’s Gold Fire Tower, Sword Mountain, Yao Ye Island, the Holy City, and Tiantai’s headquarters in the Holy City. Gradually, Tiantai was gaining power and influence everywhere. Tiantai also continued recruited geniuses in Champion University in the Holy City.

Lin Feng didn’t stop in on the nine great celestial castles, he just crossed the area. He went to Yao Ye Island, Gold Fire City, and then back to Sword Mountain. Hu Yue and Emperor Shen Yu were back at Yao Ye island.

At Sword Mountain, Lin Feng exchanged views on cultivation with Emperor Wu Tian Jian. Emperor Wu Tian Jian was astonished by his growth.

---

Lin Feng continued traveling. Time passed, and a year went by. Two years had passed the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Out on a vast sea, Deva-Mara Kalpa strength fell from the sky onto Lin Feng's body. The earth and sky were shaking. Demon dragon-shaped energies appeared in the sky and kept pounding on him.

After nine waves of Kalpa strength, Lin Feng's physical strength had increased again. However, Lin Feng didn't look satisfied. He raised his head and looked thoughtful.

Back when he was at the top of the Zun Qi layer, cosmic energies should have cleansed his body. However, because he had a forbidden body, cosmic energies hadn't come down and he hadn't been able to break through to the Huang Qi layer, even if he could control cosmic energies when he was at the top of the Zun Qi layer.

What was going to happen now? Would he be able to break through to the Di Qi layer? Would the same thing happen again?

The Kalpa Indestructible Deva-Mara Skill was a terrifying technique. It was even great for Saint Emperors, and Lin Feng was only an emperor. Now he had the full version, so there was no reason for him not to break through to the Di Qi layer. However, he hadn't done so yet. His physical strength was incredible and stable. Only his cultivation level didn't follow.

He raised his head and looked at the sky. He didn't understand... what did it mean to have a forbidden body? Back then, he hadn't managed to break through to the Huang Qi layer and now, would he be able to break through to the Di Qi layer?

What was he supposed to do to continue progressing on the path of cultivation?

---

Lin Feng spent two years that way. People slowly forgot about the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. All the cultivators who had participated practiced cultivation in peace and people slowly forgot about them, except Chu Chun Qiu. Chu Chun Qiu was still very famous. Even though he hadn't finished first, he had finished in the top three and according to legends in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Destiny Wheel had rotated because of him.

The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was a special place in the continent, it stood at the top. They knew more than most people in the continent. People knew what it meant when the Destiny Wheel rotated.

Chu Chun Qiu was in the Supreme Animal World's Ganges Time, and the Fortune Shrine also acknowledged him. After having gone there, the rumors spread that he had broken through to the Di Qi layer. After that, he fought against a Great Imperial dragon. Two years later, the news spread that Chu Chun Qiu had come out of Ganges Time and that he had won against a genius of the Dragon Clan. He was progressing extremely fast.

Chu Chun Qiu was backed up by the Fortune Shrine and the Supreme Animal World. It proved that he was extremely strong. People were convinced that he was the one who had made the Destiny Wheel rotate.

Apart from Chu Chun Qiu who had his own life, Kong Ming, who had ranked second at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, was also becoming an astounding cultivator. However, after the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he had disappeared.

As for Zhou Rong Man, who had ranked fourth, he shook the

whole Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Apart from Chu Chun Qiu, the second most famous cultivator was Zhou Rong Man because everywhere where he went, he said to people, “My name is Zhou Rong Man!”

Hua Qing Feng was more discreet. Sometimes, people noticed him in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. However, according to rumors, his cultivation level hadn’t changed, as if he were stuck in the Huang Qi layer. That seemed inconsistent with his past performances...

Regarding the other cultivators of the top hundred, they could travel from and to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds freely. Many of them preferred traveling around the world to become stronger, however.

Of course, all that news was about the emperors of the Meeting.

However, all those things had nothing to do with Lin Feng anymore. Tang You You was with him and they were traveling around the Dark Night Region. They were getting ready to go to other regions as well. Lin Feng knew what was going on in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds because he had left a clone there. However, nothing could distract him. He stayed focused.

Even if he hadn’t managed to break through to the Di Qi layer, he didn’t get nervous, and continued practicing cultivation. People who were strong and tough enough to withstand disasters would see hope and victory. Lin Feng had always been that way, and that wasn’t going to change.



## Chapter 2230: Long Night City

---

Time flew by. It was as brief as a glimpse of a white colt flashing past a chink in the wall. Lin Feng traveled, he crossed cities and cities, and even forgot about time.

Deep in a forest in Purple Clouds, Lin Feng was facing a terrifying beast. It had four hoofs like an ox, the head of a tiger, the claws of an eagle, and terrifying eyes.

“Stupid humans!” said the beast aggressively. Its Qi was boiling over. Beasts in the surroundings fled.

This was a Young Beast Master of the Di Qi layer. It was an earth-type beast and had incredible defensive skills, and controlled Heaviness Dao strength. At that moment, Lin Feng and the beast were standing in a gigantic crater. Lin Feng’s blood was boiling and shaking.

When the Heaviness Dao reached a certain level, it could crush people flat under their own weight. An ordinary emperor would have died instantly. Even emperors at the top of the Huang Qi layer could feel under pressure against such beasts. Even Lin Feng’s muscles twitched.

At that moment, Lin Feng’s clothes were not very clean, his hair was messy, his beard had grown out and was long already. He had already spent some time in this, and killed many beasts.

The gigantic Great Imperial Beast opened his mouth, and a terrifying earth spear shot from it at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng grunted coldly. He jumped away as spears continuously emerged from the beast’s mouth, attacking him one after another. There were cracks as some hit him, and weren’t able to pierce through him. His physical body was incredible.

The beast was speechless. A Great Imperial Beast surprisingly had no way to injure an emperor?

Lin Feng's physical strength was obviously incredible. He had studied the Kalpa Indestructible Deva-Mara Skill and the Deva-Mara Body Cleansing Technique. His defense was astonishing. However, his cultivation level hadn't risen, and sometimes, Lin Feng felt annoyed about it.

One year, two years, he remained calm, but as time passed, he felt more and more nervous. The Deva-Mara Kalpa strength was becoming useless. He couldn't break through. Lin Feng started having doubts about himself. It was even more difficult than before, when he couldn't break through to the Huang Qi layer. He didn't know what to do.

He had sent Tang You You back to his spirit's world. He could only rely on himself to break through to the Di Qi layer.

When the Great Imperial Beast saw that, he looked at Lin Feng ferociously. The air began to rumble, and a terrifying heaviness surrounded Lin Feng as the beast galloped towards him. It felt like millions of elephants were stampeding towards him!

Lin Feng continued running forwards. An incredible amount of demon lights flashed. He raised his arms and his fists, the atmosphere distorting around his fists. It felt like the earth and sky were about to collapse.

The Great Imperial Beast released a great earth sword ten zhang long. It was impossible to dodge.

Lin Feng released and condensed demon strength. A gigantic black sword appeared, also hiltless. It collided with the enemy's gigantic sword. The atmosphere kept trembling from the Qi in the air.

"Die!" Millions of threads of death strength turned into millions of spears and moved towards the beast. The atmosphere became dark and desolate. Everything died around those demon energies, even the grass turned black and started rotting. The Great Imperial Beast's face turned deathly pale as a pitch-black strength

surrounded his body. His life was being eaten away!

This emperor's cosmic energies were extremely powerful. He was a great emperor, but he couldn't compete with this high-level emperor. What a genius!

Lin Feng had started understanding Dao power when he was a medium-level emperor. Such human beings were terrifying. Quite often, Celestial Emperors started understanding Dao power a little bit better, and usually they understood Dao power as well as Lin Feng when they became Saint Emperors. Lin Feng could easily crush ordinary great emperors, but in general, he could defeat all sorts of great emperors already.

The Great Imperial Beast roared furiously. Lin Feng's terrifying Dao power scared him, he had the impression he was about to die!

A gigantic hand appeared, earth strength condensed and turned into a gigantic wall blocking off the death strength. However, Lin Feng still arrived before it, the air crackling around him. The death strength rolled around and swept away its Qi before surrounding it.

The beast roared defiantly, before turning around and fleeing into the distance.

However, Lin Feng wasn't ready to let him escape. He followed lightning-quick. A death spear pierced through its body, and at the same time, he punched its skull. The beast suddenly stopped moving and then crashed onto the ground.

These days, Great Imperial Beasts couldn't do much against Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn't find them strong anymore.

Lin Feng's cultivation level didn't change, but he kept becoming stronger. Back in the Celestial Country, mountains of corpses formed around him. He was already much stronger than back then.

Lin Feng looked at the gigantic body and took it away. Great

Imperial Beasts' bodies were still useful.

---

He continued walking through the forest. He was in the depths of a gloomy forest, and there were many terrifying beasts there. Many of them were gigantic, imposing, and magnificent. All the beasts were intelligent. Lin Feng was practicing in the forest, he killed as many beasts as he could. Even Great Imperial Beasts couldn't do much against him.

Lin Feng crossed that wild country. There were also some human beings there. In most places in the Continent, human beings and beasts coexisted and competed.

What a dense and thick bestial Qi, thought Lin Feng, looking at an animal castle. It was new to him, but he just studied it for a short time before continuing along.

---

After a very long time, he saw another human being. He didn't know where he was. He was just wandering without purpose in the depths of Purple Clouds.

In front of Lin Feng, there were two young people, a man and a woman, wearing beautiful clothes. They seemed to be disciples from a sect, and looked quite strong.

When they saw Lin Feng, they were startled. He was such a mess; his hair was messy, and his clothes were torn apart. They thought he must have almost died in the forest.

Even though Lin Feng was a mess, he wasn't dirty. Only his hair was messy, he had a really long beard and his clothes were torn apart. But with his physical strength, his skin was as polished as bronze. He just looked wild, like a caveman.

"Your Excellency, did you fight against a wave of ferocious wild beasts?" the young man asked Lin Feng politely. He didn't know what was going on, but there had been terrifying waves of wild

beasts in the animal empire. Some extremely strong beasts had escaped from the forest and had killed many humans. Some people who had gone hunting had also died.

“A wave of ferocious wild beasts?” said Lin Feng, after remaining silent for a few seconds. He hadn’t heard a human voice in such a long time, he wasn’t used to it anymore.

“The animal empire and Long Night City often fight. A short time ago, many beasts attacked people at the periphery of Long Night City. Many people died. Don’t you know about that? Many people from Long Night City came here to kill beasts.” said the young man calmly. Even though Lin Feng looked wild, they couldn’t see his cultivation level, so he was probably very strong.

When the young man saw that Lin Feng remained silent, he looked at him coldly and asked, “Your Excellency, are you a wild beast?”

Lin Feng suddenly raised his head and the young man went silent. He continued walking towards the city without saying anything more.

# Chapter 2231: Folders

---

Lin Feng walked forwards, his steps heavy. He looked exhausted. His hair covered his face, but his eyes glittered. His soul strength kept floating around as he inspected his surroundings.

To break through to the Di Qi layer, my soul must fuse together with the earth and sky. Attacks become real at that cultivation level. So when a fire-type cultivator uses fire, he can burn mountains for real. A great emperor's soul is also stronger. Great emperors can also use the strength of the earth and sky as their own. It's also easier to understand Dao intent when you're a great emperor. Therefore, many people only start understanding Dao intent after breaking through to the Di Qi layer, thought Lin Feng. He remembered what the Diviner had told him.

"The gods have abandoned me. Maybe that is the reason why I can't break through to the Di Qi layer right now?" mused Lin Feng. However, at that moment, his eyes were dazzling. He saw some strength in the distance which attracted his soul.

"What is that place?" he asked himself. He had unceasingly tried to fuse his soul together with the earth and sky, he had been looking for opportunities, but in vain. It was just like back then, when he couldn't break through to the Huang Qi layer. Maybe the earth and sky were rejecting him, once again?

—

Lin Feng arrived in front of a gigantic stone and jumped atop it. He sat down cross-legged and soul strength filled the air, and rolling far into the distance.

Lin Feng's soul strength was extremely powerful now. He could leave his corporeal body whenever he wished. Of course, it allowed him to see far away, but it was also dangerous. If he encountered someone evil, that person could attack his soul. After having broken through to the Di Qi layer, when a cultivator's soul had

fused together with the earth and sky, it was much easier and more appropriate to leave one's body. These days, Lin Feng only released a few threads of soul strength to inspect his surroundings.

Lin Feng's soul strength moved like the wind through the depths of Long Night City. Everything his soul saw appeared in his field of vision. It was an ancient city, with imposing and magnificent buildings that contained an incredible Qi. The buildings there almost all looked like castles, and the people were strong. Emperors could be seen everywhere; there were also many great emperors, and the city almost seemed boundless.

His soul floated for a long time. Lin Feng was amazed, what kind of place was this? His soul was being attracted by something, was there a treasure here?

Lin Feng was curious, so his soul continued floating around in the city. Finally, quite far away from his real body, he saw a castle with purple Qi floating around it like a purple cloud. However, in front of that fortress were many dark buildings that looked like gates, death water flowing atop them. They all contained a terrifying strength, and surrounded the whole fortress.

That energy looked like the energy he had seen in the King of Hell's Palace.

What is that place?, thought Lin Feng. It had attracted his soul strength. The purple Qi was attracting his soul. It was a mysterious feeling.

The purple Qi was thick and powerful. It was probably the territory of a powerful group. Many cultivators had gathered there. They seemed like they were there to sense the purple Qi.

Some people were standing outside a fortress. There was a young man in the crowd.

"Someone came here with their soul, what a prodigy!" said someone next to him.

“Impressive. In the whole city, only people from Jiu You’s Ministry have a purple soul Qi, which then turns into the purple soul celestial walls which can envelop Long Night City. Maybe that person is attracted by purple soul Qi?” said the young man, smiling coldly.

“So what? Even if that’s the case, many people are insatiably greedy. It’s still difficult to get close to Jiu You’s Ministry. Back then, Brother Ye Ying left Jiu You’s Ministry and participated in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He finished in the top twenty, he’s extremely strong,” a beautiful woman wearing white clothes said coldly. However, when she heard Ye Ying’s name, her beautiful eyes twinkled.

“How strong do you think the owner of that soul strength is?”

“It’s just a thread of soul, I don’t think he’s a great emperor. He’s crazy arrogant to get that close to Jiu You’s Ministry.” said the young man icily, clenching his fists. He spat out some Sword intent, which shot into the distance.

Lin Feng sensed the sword energy, his soul flickered and dodged. He wanted to get close to see what was going on there, but surprisingly someone attacked him!

His soul turned into a figure and looked at the young man on the ground. However, the young man frowned and waved his hand. He wanted to block Lin Feng’s soul and moved quickly.

Lin Feng’s soul was getting ready to leave, but sword strength closed on his soul from all directions. It quickly destroyed his soul thread.

“Idiot,” said the young man. He grunted icily, and his sword energy disappeared.

—

On a boulder outside Long Night City, Lin Feng suddenly opened his eyes, which glittered with ice-cold lights. He released a



terrifying Death intent.

A great distance away, the one who had just attacked his soul sensed the Death intent and shivered. How strong!

“In Long Night City, there are purple clouds, and in some areas, there’s death water. What is it?” asked Lin Feng to those people icily. They were all startled, and felt a great pressure. Their questioner’s consciousness could kill them!

As expected, it wasn’t wise to judge a book by its cover. He looked wild and scary.

“One of the groups of Long Night City, Jiu You’s Ministry!” replied that person.

“What are the purple clouds?” asked Lin Feng.

“Purple Soul Qi. Jiu You’s Ministry gathers the purple soul Qi of the earth and sky in the center of Long Night City. That way, people’s souls can fuse together with the earth and sky more easily, and become great emperors!”

“How incredible.” Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. No wonder there were so many people there.

“Purple soul Qi allows people to understand the earth and sky better. It helps their soul fuse together with the earth and sky more easily. Purple soul Qi is mysterious,” said that person again. Lin Feng nodded. Then, he stood up and gazed off into the distance.

—————

In the Fortune Shrine, in a Star Palace...

Some starlight twinkled down. There were many stars and pagoda lights. Many people looked busy there, consulting jade talismans, folders, and other things.

“Have you found it?” asked the Diviner of someone who was busy.

“No. Years have passed, and we have too many folders. The folders are not sorted at all, it’s so messy. We need to sort them and get rid of the useless folders. I still have hope that we can find that folder, though!” replied the person.

The Diviner nodded and sighed. So many years had passed. Chu Chun Qiu was under pressure. The top ten cultivators were progressing really fast. They had all broken through to the Di Qi layer, except Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was already as strong as a great emperor, but why he hadn’t broken through to the Di Qi layer was a mystery. The only explanation was that he was a Forbidden Person! Even the leader of the Shrine was unable to explain why such a thing was happening to Lin Feng. There was probably no other person like him in the world. To understand that matter, it was necessary to do some research and check ancient folders.

The Forbidden Person understood Forbidden People better than the other Shrines, though. But still, only legends remained about such people. The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds knew about Forbidden People better than ordinary people. In the world, many people had heard that expression, but they didn’t know what it meant.

“Have you started looking into the folders which were in the trash bin?”

“Yes, half a year ago,” that person confirmed. The Fortune Shrine had existed for a very long time, they had as many folders as the stars.

At that moment, someone rushed in. The Diviner turned around and asked, “Old buddy, why such a rush?”

He was a very core member of the Fortune Shrine!

“I found it.” said the old man shaking his hands. He gave a shiny item to the Diviner. The Diviner was astonished, and quickly put

his godly awareness inside. There was only one sentence.

The Diviner started breathing faster. He clenched his fists, and the folder instantly disappeared. His heart was pounding, his eyes were twinkling like bright stars.

No wonder!

## Chapter 2232: Purple Soul Strength

---

Lin Feng walked into Long Night City towards the purple clouds. He seemed to be walking slowly, but actually he was extremely fast. Like the wheels of a carriage, the faster they moved, the slower they looked. Many people couldn't even see him distinctly.

There were still many people outside of Jiu You's Ministry. At that moment, there was a path opened above the black water. There were some people coming out of Jiu You's Ministry!

After a short time, they stopped and looked at the crowd. "Today is Jiu You's Ministry's open house. All the people who have been chosen, come here."

Many young people walked forwards and up to the nine gates. The young man who had attacked Lin Feng was with a woman and another man, he said, "We're from the Sword Sect, here to visit Jiu You's Ministry."

"Yes, I recognize you. You don't need a token," said the strong cultivator of Jiu You's Ministry calmly. The three cultivators looked particularly proud. Not many people had such a privilege in Jiu You's Ministry. Even those who had been selected had to have a token. Those three enjoyed a good reputation in Long Night City, especially since they were from the Sword Sect.

The other people were mostly young people from other sects and powerful groups in town. Every year, powerful groups chose disciples they sent to Jiu You's Ministry to benefit from purple soul strength. The majority of those people were at the top of the Huang Qi layer. After all, the purpose of purple soul strength was to help them fuse their soul together with the earth and sky, and become great emperors!

Behind the crowd, a young man who had messy long hair and beard appeared. Many people looked at him because of that. He looked in the direction of Jiu You's Ministry.

There wasn't only purple soul strength there, there was also death strength. A river made of death energy was there. The death strength was quite pure. This group probably controlled death strength as well!

“Jiu You's Ministry!” whispered Lin Feng. He continued walking forwards. He raised his head and gazed into the distance. The strong cultivator from Jiu You's Ministry looked at Lin Feng and said, “Which group sent you, Your Excellency? And do you have your token?”

Lin Feng shook his head. He looked at a young man, the one who had attacked his soul.

The young man sensed that Lin Feng was looking at him, he had a familiar feeling. He was startled. “You're the one who released that thread of soul strength?”

Lin Feng said nothing. The young man grunted icily and released his Sword intent, staring at Lin Feng, “You initially thought you could come here to sense purple soul strength with a thread of soul? How insolent!”

A strong wind started blowing. Lin Feng disappeared. The young man was shocked, and his face stiffened. His Sword intent was whistling and moving in every direction. However, someone drew closer and closer to him. He saw messy hair. A hand appeared and grew bigger and bigger...

“Piss off!” shouted the young man frantically. Sword lights emerged from his mouth and third eye, and shot towards Lin Feng. However, ice-cold lights emerged from Lin Feng's hair-covered eyes, death strength smashed the sword lights and destroyed them. His hand crashed onto the young man's neck.

The young man was dumbstruck. “Your Excellency, who are you? I'm from the Sword Sect! If you have anything to say, tell me!” said the young man. Breaking and snapping sounds arose as fingers closed. Lin Feng held him by the neck even tighter.

“When you destroyed my soul, you didn’t ask me who I was,” said Lin Feng icily.

“Be merciful!” said someone at that moment. It was a member of Jiu You’s Ministry. All the people who were sent to Jiu You’s Ministry had been carefully selected, and were outstanding. If they died there, how would Jiu You’s Ministry be able to justify themselves? At least, people had to give them face!

“It has nothing to do with Jiu You’s Ministry,” said Lin Feng.

“He’s from the Sword Clan. Your Excellency, even though you’re very strong, the strong cultivators of the Sword Sect will come and kill you painfully if you do anything to him,” said the strong cultivator of Jiu You’s Ministry.

“Indeed, I’m from the Sword Sect, Yue Song; if you attack me, my teacher will kill you!” said the young man again.

Lin Feng turned his head sharply, death Qi emerging from his third eye and into the brain of the young man. The man’s face turned grey, and death Qi surrounded his body.

Lin Feng let go of him, and the body fell limply down. He had just killed that outstanding young man of the Sword Sect.

“Death Dao!” The strong cultivator of Jiu You’s Ministry was staring at Lin Feng. He looked wild and unkempt, but he was also terrifyingly strong. He had probably been an emperor for a very long time and practiced Death Dao for dozens of years. That was the only explanation to the strong cultivator of Jiu You’s Ministry.

“Your Excellency, you’re cruel, but your death strength is incredible!” said that person, staring at Lin Feng. He was astonished. Lin Feng was probably more than a hundred years old...

“You killed him...” The young man and the young woman who were with him were staring at Lin Feng. Their fellow disciple had just been killed, all because he had destroyed Lin Feng’s soul

thread. He had been careless.

“He destroyed that guy’s soul thread a moment ago. He was very arrogant because he was a disciple of the Sword Sect, but this time he wasn’t lucky, he died for nothing. He should have been more discreet,” said someone.

“Yes, indeed. Why destroy someone’s soul thread when you don’t know them? It’s risky and disrespectful. He wasn’t strong enough, so he died, it’s absolutely normal. If he hadn’t provoked that guy, he wouldn’t have died,” agreed different people. The cultivation world was vast, but it was better to be discreet sometimes to avoid getting killed!

Lin Feng looked at the young man and the young woman with his pitch-black eyes. His eyes were filled with murder, so they didn’t say anything.

Then, Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the member of Jiu You’s Ministry, “Can I go inside and sense the purple cloud?”

The strong cultivator of Jiu You’s Ministry was surprised, and glanced at the corpse. Lin Feng hadn’t listened to him and had killed the Sword Sect’s disciple anyway, he wasn’t supposed to let him in.

However, Lin Feng’s death strength was incredible, and it looked similar to their own. He was interested and intrigued.

“Alright, you can come in,” said the great emperor calmly. The two Sword Sect’s disciples were astonished, and looked at him icily. They couldn’t wait to see the strong cultivators of the Sword Sect kill him.

“I’ll let you dispose of the body. The others, follow me.” said the strong cultivator of Jiu You’s Ministry to the two Sword Sect disciples, as he entered Jiu You’s Ministry with everybody else.

Lin Feng followed. He wanted to sense the purple soul strength, would it help him fuse his soul together with the earth and sky?

Would it help him break through to the Di Qi layer?

—

Jiu You's Ministry's people brought the crowd to a vast place with purple clouds everywhere. The purple soul strength rolled around them, and cultivators had an irresistible feeling. They couldn't help but release their souls.

As expected, the purple soul strength attracts people's souls. I wonder if anything will happen, thought Lin Feng. His soul rolled out like other people's souls and moved into the purple clouds.

The purple clouds beat at the same pace as their hearts...

This is how it feels when your soul fuses together with the earth and sky? It allows you to fuse your soul together with the purple clouds, and then the purple clouds fuse with the earth and sky. Your soul indirectly fuses together with the earth and sky!, thought Lin Feng. His soul strength kept penetrating into the purple cloud strength.

It really felt as if his soul had fused together with the earth and sky. His soul felt much stronger that way. He could use soul strength and the strength of the earth and sky to carry out attacks this way. Lin Feng also noticed that his soul defense had increased a lot, so even if his soul was attacked, it was difficult to break it.

The most important thing was that cultivators needed to make their soul fuse together with the earth and sky if they wanted to understand the great and natural Dao of the earth and sky. It would become part of their strength.

"Everybody has three days to enjoy the purple soul strength. If you fight using soul strength, you'll have to bear the responsibilities yourselves. Jiu You's Ministry has nothing to do with duels. However, you can't use physical attacks, only soul attacks," said the Jiu You's Ministry member.

The area was vast. Fighting using their souls was a normal thing



to do. Besides, many people wanted to use more purple soul strength, so they were definitely going to compete for it. That way, they'd understand the relative principles better.

Lin Feng also did his best. He wanted to become a great emperor. He was ready to do his best and use his full strength.

However, he didn't know that the Diviner was looking for his clone, to tell him what he had read in the folder!

# Chapter 2233: Forbidden Body – No Cultivation Level

---

In the Fortune Shrine...

Lin Feng had left two clones in the Fortune Shrine. They fused together and he sat down cross-legged in the starlit sky to cultivate.

The Diviner slowly walked towards him without saying anything. However, Lin Feng's clone opened his eyes and looked at the Diviner. "Teacher!" he greeted the other.

The Diviner looked at Lin Feng, trying to calm down. His heart was still pounding. He said to Lin Feng, "I found the folder. I may have some not so good news."

"Tell me, Teacher," replied Lin Feng. Even if he needed years to break through to the Di Qi layer, it didn't matter, as long as he could someday.

"In the folder, there was only one sentence. Get ready," the Diviner said to him.

"Alright...", Lin Feng nodded.

The Diviner looked at him and took a deep breath. He said slowly, "Forbidden People have no cultivation level, they can't break through to the Di Qi layer."

Lin Feng was astonished, his heart pounding violently. He pulled a long face. "Forbidden People have no cultivation level, they can't break through to the Di Qi layer." Would he truly never be able to break through to the Di Qi layer?!

"Teacher, you said that back then, a great war broke out because of a Forbidden Person, which means that the cultivator was terrifyingly strong. What is that supposed to mean? That extremely strong cultivator couldn't break through to the Di Qi

layer?” asked Lin Feng. He didn’t understand. Why was a person who had a forbidden body not able to break through to the Di Qi layer? How would he ever be able to kill strong great emperors, or even Holy Great Emperors as an emperor?

And then Saints?

“I don’t know either. Life must be difficult as a Forbidden Person. Maybe you can try and find the answer in your spirit’s world? Nobody knows about the former Forbidden Person. However, he was definitely a terrifying fighter. Rest assured, I don’t think anyone or anything can stop you.”

Lin Feng took a deep breath. Even though the Diviner was trying to cheer him up, Lin Feng had the impression his world was collapsing around him. What pressure! What would he do if he wasn’t able to break through to the Di Qi layer? What about his agreement with the Snow Clan? What about the Moon Palace? He wouldn’t be able to sort out all those things!

“Lin Feng, come with me to the library. I’ll show you some spells. Maybe you’ll find something suitable for you,” the Diviner said to him. Lin Feng nodded. The Fortune Shrine had existed for so many years, they probably had terrifying scriptures. He might learn some interesting things.

The Diviner turned around and sighed. He hadn’t told Lin Feng the full sentence. He had only told him half of it. But he wanted Lin Feng to understand things by himself!

——

What happened there influenced Lin Feng’s real body. At that moment, he raised his head and looked at the purple clouds. He looked confused. He said, “I can’t break through to the Di Qi layer, I can’t break through to the Di Qi layer... so how will I practice cultivation?”

Many people looked at Lin Feng. What was going on? Why was

he saying that? They thought, How old is he? He's so strong, his Dao power is incredible, his comprehension abilities are great. Even if he needs a few years, he should be able to break through to the Di Qi layer? What's wrong with him?

Someone grunted icily. His soul strength turned into a gigantic dragon which absorbed the purple soul strength. Many people's souls were also colliding. However, each time someone moved back. Some people even got injured and recalled their soul strength, after which they sat down cross-legged and closed their eyes to recover.

"Some people are extremely strong, their soul strength is astonishing." People weren't surprised to see that. Each time people came, they fought over the purple soul strength, it was normal. Three people's soul strength kept roaring out and absorbing terrifying amounts of purple soul strength. Many people didn't want to take risks, so they stayed away.

Lin Feng's soul was a demon shadow. It was slowly becoming bigger. However, at that moment, a terrifying dragon moved towards him and demanded icily, "Piss off!"

The dragon opened his mouth, he wanting to absorb Lin Feng's soul as well as the purple soul strength!

Lin Feng looked at him coldly. His soul turned into a gigantic death demon, he stood up and looked at the enemy with his pitch-black eyes. He looked like an inky black and purple demon giant. A terrifying strength surged towards the man

The dragon roared out, now surrounded by death Qi.

I can't break through to the Di Qi layer, I can't break through to the Di Qi layer...? Even if I have to defeat the gods, I will become a peerless cultivator someday!, thought Lin Feng. He was unhappy. Back then, he had done the same thing, finding his own solution to break through to the Huang Qi layer.

“Die!” shouted the man furiously. The dragon struggled to break free, but his opponent’s soul looked desperate. He was going to die!

“Spare my life!” shouted the cultivator frantically. He was desperate, and had lost all his arrogance. But a terrifying strength was converging towards his soul from every direction. The soul dragon turned into death Qi and disappeared.

He wasn’t able to recall his soul into his body. If he managed to do that, Lin Feng wouldn’t have been able to finish him so easily. But he had dared act that arrogantly, as people didn’t normally dare fight against such people’s souls.

His soul disappeared, his body turned grey, now a corpse. The crowd knew who he was, a genius from the Luan Clan. He had been killed that way, what a pity, especially since he had been selected to participate!

Lin Feng didn’t know what the others were thinking. His soul roared out, and everybody moved back. Death Dao filled the air, and he occupied a majority of the purple cloud territory.

“Your Excellency, leave some space. Or do you intend to absorb all the purple soul strength alone?” asked someone icily.

An endless number of death spears appeared and moved towards the speaker’s soul. His face turned deathly pale when he sensed the terrifying death strength.

Lin Feng grunted icily. The death strength contained a Nihility Sword!

A horrible shriek rose up. That person’s soul was injured, but he managed to recall it into his body. He opened his eyes and looked at Lin Feng’s soul with murder in his eyes.

Lin Feng ignored him, and continued invading the area. Everybody moved away from him. Very quickly, he was almost the only one to benefit from the purple clouds. People opened their eyes one after another and stared at him icily.

“That guy is going too far. He’s the only one benefitting from the purple strength!”

“Insolent bastard! Unpardonable!” swore someone icily. Nobody wanted to let Lin Feng benefit from the purple strength alone, but they couldn’t attack using their real bodies. They could only use soul strength!

The nine people hadn’t thought someone would be so aggressive and would use all the purple strength for their own benefit.

Lin Feng enjoyed it all. People had been forced to recall their strength into their bodies, but what could they do against him?

Those people had come thinking it would be an incredible opportunity, but found they were facing such a terrifying cultivator.

In the end, the purple strength kept rising to the skies. Lin Feng controlled the purple strength using his soul. It wasn’t difficult at all. His soul and the purple strength had easily fused together and after that, it wasn’t difficult at all to make that fusion of soul strength fuse together with the earth and sky. On top of that, he could easily make the whole strength do anything he wanted.

This is how it feels when your soul has fused together with the earth and sky... It’s a necessary step to become a great emperor, thought Lin Feng making his soul strength rise high up in the air. The purple soul strength could easily fuse together with the earth and sky, so it gave Lin Feng a good opportunity to experience what it felt like.

Everybody was looking at him icily, with murder in their eyes.

---

Back in the Ministry, two young people went out and bowed before the strong cultivator of Jiu You’s Ministry. Their social statuses were extraordinary.

“That guy is so filthy!” frowned a young woman.

“But he’s also extremely strong!” replied one of the nine strong cultivators.

“He’s really strong, indeed. His soul must be terrifyingly strong,” agreed the woman. She looked at the sky and said, “He hasn’t broken through to the Di Qi layer, and that isn’t normal. He should join us.”

## Chapter 2234: Fierce Battle

---

“Join Jiu You’s Ministry? But what if he can’t break through to the Di Qi layer?” asked the other woman indifferently. She didn’t really agree.

“Even if he can’t break through to the Di Qi layer, it doesn’t matter, it can’t be harmful for Jiu You’s Ministry. If he manages to break through to the Di Qi layer, he’ll become terrifyingly strong!” the young man smiled. “Qing Er, we’ll need your help here.”

“Alright,” the girl nodded.

—

Lin Feng was still enjoying the purple soul strength. The purple soul strength was high up in the air and pulsing steadily. The purple soul strength turned into a dragon, then a sword, and then into many other things. It transformed constantly, able to transform into the ten thousand things of creation.

A figure appeared in the air; it looked like a death god and roared furiously. Millions of terrifying death spears appeared. The soul attack was terrifyingly powerful!

With my strength, I can easily borrow purple soul strength. Actually, in normal circumstances, I should also be able to make my soul fuse together with the earth and sky, but I can’t if I don’t use purple soul strength. I really don’t understand, Lin Feng sighed. He didn’t need to try anymore, because he knew that in normal conditions, he should have been able to do this a long time before.

But he was different from other people. Why?

He recalled his soul into his body and opened his eyes. He looked confused. No cultivation level? He couldn’t break through to the Di Qi layer? How could he continue practicing cultivation that way?



Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the purple soul strength. Years had already passed. If he couldn't break through to the Di Qi layer, how would he be able to go to the Snow Clan?

Xue Ao had a king-type body and was terrifyingly strong. In twenty years, he would become even scarier!

He couldn't win against Xue Ao relying solely on physical strength. He needed to break through!

At that moment, Qing Er arrived next to Lin Feng and asked, "How did the purple soul strength feel?"

Lin Feng turned around and saw Qing Er. She was smiling widely, and looked quite charming. People usually found such women extremely beautiful.

However, Lin Feng was used to such women already. He had so many in life. He just said calmly, "I'm done already."

He stood up and started walking away. The purple soul strength couldn't help him break through to the Di Qi layer.

Qing Er's beautiful eyes gleamed. She was talking to him and he didn't react at all...

"Wait!" she shouted.

Lin Feng stopped, turned his head and asked, "What do you want?"

"There are many geniuses in Jiu You's Ministry. If you were to join us, you'll definitely break through to the Di Qi layer!" said Qing Er, smiling at him.

However, Lin Feng stopped looking at her and resumed walking forwards, saying, "Thank you for the offer," as he continued walking away.

Qing Er's smile stiffened, and she glared at Lin Feng's back unhappily. "That guy is really rude, arrogant, and overbearing, but he's only a tiny little emperor. He dares act so arrogantly in front

of me!”

“Hehe, very arrogant indeed!” said the young man, smiling thinly while walking up to her. Nobody had thought he wouldn’t give face to Jiu You’s Ministry.

“You made me go and invite that moron. How mean.” said the woman unhappily. Lin Feng had humiliated her in front of so many people. For someone with such a high social status as hers, it wasn’t good.

“Forget it. That guy has killed someone from the Sword Sect. He refused our invitation, but when he goes out, he’ll be in trouble,” said that young man calmly. “We can go and watch.”

“Alright,” said Qing Er, nodding agreement. She followed after the young man.

——

Lin Feng sighed. He looked cold and detached, but confused too. When he arrived on the ancient road, some people there looked at him icily... the Sword Sect!

“Teacher, that guy killed our fellow disciple even though nobody offended him or said anything to him!” said those two disciples who had left earlier, pointing at Lin Feng. Their eyes were filled with murder.

Their teacher was wearing a clean white cloak and had a sword in his back. His Sword intent filled the air. He was staring at Lin Feng, Sword intent even emerging from his eyes.

Lin Feng’s eyes were pitch-black. ‘He had kill that guy even though nobody had said or done anything to him?’ That guy had destroyed his thread of soul strength... so they hadn’t said anything? Of course, Lin Feng ignored them and continued walking away.

However, the middle-aged man said to Lin Feng, “Stay here!”

Lin Feng ignored him and continued walking.

“I’m a great emperor, I don’t want to bully young people. Stop now. You have three tries!” said the middle-aged man calmly. He didn’t walk towards Lin Feng, but he sounded ice-cold, and sharp sword energies started gathering around him.

Finally, he started walking towards Lin Feng, and several ancient swords appeared in the air.

Lin Feng didn’t stop though. He continued walking away and completely ignored the man.

Behind him, Qing Er and the young man from Jiu You’s Ministry smiled icily. Lin Feng dared act that arrogant in front of a great emperor of the Sword Sect? The Sword Sect was a powerful group, and that teacher had a good reputation in the Sword Sect. He was a great emperor, and few people could compete with him in the Sword Sect. Lin Feng was going to die!

The two disciples looked at Lin Feng sinisterly, as if they were looking at a dead body.

Lin Feng was feeling sad because the Diviner had told him he wouldn’t be able to break through to the Di Qi layer. He felt desperate and hopeless. He just let the sword energies surround him and did nothing.

The Sword Sect’s teacher was astonished, and getting more and more furious. His sword energies kept getting more and more intense, humming as they gathered. Several sharp swords streaked across the sky and shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng continued walking. Around him, Holy Spirits lights appeared and turned into Sword intent. His terrifying Sword intent also became more and more intense. At the same time, he also released a terrifying death strength.

“Sword cultivator. He’s a sword cultivator too!” remarked the crowd. Interesting! He dared confront a sword cultivator of the Di

Qi layer. It didn't seem like he wanted to escape...

However, at that moment, the crowd was astonished. A terrifyingly sharp sword attacked him, but didn't pierce through. More holes appeared in his clothes, that was all.

"What a physical body..." Many people's hearts were pounding. The two cultivators of Jiu You's Ministry were astonished, too. That physical strength... he could resist such terrifying attacks. How was that possible?! It was a fact though, he had just done it!

The middle-aged man grunted coldly. Energies began to hum violently. Sword intent condensed and turned into a gigantic ancient sword. The earth and sky could fuse together with that world. It could attack both a cultivator's body and soul!

Lin Feng didn't move. Death Holy Spirits appeared and absorbed death strength. The atmosphere around them became dark. At the same time, a gigantic sword condensed and oppressed the atmosphere around it. The great emperor suddenly felt unsafe.

"Die!" shouted that person icily. His sword moved towards Lin Feng. It was like millions of swords were moving towards Lin Feng. At the same time, the death strength descended from the sky, the atmosphere around it distorted and explosive.

Lin Feng jumped and moved towards his opponent. He landed in front of him, raising his fist, which was filled with destructive death strength. The great emperor's face stiffened. He shouted defiantly and released a sharp soul sword. However, Lin Feng's fist reached him first, and there was a brutal explosion. Lin Feng's opponent's body and soul exploded instantly.

The crowd around was astonished. That guy had just killed a great emperor of the Sword Sect with one punch?

The two cultivators of Jiu You's Ministry were astonished. How was that possible?

Lin Feng continued walking away. He looked furious.

The two Sword Sect's disciples' hearts were pounding. They wanted to leave. However, Lin Feng looked over at them icily, and their souls shook.

Lin Feng stamped their souls with death strength. Instantly, their faces turned grey and they collapsed.

One blink, and they had died.

Lin Feng still looked cold and detached. The atmosphere was grey around him, everything in his way seemed to die. People who offended him had to die!

## Chapter 2235: Chasing

---

Lin Feng left. People watched him leave, still astonished, their hearts pounding.

What a strong emperor! One blink and he could kill people! He had even killed a great emperor! His fighting abilities were far better than his cultivation level.

The crowd was mainly astonished because Lin Feng had killed the great emperor so easily. He hadn't used any trump card. He had almost killed him without really paying attention. In other words, before the battle even started, he already knew a great emperor couldn't do much against him. Against emperors, a simple glance was enough to kill them!

"And I just said I hoped he'd become a great emperor. He's just an emperor now, but he's already terrifying!" whispered the young man of Jiu You's Ministry, staring after Lin Feng's figure.

"He's probably a few hundred years old and he can't level up. That's why he's good at fighting," said Qing Er. She thought that Lin Feng was extremely old. In her eyes, that's why Lin Feng was a strong fighter, but she didn't think he was talented.

—

However, Lin Feng didn't care about what those people thought. He was walking through Long Night City, feeling annoyed. Cultivation was so strange. In the past, he wasn't very strong, but at least his cultivation was normal until he reached the top of the Zun Qi layer. Then, he was abandoned by the gods, and he couldn't use the cosmic energies of the earth and sky.

Now, he was at the top of the Huang Qi layer, and he couldn't break through to the Di Qi layer, how annoying! It was even worse than the previous time. This time, Lin Feng had the impression he was at a dead end...

At the same time, the Sword Sect learned that Lin Feng had killed a few of their disciples so they sent some people to chase Lin Feng.

---

In Fortune Shrine, the Diviner took Lin Feng to the archive room and said to his clone, “Lin Feng, there aren’t only archives from strong cultivators who were from the Fortune Shrine, there are also papers obtained from other strong cultivators. Have a look. However, you are different from other people, you are walking on your own path. You don’t practice the same kind of cultivation as normal people. So you can only use other people’s knowledge as a reference.”

“Yes, thank you very much, Teacher,” said Lin Feng nodded. He started checking the different books and folders. The Fortune Shrine had millions of priceless books. In the outside world, powerful groups would be ready to kill for such books. However, Lin Feng was a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine, so he could look as he wished.

Lin Feng’s clone went through many different books. They had been written by terrifyingly strong cultivators. All the cultivators who had written those books had different ways of practicing cultivation, each had their own ways.

Lin Feng had a particularly strong impression when he read some of them.

One of them had been written by a Sakyamuni. It said, In life, there are eight distresses: birth, age, sickness, death, parting with what we love, meeting with what we hate, unattained aims, and all the ills of the five skandhas. Everybody has to go through those things in life. Everybody knows the mental and physical sufferings arising from the full-orbed activities of the skandhas. Even if cultivators are less prone to suffering, they also have to go through such things. They are part of life. And by practicing cultivation, a cultivator can reach enlightenment and attain Buddhahood.

The eight distresses in Buddhism. Nobody can avoid them, thought Lin Feng. Could anyone attain Buddhahood if they understood the eight distresses? Having to part with someone Lin Feng loved made him suffer. He wasn't with Meng Qing, it made him extremely sad, and now he couldn't break through to the Di Qi layer, what a nightmare!

Understanding the eight distresses was important, but could Lin Feng understand them? Could he accept and even embrace suffering to achieve Buddhahood? No. That wasn't his path. He wasn't a Buddhist. He had his own path!

Lin Feng continued reading. He found another interesting book. Some people did all they could to overcome all difficulties with an indomitable will, trying to become peerless sword cultivators, to become Buddhas, or to be respected by everyone in the world.

However, what if a cultivator made efforts his entire life and realized things were not as hoped? How would they feel?

In the book, there was the story of a determined monk, he wanted to become immortal and teach people his entire life. However, a great world war started and people fought everywhere in the world, plunging everyone into an abyss of misery. The monk became furious and started killing and caused rivers of blood to flow. He ended up in contradiction with his own self. In the end, he didn't achieve Buddhahood. He became a demon.

In the book, someone had come to greet and learn from the Buddhist monk. In the end, after having gone through innumerable hardships and tribulations, he had managed to become a Buddha. He was exhausted, however. And even worse, after becoming a Buddha, he had realized that things were not as he had hoped. It was all a lie! He hadn't learned from a Buddhist monk, but from a demon! Everything he had done was for the demon! After that, that cultivator had stopped believing in anything or anyone. He had decided to have it his own way, and became a terrifyingly strong murderer.



When Lin Feng read those books, he shivered. Those stories were about terrifyingly strong cultivators. He also had the impression that those people could be anyone. However, no matter whether they had become peerless Buddhist cultivators or peerless demon cultivators, in the end, those people had all had an incredible life. Their stories were astounding. To reach the top, it was necessary to go through a lot!...

Lin Feng's clone didn't stop. He continued reading books. Each time he finished a book, he understood something new.

---

Lin Feng's real body was taking a walk in Long Night City. His Death intent had calmed down already. His hair was still covering his sharp and dazzling eyes. Because of the Death intent around him, nobody dared get too close.

In the distance, some people moved towards him. They were on gigantic swords, and energies were rolling around them. Lin Feng knew that people had been following him the whole time, but he had decided to ignore them.

He was in Purple Clouds, not in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. If people wanted to kill him here, it wouldn't be easy. Besides, he cared about nothing anymore. He was ready to fight with anyone!

Energies surged up, and finally some people on gigantic swords appeared in front of him. When the people in town saw that, they were astonished. "People from the Sword Sect! They've been chasing an emperor? So many strong sword cultivators, and they're all great emperors! What a strong force! Why did they chase that emperor?"

"I don't know. He must be important, otherwise, why would great emperors chase a mere emperor?" the crowd asked one another.

A strong cultivator of the Sword Sect shouted, “Your Excellency, stop!”

An endless amount of sharp sword strength droned angrily around them

“If you don’t want to die, piss off!” said Lin Feng icily. His voice carried death strength.

The sword cultivators of the Sword Sect retorted icily, “You killed people from the Sword Sect, and you think you’ll be able to leave Long Night City?”

The five great emperors moved towards Lin Feng at the same time, and released even more Sword intent.

Lin Feng released an endless amount of Death intent, his eyes growing colder and colder. He was ready to kill. Millions of death imprints filled the air and floated around him. His Death intent made the earth and sky tremble around him. People on the ground who weren’t far enough away had the impression they were going to die.

An empty space deployment spell appeared under Lin Feng’s feet and he disappeared, reappearing in front of a sword cultivator of the Sword cultivator.

“Great Dream of Life!” said Lin Feng. The sword cultivator started feeling drowsy. However, his formidable Sword intent kept him awake.

“Die!” Death intent descended from the sky and penetrated into his body. Lin Feng released cursing lights through his eyes. Death swords descended from the sky in all directions.

“Piss off!” shouted that cultivator furiously. Sword energies streaked across the sky. However, Lin Feng didn’t care. He raised his fist and condensed sword strength in it, destroying the Sword intent easily. Nothing could stop him.

The Death intent corroded his opponent’s life. The millions of

death stamps hit him at the same time. He punched his opponent. The great emperor exploded loudly!

The other great emperors gathered around him. They wanted to kill him!

“This guy is very strong. We need assistance!” said one of them, taking out a jade talisman and informing other people. Lin Feng was much stronger than they had expected. He could easily kill sword great emperors!

## Chapter 2236: Suddenly

---

Sword lights split the sky. The other four sword great emperors attacked at the same time.

Lin Feng flashed away. The atmosphere around him warped as he reappeared in the distance. Sword lights appeared behind him and struck him, but nothing happened. The sword lights couldn't pierce through his defense!

A strong wind started blowing. Lin Feng released an incredible amount of wind cosmic energies and moved faster than they could see.

The four great emperors had all used their jade talismans to call for assistance from the Sword Sect. After seeing how fast and strong Lin Feng was, they didn't feel confident anymore. They had to join hands, that was certain. Just one against Lin Feng, he could kill them all! But because they were several people and together, Lin Feng thankfully couldn't kill all of them at once...

"How fast!" The great emperors of the Sword Sect chased after Lin Feng, but they realized he was faster than they were. Besides, the fastest ones didn't dare go out in front alone. They had to stay together!

Death intent kept emerging from Lin Feng's eyes. Millions of death stamps floated around him. He looked like a death god. Holy Spirit lights condensed around him and turned into a gigantic black death sword. The atmosphere became oppressive.

Suddenly, Lin Feng turned around and flashed back towards them. He raised his hand, his gigantic death sword dominating the earth and sky. Two great emperors were stunned, the death strength bore down on them. They had the impression they were going to suffocate.

"Die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. The millions of death stamps

descended from the sky towards those two great emperors.

“Be careful!” shouted the other two frantically. However, it was too late. The death stamps bombarded the two men, and they exploded.

The two other great emperors were stunned. Lin Feng was stronger than them in all aspects. As expected, no ordinary great emperor could compete with him!

Blood splashed everywhere. The two other great emperors' faces paled. They couldn't defeat Lin Feng. He could defeat them in one strike!

When Lin Feng appeared in front of them, they felt chilled to the bone. Death Qi surrounded them. Lin Feng was staring at them with his terrifying ice-cold eyes.

Lin Feng released more death stamps in waves. The stamps moved towards one of them. His face turned deathly pale and his whole body stiffened. He knew that he couldn't do anything against Lin Feng.

He suddenly jumped backwards, but he also looked at Lin Feng's eyes. Death Dao intent descended from the sky and crushed him. He immediately died!

“Piss off!” shouted the other sword cultivator desperately. He released as much sword strength as he could. Golden lights crossed over into the space and sliced through the air. The great emperor's sword strength was terrifying.

However, he was facing Lin Feng. During the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Lin Feng could have already destroyed ordinary great emperors easily. A few years had passed since then. Even though he hadn't leveled up, his Death Dao had already almost reached perfection. With his physical and soul strengths, he was even more terrifying. His eyes had also become even scarier. Now, he could easily destroy great emperors unless

they were geniuses.

Of course, Lin Feng felt pressured when he faced Celestial Emperors, their cultivation was much more stable, especially in terms of soul strength and spells. Right at that moment, a Celestial Emperor had appeared in the distance, and Lin Feng sensed his terrifying energies.

After killing the two sword cultivators, Lin Feng turned around without hesitation and fled using short-distance teleportation deployment spells.

The people found the scene strange. A Celestial Emperor from the Sword Sect was chasing an emperor? Strong cultivators from the Sword Sect were arriving from every direction, their swords humming furiously.

Some people stood proudly in the sky. Amongst them, there were two people: Qing Er and the young man from Ji You Ministry. In front of them was a terrifying cultivator. Even though he didn't release any kind of strength, the aura around him was oppressive.

“That's the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, a Celestial Emperor. He's soon going to become a Holy Great Emperor. Ordinary Celestial Emperors can't compete with him.”

“According to legends, his Death Dao has reached the last level already, and will soon be at the top of the last level. He can instantly kill countless people with the power of his mind. Surprisingly, he's here! I wonder whether it has something to do with that emperor?” gossiped the crowd on the ground.

The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights glanced at the corpses on the ground calmly, but on the inside, he was surprised. He said indifferently, “That cultivator's Death Dao is terrifying. He's only a emperor, but he can kill great emperors this easily. He's a terrifying genius!”

“But he's very old, and still an emperor. He's probably been an

emperor for hundreds of years!” said Qing Er.

“An emperor is an emperor. No matter how long he’s been an emperor, his understanding of cultivation is incredible, especially his understanding of Dao. Many people fail to understand Dao properly. Look at other emperors at the top of the Huang Qi layer, how is their understanding of Dao power usually?” replied the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights calmly. Qing Er remained silent.

---

Outside of Long Night City, Lin Feng had reentered the gloomy forest. He released a special Qi around him, the Qi of his spirit’s world. In his spirit’s world, his soul could fuse together with the earth and sky easily.

My soul can’t fuse together with the earth and sky in the outside world, but it can in my spirit’s world. However, I want to do things properly and become a real great emperor!, thought Lin Feng. He forgot that a bunch of terrifying cultivators were chasing him.

Suddenly, he jumped onto a mountain and stopped breathing. It was like he had disappeared suddenly.

After a short time, the strong sword cultivators arrived and inspected the area, but found nothing at all. His Qi had simply disappeared from there.

The strong cultivators were stunned They glanced around and started destroying some mountains nearby. However, they couldn’t see Lin Feng!

After that, more and more strong cultivators arrived, but they didn’t find Lin Feng either!

“He ran away?” the cultivators were shocked. So many strong cultivators and still he had escaped?

However, had Lin Feng really escaped? He didn’t want to escape, he wanted to break through to the Di Qi layer!

—

In his spirit's world, Lin Feng was seated cross-legged. He released his soul, it could easily fuse together with the earth and sky here. In his spirit's world, if such a concept existed, he would have become a great emperor. However, such a thing didn't exist in his spirit's world. Lin Feng didn't feel any different.

“I made this world. There are cosmic energies. In the past, I could use the cosmic energies of the outside world, and I could use the cosmic energies here, too. And now I can make my soul fuse together with the earth and sky of my spirit's world easily, but I can't become a great emperor.”

Lin Feng raised his head and sighed, “In this world, there are no emotions or feelings like in the real world. It's not complete. This world improves as I level up, as I become stronger, as I progress in my studies of cultivation.”

“Maybe someday, this world will be complete when I reached the maximum level on the path of cultivation, just like the man who achieved Buddhahood, and in the end turned into a demon. When conditions are ripe, success is naturally achieved!

“Maybe someday, my soul will be this world! Maybe then, in the twinkling of an eye with the power of my mind, I'll be able to change everything in this world.”

Lin Feng's eyes twinkled as if he had suddenly understood something!!!



# Chapter 2237: Fighting Against a Celestial Emperor

---

In his spirit's world, Lin Feng calmed down. "I can't break through to the Di Qi layer because I am not ready. My understanding is deficient and my state of mind as well, I am too irritable and impatient. I'll level up when it's time."

He calmed himself down.

To become a peerless Buddha and attain Buddhahood, a Buddha had to go through the eight distresses and understand reincarnation. They had to understand these things to become a Buddha. They had to understand Buddha strength and purify people. They had to teach other people, too. If a Buddha could become a peerless cultivator, Lin Feng could too, right?

His path was different. He had his own destiny!

—

In the Fortune Shrine, in the archive room, Lin Feng's clone was holding a book. He put it down, took a deep breath, and said to the Diviner calmly, "Teacher, I know what to do."

"Oh, that's great!" replied the Diviner. When he saw that Lin Feng had calmed down, he smiled. "Your cultivation levels are different from other people. If you can't break through to the Di Qi layer, maybe you'll find another way."

Lin Feng remained silent. He looked at the Diviner in a meaningful way, and nodded.

—

There were still many strong cultivators where Lin Feng was. They kept destroying everything around them, looking for Lin Feng.

The Celestial Emperor was there, proudly standing on Sword

intent in the air. Lin Feng's Qi had suddenly disappeared from this area. He was hiding his Qi, but no matter what, they were going to find him!

The Celestial Emperor suddenly gazed into the distance. A thread of Qi appeared and suddenly, sword lights emerged from his eyes. That person had reappeared!

"He was hiding really well!" The Sword Sect watched Lin Feng. This guy probably had a treasure which allowed him to hide, otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to hide so well.

People moved, sword strength descended from the sky. It was terrifying.

"You're the one who killed people of my Sect, the Sword Sect?" asked the Celestial Emperor coldly.

Lin Feng didn't reply. He glanced around, counting many sword great emperors. He said calmly, "Your sword cultivators are too weak. The great emperors of your sect can't compete with me. I'll give you one opportunity now. You and me, we fight, one-on-one, what do you think?"

"How arrogant!" When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they were astonished. He had challenged a Celestial Emperor! How humiliating, this outsider was just too arrogant!

The Celestial Emperor looked amused as he stared at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was arrogant. It was the first time that he had heard of an emperor challenging a Celestial Emperor.

He waved, and the great emperors around Lin Feng moved away and gave them space. The Celestial Emperor walked towards Lin Feng and said solemnly, "You killed five of my great emperors. I'll kill you."

Lin Feng released earth and demon cosmic energies. He wanted to see how strong a Celestial Emperor could be in a battle. That way, he would also be able to see how strong he could be with the

strength of the Huang Qi layer. Would he ever be able to, as an emperor, kill Celestial Emperors easily, like he had killed great emperors?

This Celestial Emperor was extremely strong. If Lin Feng managed to resist him, it would mean that he was able to fight against Celestial Emperors in general. However, Lin Feng couldn't afford to be careless, he had to focus on defense rather than offense.

Demon and earth cosmic energies were perfect for defense!

"Your cosmic energies are not bad, but do you think you can resist my attacks that way?" said the Celestial Emperor icily when he saw Lin Feng's demon and earth cosmic energies fill the air.

"You, a Celestial Emperor, are fighting against me, an emperor, and you seem so proud," said Lin Feng mockingly.

His opponent looked surprised, but then he smiled indifferently. "Indeed. As a Celestial Emperor, fighting against you, a tiny little emperor, is nothing glorious. However, I will kill you mercilessly. Are you ready?"

"Attack," replied Lin Feng calmly.

The Celestial Emperor nodded. He released strength in waves and roared loudly. His energies turned into ancient swords. The Celestial Emperor remained motionless, as if the earth and sky were attacking, not him.

An incredible amount of strength turned into a deadly gigantic sword. Lin Feng felt oppressed and threatened. That gigantic sword was also oppressing his soul, not just his physical body!

Great Emperors' souls have fused together with the earth and sky. He's a Celestial Emperor, so his soul and the earth and sky are really in symbiosis. It's like he isn't the one who is oppressing me or my soul, it's like it is the earth and sky. However, I know it's his soul strength which has fused together with the earth and sky,

thought Lin Feng.

The atmosphere around him turned into swords and moved towards him. Could Lin Feng block such an attack?

Lin Feng waved his hands and ancient words appeared around him, resonating at the same pace as the earth and sky. He released a terrifying Sword intent, but it was useless, his energies were destroyed by the gigantic sword.

“Die!” A massive amount of strength filled the air. Lin Feng raised his fist in an ancient punch. It contained an incredible amount strength. He attacked the gigantic sword continuously, but it continued moving forwards. Lin Feng’s sword Qi continued surging out from him.

How strong!, thought Lin Feng. He continued punching the gigantic sword and finally, the gigantic sword stopped three chi in front of him and broke. A strong wind pushed Lin Feng back, and made him step back three times.

He was staring at the Celestial Emperor. He sensed the Celestial Emperor’s strength and indeed, a great emperor couldn’t compete with a Celestial Emperor.

Besides, it was just the beginning, sword strength continued condensing in the air. Suddenly, there were many swords around, and all of them were dangerous.

“Kill!” shouted the Celestial Emperor icily. The gigantic swords descended from the sky and moved towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s Qi rolled around him. It looked ancient and immortal. He used an ancient punch again, and millions of fists appeared in the air. Space was riddled with gaping wounds.

“Hmph!” the Celestial Emperor grunted coldly when he saw that Lin Feng could block his attacks. He was surprised. His hand streaked across the sky, sword trails appeared in the sky behind it. It looked like the edge of the horizon.

Lin Feng paid attention. His punches all disappeared. Lin Feng knew that if he used his physical strength to stop the attack, he was going to get critically injured.

Am I really unable to resist a Celestial Emperor?, he wondered. Actually, he could resist Celestial Emperors, but the Celestial Emperor he was facing was extremely strong. Ordinary Celestial Emperors couldn't compete with him. There was a huge difference between ordinary Celestial Emperors and his opponent.

He condensed Holy Spirit swords and finally their energies collided. However, the Celestial Emperor continued releasing more sword attacks, which streaked across the sky. He could release sword attacks instantly!

At the Tian Di level of a Celestial Emperor, many powerful spells, skills, and techniques could be carried out by fusing the soul together with the earth and sky. Using the power of one's godly awareness, one could carry out attacks in the twinkling of an eye.

Lin Feng's cosmic energies turned into empty space cosmic energies which then turned into a curtain of light. The cosmic energies kept changing and allowed him to block some attacks.

Around the Celestial Emperor, the Sword Sect looked calm and serene. Nobody intended to attack, they were just watching the battle. They were convinced that Lin Feng was going to die any time now. He couldn't escape, and he couldn't defeat the Celestial Emperor.

The Celestial Emperor looked at Lin Feng mockingly. He disappeared from where he was and turned into a beam of light. He raised his hand, and sword lights pierced towards Lin Feng. His sword lights looked like a rainbow, and the sun shone upon his attack. It was an incredible thing to see.

## Chapter 2237: Sky Palace

---

“The blood moon in the sky exploded!” Lin Feng stared at the sky, shaking. A terrifying Qi filled the air. It was a terrifying Saint’s Weapon!

There were sublevels within Saints and Saint’s Weapons. There were half-Saints, not very familiar with that cultivation level, but they were Saints already. Then, there were low-level Saints, high-level Saints, and peerless Saints. Weapons were divided into low-level Saint’s Weapons, medium-level Saint’s Weapons, high-level Saint’s Weapons, and peerless Saint’s Weapons. Saint levels and Saint’s Weapon levels were similar, but a low-level Saint’s body was much, much more powerful than a low-level Saint’s Weapon, which meant that when a low-level Saint was attacked by a low-level Saint’s Weapon, they didn’t need to worry.

High-level Saint’s bodies were much, much more powerful than medium-level Saint’s Weapons. And peerless Saints could be injured only by peerless Saint’s Weapons.

In addition, there was a huge, gigantic difference between all those levels! The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation had destroyed the moon in the sky, which meant it was a terrifying Saint’s Weapon!

“Let’s go and see.” Lin Feng and the others moved towards the terrifying Qi. After crossing a curtain of ice-cold Qi, Lin Feng and the others saw the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation.

There was an ancient battle stage before them, and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was stuck into it. There was a dead demon king, he had been cut by the axe of the halberd. It was daunting to see...

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was radiating a terrifying demon Qi which seemed like it was going to destroy the very air they breathed.

The High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine stood on the battle stage and said, “Who killed that cultivator with you, Great Demon Halberd of Desolation? Who even managed to seal you, Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, for such a long time? You contain grief and betrayal Qi, is it because the one who was killed using you is your real master?”

“Grief and betrayal?” Lin Feng and the others were stupefied. They felt the Qi of the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation carefully. As expected, it really did contain some grief Qi. Lin Feng looked at the High Priest, he was right. The one who had been killed by the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was its master, but that meant the one who had killed him was even more terrifying!

The High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine took a step forwards and terrifying soundwave strength filled the air. Lin Feng and the others sensed the invisible and intangible power. A force carried Lin Feng and the others away, the High Priest didn’t want to kill them accidentally with his Qi.

Boom! A terrifying blood-red light moved towards the High Priest of the Celestial Sound Shrine. The atmosphere around him turned into a hell filled with blood and darkness.

The High Priest took another step forwards, the atmosphere was trembling. The buildings around them exploded!

The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation seemed reluctant...

“He’s dead already. You should find another master,” said the High Priest patiently.

The weapon began to vibrate. It wrenched free of the corpse and rose up into the air.

In the distance, someone was watching. However, when the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation passed next to him, he turned into blood fog and disappeared. The Great Demon Halberd of

Desolation didn't even touch him.

"Fearsome!" said Lin Feng and the others. They watched the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation disappear in the distance. Had the Halberd been sealed there for a very long time?

"Master, what is the cultivation level of the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation, and the one who was killed?" Ye Zhi Yun asked the High Priest.

The High Priest turned around and looked at Ye Zhi Yun. "High-level Saint, high-level Saint's Weapon."

Ye Zhi Yun was astonished. So the one who had been killed was a high-level Saint, and the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation was a high-level Saint's Weapon. So, the one who had killed him was a peerless Saint? Was he still alive?

If he was still alive, was he still in this forbidden territory?

In the sky, the moon which had been destroyed reappeared. It contained a terrifying amount of blood-red demon Qi, and would illuminate that area forever. After a short time, the whole Pit of Hell was filled with a corroding Demon intent.

"The blood-red moon contains Demon intent and a terrifying corroding strength. When that moon disappears, the door of the Pit of Hell opens again. You came in, that was pretty reckless," said the High Priest, looking up at the sky.

"What?" The fat guy was astonished. Ye Zhi Yun frowned. She could already sense the corroding demon Qi.

"If you're not a Saint, you can't resist those corroding energies," said the High Priest. He disappeared. In his eyes, Lin Feng and the others were definitely going to die. But there was a woman who knew him in the group, and he didn't want her to die, so he warned them. Otherwise, he wouldn't have cared.

"That demon lake Qi could corrode our bodies," said Ye Zhi Yun, pulling a long face. Her life strength surrounded the others. They



understood how the demons outside had become demons now.

The blood moon was still in the sky. Very quickly, Ye Zhi Yun's life lights were being corroded.

"Are we really going to turn into demons?" said Chi Lian Shan, pulling a long face. A thick earth armor appeared around his body. After that, armor appeared around the others as well, but it was useless, the armor was quickly corroded by the Demon intent.

The blood moon in the sky was getting bigger and bigger. The fat guy was the least resistant, wounds appeared all over his body and Demon intent penetrated into his body through them. He was slowly turning into a demon.

"No..." shouted the fat guy furiously. He didn't want to die. He had come to explore the mystery of the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell, not to die!

"Together!" shouted Lin Feng. They made a circle and all of them released life strength. At the same time, evolution life patterns appeared on the ground. It was the first time Lin Feng had used life patterns, he transformed his god Qi of the earth and sky into life Qi as well, and a great deployment spell surrounded the group.

"Immortal energy cannot be destroyed."

Ye Zhi Yun was astonished; she was from the Life Shrine and she still couldn't release such an incredible life strength. The demon intent in the sky was terrifying, it could easily corrode her life Qi. And now it corroded Lin Feng's life deployment spell, but the life strength was so powerful that it recovered quickly. Chi Lian Shan kept turning into a demon, and then recovering and reverting to human again. The two antagonistic strengths kept competing.

Even though the Demon intent was more powerful than the life strength, the reason why it resisted so well was because the life Qi contained immortal strength!

The fat guy was trembling. He knew that without the immortal

life strength, he would die instantly!

“Hold on and you’ll be fine,” said Lin Feng grimly. His body was also being corroded by the intent, but thanks to the immortal strength in his body, he recovered faster than the others, the corrosion on his body wasn’t even visible.

Boom boom boom!

Strength streaked across the sky and thunder rumbled. Lin Feng and the others raised their heads and saw a terrifying Saint’s Weapon dash to the skies towards the blood moon.

“Great Demon Halberd of Desolation!” Lin Feng raised his head and saw the Great Demon Halberd of Desolation cut towards the blood moon in an explosion of power. The blood moon cracked. The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation released a terrifying amount of strength, and tried to destroy the moon.

“The Great Demon Halberd of Desolation doesn’t like that moon? Why does it keep attacking it?”

The halberd was a Saint’s Weapon, it was alive. The moon had reappeared and it attacked it again. It also began to hum angrily. Thunder rolled as demonic power surged.

Lin Feng and Ye Zhi Yun were astonished. A Saint’s Weapon was attacking a moon?

Demon Qi kept pulsing around them. The blood-red moon kept releasing more and more energies, and a blurry outline appeared within...

It was a castle. A peerless cultivator was seated on the palace. He looked like a terrifying demon, holding a blood-red blade, its tip stuck in the ground.

Was the moon the demon king’s grave? Or his coffin chamber?

At that moment, Lin Feng and the others, all the demons and strong cultivators who were in that world could see that scene in

the sky. They were all shaking.

“The Sky Palace, what’s the date tonight!”

When Lin Feng saw that, he was astonished. He remembered that sentence, the sky palace... what was the date?

# Chapter 2238: Ten Thousand Beasts City

---

Lin Feng was staring at the attack, and suddenly released even more empty space cosmic energies, dazzling golden lights intertwining. The distance between him and the attack seemed much bigger, as if he had appeared in another world.

Lin Feng used the Great Empty Space Technique which he had obtained from the Fortune Shrine. It was similar to the So Close Yet So Far technique. Of course, with empty space cosmic energies, it was much, much more powerful than the So Close Yet So Far technique. At a certain cultivation level, it was easy for enemies to break free from the So Close Yet So Far technique, which is why Lin Feng had stopped using it at some point.

However, the Great Empty Space Technique was from the Fortune Shrine, it was extremely efficient. Of course, against much stronger cultivators, Lin Feng couldn't use it for an extended period of time.

An incredible amount of sword lights passed next to Lin Feng, but didn't touch him. Many people frowned when they saw that. Even the Celestial Emperor was startled. That spell was powerful, if it had allowed him to dodge the attack.

However, he didn't lose hope, and continued attacking. A gigantic hand hurtled towards Lin Feng. Sword strength appeared and turned into a cage, trying to imprison Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's eyes twinkled. He couldn't compete with a Celestial Emperor. However, he could try various attacks and see if they could pose a threat to one!

"Die!" Death Dao moved towards his opponent. Millions of death stamps emitted furious droning hums. Lin Feng's eyes were filled with Death intent. At the same time, nine explosive words floated around him, and an ancient Qi filled the air. A gigantic sharp sword moved towards his opponent as an evil shadow appeared.

“Hmph!” the Celestial Emperor grunted coldly. He was staring at Lin Feng aggressively. Lin Feng’s Dao power had really reached the last level, it seemed. His Death intent was powerful. It could even corrode some of his own life! His death stamps and his death swords were also scary attacks. No wonder he could kill ordinary great emperors easily. No emperor could compete with him!

“Shadow Sword!” said the Celestial Emperor icily. Many shadowy swords appeared around him.

Lin Feng pulled a long face. He couldn’t resist this attack!

“Go.” Lin Feng released as much death strength as he could, and then started running away. He understood that he could not defeat this Celestial Emperor.

However, when Lin Feng turned around, he also felt unsafe. His heart was pounding. Someone’s sword moved towards him.

His attacks have already started to regain a natural state. Our teacher’s brother is slowly becoming stronger and he’ll soon become a Holy Great Emperor!, thought a great emperor. He was amazed, his teacher’s brother was so impressive. However, the most fearsome part was that Lin Feng, a trivial emperor could hold on so long against him. Just a moment before, Lin Feng’s attack had even posed a threat to their teacher’s brother!

He was insane, and he had incredible fighting abilities!

Lin Feng broke a talisman and disappeared. Only whistling deployment lights remained behind him. He was gone from their field of vision.

“Empty space deployment talisman!” The sect members were astonished. That was a teleportation empty space deployment talisman! They couldn’t see where he had gone. A sword light streaked across the sky; it was initially supposed to attack Lin Feng, but instead it just pierced through nothing.

But the Celestial Emperor didn’t stop. He continued chasing after

Lin Feng. He was a Celestial Emperor, he had to kill Lin Feng now, or he would lose face in the Sword Sect.

Lin Feng moved quickly, breaking several deployment talismans and teleporting himself continuously. He soon disappeared from the Celestial Emperor's field of vision.

Behind the Celestial Emperor was a group of great emperors, who continued following him. Behind them, another group of strong cultivators appeared: the strong cultivators from Jiu You's Ministry. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights was with a group of strong cultivators, and they quickly caught up with those from the Sword Sect. However, when they saw that Lin Feng had disappeared, they were stupefied.

They continued chasing him until they arrived at the foot of a castle with some strange pillars and stones. There were all sorts of shapes: birds, lions... They all looked lifelike. A terrifying bestial Qi emerged from the castle.

"Great Imperial City." When the Celestial Emperor of the Sword Sect arrived in front of that castle, he stopped chasing Lin Feng. He knew what this place was. They were in the middle of the animal forest, and there were eight Great Imperial Cities here. Human beings rarely dared go here, including people from Jiu You's Ministry. They didn't want to offend the animal cities.

After a short time, the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights and the others also arrived and stopped. They looked at the city, then at the Sword Sect's Celestial Emperor and asked, "Jian Chen, are you scared of going in to chase him?"

Jian Chen was the Sword Sect's Celestial Emperor. He hesitated despite himself. There were many cities in that forest, and in many of them, human beings and beasts lived together, but animals ruled over them. However, in the eight Great Imperial Cities, human beings were usually in danger. If they died in there, there wasn't anyone able to do anything about it, so the strong

cultivators of the Sword Sect didn't dare go inside.

These cities were mysterious. According to legends, there was a peerless cultivator here: The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

Of course, it was only a legend. Few people knew whether the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts really existed or not. But many people thought that if people said that, it had to be true, especially since Jiu You's Ministry let them live there. If there hadn't been such a terrifying cultivator, they would not have let them live so close to Long Night City.

Jiu You's Ministry were the rulers in Long Night City. Everybody knew that Jiu You's Ministry had never fought against this mysterious influential group which was situated in the neighborhood, even though they had lived next to one another for thousands and thousands of years.

Of course, maybe the cultivators fought sometimes, but nobody knew about it. Everything was kept secret.

"Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, are you interested in that cultivator? Why did you chase him up to here as well?" Jian Chen asked the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights impolitely. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights wasn't very friendly.

"Let's go," said the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights calmly, and then took his group of people into the animal city. Jian Chen was startled, his Sword intent started emitting furious whistling sounds. The Sword Sect followed, too. However, they had wasted time, and finding Lin Feng wouldn't be easy.

---

Actually, Jian Chen had overestimated himself once again. Lin Feng hadn't tried to escape that much, he hadn't changed his face or Qi either. He was walking through the animal city slowly. He realized that this animal city was different from other animal realms he had been in before. The bestial Qi here was even thicker.

It surrounded the whole city. It was like a sealed animal world. The vault of Heaven was made of bestial Qi here too, it was impossible to break it.

Lin Feng was right, the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities were situated in eight different positions, but they were surrounded by the same thing. There was only one entrance and Lin Feng had gone in from there. Actually, the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities had another name, when considered as an aggregate of cities. They were called Ten Thousand Beasts City!

“Animals are obstinate and unruly. There’s a fierce competition between them.” Lin Feng glanced around; the buildings were wrecked, not maintained at all. There were holes everywhere in them. Animals liked having their own territories and expanding. Some beasts around him were walking in their human shapes, some others were in their animal forms, and some of them were even gigantic.

At that moment, Lin Feng stopped worrying about not being able to break through to the Di Qi layer. He tried to cheer himself up. He wanted to understand the world properly. Even though he had his own world, he wanted to understand the outside world. Besides, if he wanted to make his own world perfect, he needed to understand the outside world first.

If twenty years weren’t enough, then it would take thirty, or forty, it didn’t matter! Of course, that was the worst case...



# Chapter 2239: Great Emperor Bai's Daughter

---

Lin Feng's hair was still messy, but he didn't look as sad as before. He looked natural and at ease. He had read many books about people who had had great lives, and who had accomplished great things. They had studied a lot and had become terrifying cultivators. Even though Lin Feng had been through a lot in life, from the beginning, he had always succeeded. Everything had gone smoothly in his life except when he was at the top of the Zun Qi layer and hadn't managed to break through to the Huang Qi layer. Even though back then he had seen that as a failure, later on, he had solved the problem and succeeded. Ever since then, his journey had been moving forward in a very positive direction.

Each time Lin Feng faced a difficulty, it was an opportunity for him to become even more determined.

Many beasts had gathered together in front of him. They were close to a mountain near a frozen lake. At the top of the mountain, there were a few extraordinary figures.

"Those people are descendants of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. They have the highest potential to join his territory," a few beasts were talking. There were a few young people up in the air, all of them animals. Some of them were descendants of the Great Imperial City's leader, the King of the Beasts. They were extraordinarily talented and strong.

---

In ice chambers beneath the lake...

There were other beautiful women wearing nice clothes. They were protectors, stronger than the younger ones.

"I came from so far away. Is that how you receive guests?" a young man asked calmly. His eyes looked sharp and dazzling, and

his arms were crossed on his chest.

“We told you to piss off!” said the bunch of women impolitely.

“Hehe, you’re rude, arrogant and overbearing. You’re not like the former protectors!” said someone else icily. An ice-cold energy moved towards them.

“Insolent!” said a proud and sharp voice. A dazzling finger moved towards the young man who had just talked.

“Come here and we’ll see who’s arrogant!” said the young man aggressively. His voice was sharp and collided against the lake. Ice broke and shattered loudly, audible from far away.

—

At that moment, Lin Feng arrived and looked at the lake. He was surprised. Those young people looked extremely strong, they were all great emperors. Of course, it wasn’t easy to know exactly how old they were, but most people in that group were quite strong, and there were many battles taking place around.

That lake isn’t bad. It’s time for me to take a bath, thought Lin Feng. Since he felt more relaxed, he was also in the mood for a bath.

His figure flickered, some people turned around and looked after him in a strange way. They looked amused.

“What’s that guy doing?” they wondered. Lin Feng was now above the lake. Didn’t he know what that place was?

Lin Feng indeed didn’t know what that place was. The water was ice-cold though, and Lin Feng wanted to have a good bath. He needed to feel clean.

The group of women looked at Lin Feng and heard a splash as Lin Feng dove into the water. The women were astonished, their expressions suddenly changed. They all pulled long faces. However, other people looked extremely amused.

Someone dared dive into the water! Some people stood above the lake and remained vigilant, and didn't dare go inside.

At that moment, Lin Feng was deep in the water and an ice-cold energy surrounded him. He gazed into the distance, and was startled to see chambers. In one of them, there was an incredibly beautiful woman in white clothes. She raised her head and looked back at Lin Feng icily.

There's another world underwater. Are those the palaces of the beasts who live here?, Lin Feng suddenly understood. He had seen a few people around so he hadn't thought too much, but now he understood.

Lin Feng moved towards the buildings and looked at the woman, asking, "Your Excellency, is that your chamber?"

The woman ignored Lin Feng, just staring at him icily. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to start freezing.

At the same time, an explosive voice spread through the air. The woman raised her head and froze the water of the lake. A white layer of ice appeared with a crackle. The ice kept cracking until it broke apart, and the voice disappeared too.

"Miss Bai, since you're here, why not come and stay with us?" said someone at that moment. The woman's body turned into an ice-cold beam of light and she rose up into the water.

When Lin Feng saw her leave, he shook his head and resumed his bath. He took out a sword and shaved with it. After a short time, he looked handsome and clean again. His eyes were black, his hair was soft and shiny. Lights surrounded him, and he changed clothes before heading back up to the surface.

---

Above the lake was Miss Bai and many other people. However, the atmosphere wasn't peaceful.

At the same time, the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights and

Qing Er arrived. When Qing Er saw Miss Bai, she looked hopeless. She felt ashamed of being inferior, both in terms of beauty and strength.

“Who’s that?” whispered Qing Er. Her fellow disciple was next to her and staring at the woman. His heart was pounding.

“Great Emperor Bai’s daughter!” answered the young man, after coming back to his senses. Qing Er frowned. Great Emperor Bai’s daughter, no wonder...

Back in the day, Great Emperor Bai was famous. Even the Great Imperial Beasts feared him. However, Great Emperor Bai focused on cultivation. In the end, he hadn’t managed to become a Saint. He had tried to become one, he had fallen, and left a daughter behind, Bai Yu. She was extremely strong.

However, after Great Emperor Bai’s death, many people had started provoking her because they wanted to get married to her. For that reason, there were always explosive battles around the lake. Then, Great Emperor Bai had returned and killed many strong cultivators, so people had stopped provoking her. Even though people knew that that Great Emperor Bai wasn’t the real Great Emperor Bai, they still feared him. Nobody knew what Great Emperor Bai had given to his daughter to protect her.

“Everybody, what do you want from me?” asked Great Emperor Bai’s daughter, glancing at the crowd icily. The temperature decreased all around when she said that.

“Miss Bai, before Great Emperor Bai’s death, he had been to the territory of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ territory, and then returned to become a Saint. He became a terrifyingly strong emperor. However, you must know what happened in the territory of the Ten Thousand Beasts?” a young man spoke up at that moment.

The crowd was startled. That guy knew? Many people thought that Great Emperor Bai had died because he had been to the King

of the Ten Thousand Beasts' territory. It was also why many people kept provoking her.

“No comment.” said Bai Yu icily. “If you want to fight, come.”

She released a terrifying strength which filled the air. Her snowy-white dress fluttered in the wind. She was breathtakingly beautiful as energies filled the air all around her.

There was some loud splashing just at that moment. A figure in white clothes emerged from the water. Many people were surprised and looked at him. It was a young man, he looked handsome, and his eyes were dark and dazzling. He looked like a righter of wrongs. But he also looked calm and composed, as if all this had nothing to do with him.

“A man?” Many people were astonished. Apart from Great Emperor Bai, there was a man down below?

“Haha, I wouldn't have thought you had a boyfriend already. No wonder you keep rejecting us!” said someone.

Bai Yu looked angry though and asked, “Who are you?”

Lin Feng looked at Bai Yu and answered calmly, “I just wanted to have a bath in the water. I didn't know there was someone down there. I'm sorry, Miss.”

“You're the lunatic who just came into the water?” Bai Yu's eyes glittered with ice-cold lights. People around looked surprised. The insane man who had just gone into the water, that insane cultivator? He was surprisingly handsome!

# Chapter 2240: King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Holy Town

---

“Perverted and insane?” the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights looked amused. He didn’t recognize Lin Feng, though. Lin Feng had just changed his face and Qi again. He looked a bit different.

“Could it be the that one though...?” The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights didn’t recognize Lin Feng, but when he guessed that it might be him, the one who had killed the cultivators from the Sword Sect, he looked amused. The guy was quite handsome, against all expectations.

“Impossible!” said Qing Er behind him, shaking her head. She didn’t believe that Lin Feng could have changed that much. The young man in front of them looked handsome. She could admit that Lin Feng had displayed an incredible strength during his previous battles, but she couldn’t admit that he could be so young and handsome. The young man in front of them looked like her fellow disciple, how could Lin Feng be so strong at the same age?

The members of the Sword Sect looked furious. Not only had he escaped, but he had also gone into Bai Yu’s chamber. How audacious! According to legends, Great Emperor Bai was the only who had lived in that lake!

“Indeed, it’s me,” Lin Feng replied calmly to Bai Yu. He didn’t know that Bai Yu’s chamber was down there. He had thought it was an ordinary lake!

Bai Yu looked at Lin Feng and then turned around, no longer looking at him. She glanced at a few other young people. She looked extremely arrogant, as if she was the only important one in the world.

“Someone invaded Miss Bai’s chamber and she’s not saying anything. She doesn’t mind her reputation being tarnished? We’ve

heard that apart from Great Emperor Bai, nobody has ever been in the lake!” a young man said to Bai Yu mockingly, glancing at Lin Feng indifferently.

“That’s my own problem. Now, you people can leave,” said Bai Yu calmly, controlling herself.

“We won’t leave until you tell us what happened in King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Town. Besides, we’ve heard that you were going there soon, is that true? If it is, I’ll come with you!” smiled a young man smiling. He also sounded quite calm.

Those people weren’t old, but they were all Great Imperial Beasts. They were talented and strong, but they also had self-control. If they were furious though, they could slaughter uncounted numbers of beasts. They could dole out endless amounts of misery and suffering.

“Let’s see if you’re strong enough!” said Miss Bai. She didn’t even look at the young man talking to her. She looked at her hands, ignoring everyone else.

The young man smiled and slowly walked towards her, saying, “I’ve heard that you have inherited incredible things from Great Imperial City, such as the Thirteen Destructive Melodies. Teach me some things, since you have time.”

The young man released a sharp Qi. A pair of golden wings appeared in his hands.

The young man’s hand streaked across the sky, the wings disappeared and reappeared in front of Bai Yu. The golden wings descended towards her, fissures appearing in the air, the wings shredding the air and shaking people’s souls.

Bai Yu released a barely discernible Qi. A strange sound spread out as ice appeared around her. The space around her turned into an ice world. In front of Bai Yu, a snowy-white zither appeared, and she started playing. Ice-cold thunder-like energies moved

towards the wings in a flash, and destroyed the wings, which instantly vanished.

“How strong. Such a young Great Imperial Beast. She must be only a hundred years old. She’s so strong.” Lin Feng watched the battle. He looked quite composed. In the past, when he saw such terrifying cultivators, he used to be astonished. These days, he was unmoved, because he was also that strong. However... what was the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory?

The young man slowly walked towards her, more and more golden wings appeared, cutting the space around them. He could easily crush emperors with such attacks. However, Bai Yu didn’t even glance at him.

Zither notes spread out. Icebergs appeared and flashed away. They shot towards the young man, but he didn’t retreat. He raised his gigantic golden hands and the ice energies crashed against them.

Bai Yu didn’t stop playing the zither. More and more ice appeared around her and shot towards the young man. Gigantic waves appeared on the lake. Very quickly, the young man’s hands felt numb, and was shivering. He withdrew to the top of a mountain. He put his hands behind his back, looking angry. He had not been able to get close to her.

“Miss Bai is extremely strong. Her attacks contain soundwaves and invisible and intangible energies which attack people’s souls!” the young man said icily.

The crowd was shaken. They hadn’t noticed that Bai Yu’s attacks contained energies which attacked people’s souls. They had underestimated her. People had to fight against her directly to understand how strong she was.

“I do want someone to come with me to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ territory, but you’re way too weak,” Bai Yu said to the young man calmly. His face stiffened. Bai Yu had humiliated



him in front of everybody.

“So, who could come with you to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ territory?” asked another young man, standing at the top of another mountain.

“He must be able to defeat me at the same cultivation level, at least,” Bai Yu said indifferently. Many people looked glum. At the same level, defeating her? That was easier said than done. She had just displayed her strength. Not many people could compete with her!

“King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ territory?” Lin Feng was curious and asked, “Where’s the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ territory?”

Many people looked at him mockingly, including some Great Imperial Beasts. This guy didn’t know about the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory?

“The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory is the main territory of the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities. However, nobody has ever seen him. According to legends, he’s gone through hundreds of different bodies, and he’s had hundreds of lives. His understanding of cultivation is astonishing,” Bai Yu said to Lin Feng indifferently. “According to legends, if the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts acknowledges you, you will be able to meet him there.”

“I see, so none of you knows what the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory actually is,” smiled Lin Feng.

Bai Yu looked at him strangely and nodded, “Kind of.” She turned around and stopped looking at him.

“You want to go to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ territory?” someone asked icily. Jian Chen rose up in the air and oppressed Lin Feng. Lin Feng had escaped once, he had already lost face. Now he was ignoring them again. What was Lin Feng

thinking?

“Indeed, I’m thinking about it,” said Lin Feng indifferently.

“You think you’ll have an opportunity to escape?” snarled Jian Chen, releasing a terrifying amount of Sword intent towards Lin Feng. An explosive wind also started blowing and surrounded Lin Feng. The space around Lin Feng turned into a sword world. Jian Chen didn’t want to give Lin Feng any opportunity to escape.

“Why would I want to escape?” said Lin Feng calmly. Suddenly, a gigantic ancient cauldron appeared in front of Lin Feng. It contained incredible deployment lights as he activated the ancient cauldron.

“Eh?” Jian Chen was startled and grunted icily. He stretched out his hand and the sword whirlwind moved towards Lin Feng.

The ancient cauldron started rotating. Lin Feng jumped into it and moved towards the sword strength. The sword strength bombarded the cauldron, but it wasn’t effective at all. At the same time, a terrifying amount of strength filled the air.

Dong! Death strength emerged from the ancient cauldron. Coupled with Lin Feng’s Death Dao, Jian Chen’s face suddenly turned grey. His face stiffened into a grimace.

“You’re a Celestial Emperor and you keep chasing me. Show me how you intend to kill me.” Lin Feng understood the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron really well. It was a powerful and priceless ancient treasure. Even the Great Deployment Master had never forgotten about it, and had wanted to keep it.

Lin Feng’s eyes were cold as death. Many different types of soul strength started boiling in the cauldron. Lin Feng was burning them.

“Die!” The cauldron shook violently. Death Qi condensed all around. The Celestial Emperor’s soul trembled. His soul had started being absorbed by the cauldron. A terrifying death Qi

surrounded him!

## Chapter 2241: Killing

---

Jian Chen's face stiffened in fury. He waved his hands and condensed an endless amount of Sword lights, which promptly shot towards the ancient cauldron.

Lin Feng was furious too. The souls in the deployment lights in the ancient cauldron were boiling angrily. The ancient cauldron was trembling and clanging wildly. The earth and sky were shaking all around him, as well. Even the people around were terrified as they felt the Death Qi surround them.

Jian Chen had the impression something was beating on his chest. He could hear a melody of death in his head and it made his thoughts tremble, while invisible and intangible death strength kept penetrating into his body. On top of that, Lin Feng also released millions of death stamps!

And in the cauldron, a whirlwind filled with death energies appeared...

Jian Chen was a Celestial Emperor, a very strong cultivator. He felt pressured, but he didn't flinch. Sword intent started burning around him as he flashed forwards. Many gigantic swords shot towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the sensation his soul was being chopped. Jian Chen wanted to attack his soul!

"We'll see how long you can survive!" Lin Feng said coldly. His soul penetrated into the cauldron, he fused together with it, and then the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron started rotating. A terrifying windstorm filled with death strength appeared, hurtling with the cauldron towards Jian Chen. Jian Chen heard eighteen funeral bells clanging continuously, the soundwaves corroded his life and made his thoughts tremble.

How come Dao power can't attack his soul?, wondered Jian Chen. He had the impression his soul was being drained out of his body. The death stamps were getting more and more dangerous.

He had the feeling he could die anytime.

“Piss off!” shouted Jian Chen furiously, releasing three thousand gigantic swords which pierced through the atmosphere at the same time. Terrifying clanging sounds spread out.

The ancient cauldron turned into a beam of light, redirecting itself towards the great emperors who had come with him.

Dong! Another death peal rang out. A great emperor from the Sword Sect turned grey, then his soul left his body. He lost control, and the ancient cauldron absorbed the soul; his body turned grey, now only a corpse... and then the cauldron also absorbed the corpse! Horrible shrieks started spreading out continuously.

The cauldron was absorbing bodies and souls!

Lin Feng's soul was in the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron, the cauldron had become his body. He attacked another strong cultivator of the Sword Sect. That cultivator's face stiffened as he retreated, but Lin Feng didn't give him any chance to escape. The cauldron continued clanging. Death strength surrounded him. Lin Feng's Death Dao was extremely effective in the cauldron. It was terrifying.

He's reached the top of the last level in terms of Dao. He can kill people instantly with his Dao power, thought the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, watching all this. His heart was pounding. That young man's strength was terrifying. Usually, to understand Dao like Lin Feng did, a cultivator had to have reached the Sheng Di Layer. On top of that, Lin Feng understood Dao power, and so even great emperors couldn't do anything against him. Even if they used Great Imperial Weapons, they couldn't do much against him. Lin Feng could crush their souls instantly.

Jian Chen looked at Lin Feng, his face frozen. It wasn't about feeling humiliated anymore. The problem was that Lin Feng was slaughtering the great emperors of the Sword Sect! Even worse, Lin Feng was just an emperor, and he was a Celestial Emperor, but

Lin Feng's Dao power was better than his. Each time the ancient cauldron clanged, it corroded his life a little bit.

“Ah...!” Horrible screams rose continuously. Souls kept being absorbed by Lin Feng's Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron and turned into the cauldron's strength. When Lin Feng activated the soul deployment marks, the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron's power was multiplied. Jian Chen condensed sword strength, but didn't manage to break the cauldron. It was like a very high-level Great Imperial Weapon!

When the cauldron finished killing all the strong cultivators of Sword Sect, it zoomed towards Jian Chen. He couldn't break the cauldron, he couldn't do anything against it. He condensed more sword strength in the form of a whirlwind. His figure disappeared into all the energies. The death whirlwind also surrounded him.

Dazzling sword lights filled the air; Jian Chen had turned into a sword. He stabbed into the cauldron. Lin Feng promptly started crushing his physical body.

Lin Feng laughed on the inside. Jian Chen was courting death. A mysterious Qi filled the air and surrounded Lin Feng's physical body, which disappeared. The cauldron trembled as a massive amount of explosive energy filled the air again. The strength smashed into the cauldron, which crashed down onto the waters of the lake.

At the same time, the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron shone brightly. Millions of death stamps emerged and attacked the terrifying sword, which turned black.

Many people were looking at the cauldron in the water, trying to see what was going on precisely. Miss Bai's eyes were twinkling, and she jumped into the water.

Beneath the water, the ice palaces were getting crushed. The gigantic cauldron was rotating and crushing everything in its way.

Within the cauldron, the gigantic sword turned into millions of swords, and struck at the deployment marks inside. It wanted to break the cauldron. However, nobody knew who had made the cauldron, not even Lin Feng, but the deployment marks inside were terrifying. It was almost impossible to destroy them. No matter how many sword attacks Jian Chen used, he couldn't break them, and on top of that the death stamps kept attacking him. He started to despair.

Jian Chen in sword form finally realized there was something wrong. He had thought he would be able to destroy Lin Feng's soul inside here, but Lin Feng's soul and the cauldron were one already. He couldn't destroy the cauldron, so he couldn't destroy Lin Feng's soul, either!

Jian Chen couldn't escape anymore. He had the impression he was in a deadly star-studded sky, a world made of death. The sword moved in all directions, but all Jian Chen could see was darkness and deployment marks. In other words, he couldn't see any exit, he couldn't even see Lin Feng's physical body.

"Break!" shouted Jian Chen furiously, but it was useless. Death stamps continued attacking him his body. The soul strength contained in the cauldron was shining darkly and surrounded his soul, corroding it.

Lin Feng was annoyed because even with such attacks, it was extremely difficult to kill a Celestial Emperor. They belonged to different worlds in terms of strength. However, since he had come into the cauldron, Lin Feng couldn't let him out, he had to take this chance to kill him. Lin Feng hoped he'd be able to fuse Jian Chen's soul together with the cauldron, that way, he'd be able to use it as cauldron strength. The cauldron would be much more terrifying with a Celestial Emperor's soul!

Millions of death stamps continued attacking the sword, whose Qi became weaker and weaker. Gradually, Jian Chen's body slowly replaced the sword, but his body was growing transparent and

distorted. Jian Chen, a Celestial Emperor and sword cultivator, was terrified. Was he going to be killed by a trivial and useless emperor?

No matter what, Lin Feng wanted to crush him, kill him, and use his soul to make the cauldron more powerful. He was a Celestial Emperor... so what?

Time passed slowly. Jian Chen was becoming weaker and weaker. When he saw the death stamps kept attacking him over and over again, he suddenly felt desperate, hopeless, and miserable. He sighed and said, "I never thought I'd get killed by a trivial emperor today."

"If your soul stays in the cauldron, if you help me become strong in the future, maybe then, you won't feel sad anymore," said Lin Feng coldly, yet aggressively.

Jian Chen twitched, but actually nodded. He stopped resisting. The cauldron gradually modified his soul and assimilated it.



## Chapter 2242: Bai Yu's Thoughts

---

Many buildings in the water had been wrecked by the cauldron. When the cauldron finished modifying and assimilating Jian Chen's soul, Lin Feng's soul moved back into his own body, and he came out of the cauldron. His soul was shaking, he looked weak but his eyes were twinkling.

He examined at the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron's strength again.

Since Lin Feng had obtained the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron, he hadn't used it a lot. He had experimented now and then. But the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron was a mysterious and priceless treasure. The cauldron's soul was becoming more and more real each time it absorbed a soul, even if it wasn't a very powerful one. Lin Feng hoped someday he'd be able to use the cauldron to fight against terrifying cultivators, so he wouldn't need to bother Qin Shan each time he faced someone dangerous.

The godly medicine had helped Qin Shan a lot. He would be able to reclaim his power someday. Lin Feng also needed to find the Rebirth Scriptures for Qin Shan. That way, he might recover completely.

Lin Feng recalled the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron, his eyes twinkling. He looked at the cauldron and thought, Now, you have a Celestial Emperor's soul. When it's completely refined and modified, you will become extremely strong. If a Celestial Emperor attacks me again, it won't be easy for him to defeat me!

At that moment, some figures in white clothes landed in front of Lin Feng. The leader of the group was an incredibly beautiful woman in a white short dress... Bai Yu.

"Miss Bai, I'm sorry for having destroyed some of your buildings. That wasn't my purpose at all, as you can imagine," Lin Feng apologized to Bai Yu. After all, the lake was her residence. He really

felt sorry.

“Surprisingly, with the strength of the Huang Qi layer, you killed a Celestial Emperor of the Sword Sect from Long Night City. You’re extremely strong!” Bai Yu replied calmly.

“I used a treasure, I’m not that strong. I feel ashamed,” replied Lin Feng briefly.

However, Bai Yu shook her head and said, “A Celestial Emperor could crush an ordinary emperor in the twinkling of an eye. They would just have to think about it. That strong cultivator from the Sword Sect chased you up to here, which means that you fought before, and you didn’t use your cauldron during that previous battle. Even without using your cauldron, you can also kill great emperors from the Sword Sect, and those people are also strong.”

“Well, yes, maybe,” Lin Feng agreed. He didn’t have much to say. “Miss Bai, you said you wanted someone to come with you to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory, may I come with you even though I am a human?” asked Lin Feng. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory seemed to be a legendary and mysterious place. Lin Feng wanted to see what kind of animal world it was.

“I did say I wanted someone to come with me. But I also said that I would let someone come with me if they could defeat me at the same cultivation level. Even though I’m sure you would be able to defeat me if you were a great emperor, now, you’re just an emperor. I won’t fight against you with the strength of the Huang Qi layer.”

“Maybe I can defeat you with the strength of the Huang Qi layer,” Lin Feng smiled.

Bai Yu smiled and said, “You can try.”

“That’s exactly what I want to do,” Lin Feng nodded. He released millions of death stamps, which floated around him. Death Qi

invaded the lake and the air, turning the waters black. Everything rotted away within the death strength.

A pair of dazzling deployment wings appeared on Lin Feng's back, and deployment lights intertwined. Lin Feng turned into a beam of light and shot towards Bai Yu.

Lin Feng landed in front of Bai Yu, raising his fist and punching out. Death stamps moved towards her. However, Bai Yu turned into shadows and evaded lightning-fast. She was quick too!

She reacts so fast!, thought Lin Feng, impressed. He didn't stop moving, releasing overpowering death strength, which formed into a monster. Each time he attacked, it was like a death beast was attacking!

Suddenly, the water began to churn. A loud music spread in the air, soundwaves moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng raised his fist and punched them, crushing everything in his way. His physical strength was incredible, but even so, some soundwaves flowed around and towards him. His soul was trembling. He had the impression it was going to explode.

That kind of attack was extremely dangerous. Soul attacks always were. Against a soul attack, physical strength was useless, and Bai Yu's music attack was aimed at his soul. If Lin Feng had been an ordinary emperor, he wouldn't withstood a single attack, his soul would have been destroyed instantly.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already used lots of soul strength, and it wasn't pleasant.

Lin Feng punched out again, nine words appeared around him and fused together with the water. He roared furiously, his voice carrying cursing strength.

Bai Yu's skull started trembling. She used soundwave attacks, so Lin Feng did the same. The water around them was boiling.

Lin Feng jumped forwards and teleported himself using empty

space strength. Bai Yu continued playing the zither, the soundwaves shooting towards him. Lin Feng opened his mouth and released soundwave strength, too. Their soundwaves collided. The water around them started bursting.

“Lacerate!” Lin Feng released Sword intent, and more death strength through his eyes. It penetrated into Bai Yu’s eyes. Millions of threads of death stamps besieged her. Her life was slowly being corroded away by Lin Feng’s Dao strength.

Bai Yu’s eyes turned black with astonishment. How could a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer resist her? She was a great emperor! In terms of speed, soul strength, physical strength, cosmic energies, and Dao power, Lin Feng was as strong as her, if not stronger. His Dao strength was incredible!

“That’s enough!” shouted Bai Yu, just as Lin Feng was about to carry out another attack.

Lin Feng’s figure stopped. Bai Yu wasn’t far away from him. He said politely, “Miss Bai?”

“That’s enough. I’ll take you to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory,” she told him.

His eyes twinkled, he smiled and said, “Alright, thank you for your kindness!”

“Don’t thank me. I can’t go to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory alone, I’m not strong enough. I just hope I can use you and your strength. Besides, we’re only two people, that’s not enough. We need more people,” Bai Yu told him.

Lin Feng said, “The young men outside don’t seem to be weak.”

Bai Yu shook her head. “Still not enough. Among them, only one is fairly strong. You could easily kill the others. They just have a good reputation because they were born in powerful families. Actually, in the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities, some people can easily kill them.”

Lin Feng was surprised, as those great emperors were not weak.

“I see. So, why don’t you invite those strong people,” suggested Lin Feng. However, Bai Yu looked at him strangely. Lin Feng was surprised, and understood something. He smiled and conjectured, “You’re worried that you wouldn’t be able to control them because they could be stronger than you?”

Lin Feng had just fought against Bai Yu, but he guessed that she hadn’t used her full strength. She wanted to find someone who was strong, but she was also worried that the person would be too strong. She wanted to keep the situation under control. Lin Feng was strong, but Bai Yu thought that she could control him. She didn’t want to fight against people who were truly stronger than her. She wanted to fight people who were slightly weaker than her at most.

“Let’s go,” said Bai Yu, without replying to Lin Feng’s question. Lin Feng nodded.

When they came out of the water, the crowd noticed that the Celestial Emperor had disappeared. They frowned, especially the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights and the others. Where was Jian Chen? Had Lin Feng killed him?

“Miss Bai came out with him, does it mean she’s not mad that he destroyed some of her buildings?”, wondered many people outside. Nobody had dared go into the lake, those who had dared go inside in the past had been killed by Bai Yu!

## Chapter 2243: Devouring the Saint Luck

---

Everybody was convinced that the Saint Luck of those three birds was incredible. With it, the chances of becoming Saints was really high.

“Father, which bird should we chase?” Aomo asked Lin Feng.

“The one with the fissures,” said Lin Feng. Of the two other birds, one had teleportation abilities and the other one controlled void strength, chasing them was too difficult. Even the other strong cultivators knew it’d be difficult to catch them.

All the birds were being chased by strong cultivators all around Lin Feng. Their Qi was fierce, especially those who were from Shrines. They joined hands to chase the birds so they posed a threat to everyone else.

“Stop!” said someone coldly. Lights flickered and encircled that gigantic bird. However, the gigantic bird whistled and continued moving forwards, releasing a terrifying explosive empty space strength. The strong cultivators who were chasing didn’t give up, they even put more pressure on it in a frenzy.

“Its speed is incredible!” said Aomo. He was already using his maximum speed, moving as fast as lightning, but the bird was so fast, they were only drawing closer slowly.

The members of the Fire Shrine want to chase this bird, too, thought Lin Feng, glancing around. Qiong Jiu Tian looked cold and detached. Everybody wanted Saint Luck. They all had to use their full strength to chase the bird.

“He’s not so strong,” said a strong cultivator in the group of people from the Fire Shrine.

“Yes, we didn’t try to get the Saint Luck from the nine dragons. Since we decided to chase this one, we have to do all we can to get it. And the most difficult is yet to come,” said Qiong Jiu Tian. The

Fire Shrine had to get this one.

“The gigantic bird controls atmosphere-destroying strength too. It’s probably related to the Saint Luck he has. If we capture him, we’ll also gain an incredible spell,” said Qiong Hai Ya. The group of people of the Fire were on a gigantic fire sword which streaked across the sky at high speed, trailing fire.

“Daimon!” said the fat guy to Lin Feng at that moment. Lin Feng smiled and said, “Fatty, people from the Soul Shrine want to get that bird, too?”

“I’m not that interested, if you want him, I can help you,” said the fat guy. He felt like he owed Lin Feng, as without Lin Feng, he wouldn’t have left the Supreme Ancient Pit of Hell alive.

“Alright, help me block the others then,” said Lin Feng smiling.

“No problem. I’m quite strong,” laughed the fat guy, his flesh covered his eyes each time he smiled or laughed.

“Mine!” said a strong cultivator, stretching out his hands towards the bird. However, when he grabbed the bird, the latter became illusionary and gained altitude. The strong cultivator’s face stiffened in surprise.

Boom! A strong wind swept away a number of cultivators.

“How is that possible?” the one who had just tried to grab the bird looked at his hands, stunned. Those who were chasing the birds were also shocked. Could that bird really break the atmosphere and disappear inside to teleport himself?

“How to catch him then?” wondered Lin Feng. He was annoyed, had he chosen the wrong bird?

The gigantic bird landed on the peak of a mountain and stopped. It glanced over at the crowd in a sharp way. It looked almost amused and taunting.

The strong cultivators who were chasing it also stopped and

watched it. Their eyes were glittering.

“I’ll try,” said a strong cultivator, moving forwards. Nobody prevented him from trying. His empty space strength was very strong. He stretched out his hands to catch the bird, but just like a moment before, he caught nothing but air.

“That’s...” the strong cultivator was astonished, his face froze.

“Crush him!” said Qiong Hai Ya coldly. Fire appeared all around him and he threw himself at the bird, chains made of fire appeared all around the bird. The bird looked at him disdainfully, as if the fire was too weak for him.

Getting Saint Luck and becoming a Saint is not easy at all,” mused Lin Feng.

Aomo said, “Father, that bird controls atmosphere-breaking strength. To it, everything is emptiness, attacking him is useless, only Saints could attack it. But you have a mysterious strength, so you can try and see if your attacks work on him.”

Indeed, only a terrifying empty space attack could work on the bird, but Lin Feng’s strength was different from other people. He controlled God strength, God Dao. If Aomo hadn’t reminded Lin Feng about it, he wouldn’t have thought about it.

After the first man, other people tried, but it was useless.

Lin Feng released and condensed God strength, and flashed forwards. When Qiong Hai Ya saw that, he grunted coldly... but the bird suddenly couldn’t get free from Lin Feng’s attack, and started struggling.

“Aomo!” shouted Lin Feng.

“Father!” shouted Aomo.

“Open your mouth!” said Lin Feng. Aomo roared, Lin Feng’s God strength pushed the bird into Aomo’s mouth. A terrifying Saint Luck strength started flowing through Aomo’s body. His dark



scales became dazzling.

The others were astonished. Aomo had absorbed the Saint Luck?!

“Go!” whispered Lin Feng. He hadn’t thought it would work. Aomo roared and spiraled up into the air.

A fireball shot at Lin Feng. Aomo rose higher, as some fire chains appeared around him and Lin Feng.

“Become small, I’ll take care of it!” shouted Lin Feng. Aomo became tiny and went into Lin Feng’s arms. He had to protect the Saint Luck.

“Be careful, father!” said Aomo. Lin Feng dodged the attack and released empty space, then moved as fast as lightning.

“Daimon, stop!” shouted Qiong Hai Ya coldly. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine surrounded him.

“Fatty!” shouted Lin Feng.

The fat guy nodded, and shouted furiously. The crowd shook because his voice was too loud. They had the impression their souls were going to explode, and the world collapse around them.

Even though Lin Feng was prepared, his soul shook too. That fat guy’s attacks were powerful and affected him, too!

“Enough!” said Lin Feng. He still wanted to attack Qiong Hai Ya, but the fat guy’s attack had hit everyone, so he had missed the opportunity to attack. But as the crowd was trembling, Lin Feng struggled and started leaving at his top speed.

“Bastard! That black dragon’s cultivation level is not strong enough, you made him absorb Saint Luck, it’s a waste!” shouted some people furiously. But it was useless. Lin Feng had already had Aomo absorb the Saint Luck. Many people stopped and looked at the two other birds. Maybe they would have an opportunity there...

But the members of the Fire Shrine didn’t want to give up and,

continued chasing Lin Feng, infuriating him.

“Daimon!” shouted Chi Lian Shan. He looked at the fat guy and asked, “What’s going on?”

“Help me!” shouted Lin Feng. Chi Lian Shan nodded and flashed forwards, releasing a terrifying strength. The others all had the impression they were stuck in moving sands.

“Good!” said Chi Lian Shan happily. Lin Feng was happy some people were helping him.

“Chi Lian Shan, fatty, don’t cause trouble,” said Qiong Jiu Tian to those two people coldly.

“We definitely will cause trouble,” said Chi Lian Shan.

The fat guy shrugged and said, “I feel like causing trouble, too.”

“Chi Lian Shan, fight against Qiong Jiu Tian; fatty, block the two others, I’ll take care of Qiong Hai Ya,” said Lin Feng. The two people nodded.

Qiong Hai Ya smiled coldly. Daimon was too insolent!

“Father, should I help?” asked Aomo. He wanted to fight too.

“No need. How are you feeling?” asked Lin Feng.

“I want to get the Saint Luck of the two other birds. This Saint Luck contains incredible empty space strength, it looks like Celestial Dao! It’s extremely powerful. You shouldn’t have given it to me,” said Aomo.

“No problem. Even if you can’t become a Saint now, you’ll have the opportunity in the future. I’m not like you, I don’t need Saint Luck!” replied Lin Feng. Aomo hissed and continued assimilating the Saint Luck...

## Chapter 2243: Name List

---

Bai Yu slowly rose up into the air and landed on the top of a mountain. She glanced around and said slowly, “I have made a decision. Apart from me, I will choose six other people to bring to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory.”

When Bai Yu said that, the young people frowned. One of them smiled and said, “So you mean you will let us come with you?”

Bai Yu slowly turned around and looked at Lin Feng, saying, “He is one of them. Regarding the five others, I have already made up my mind. If you think you can defeat them, then you can come with me.”

The crowd all looked at Lin Feng coldly. An emperor had been chosen by Bai Yu? Bai Yu was famous in the Great Imperial City, she couldn’t do things carelessly and surprisingly, she had chosen Lin Feng. It meant that she acknowledged his strength, that she had fought against him.

But those young people were famous in the eight Great Imperial Cities. They couldn’t accept the fact that Lin Feng might be stronger than them, even if he had killed a Celestial Emperor and so many great emperors, especially since he had used a Great Imperial Weapon!

“Who are the five others?” asked someone, without attacking Lin Feng immediately.

“Qing Hai’s Roc,” Bai Yu answered indifferently. The crowd was astonished, their faces stiffened. Qing Hai’s Roc? Bai Yu had chosen him?! They couldn’t compete with him, mainly because of his speed. He just had to flap his wings twice or thrice and he could outdistance them extremely quickly without them having the chance to catch up ever.

“Who else?”

“Heze’s Mahoraga,” continued Bai Yu. The young men’s faces stiffened even more.

One of them said, “Miss Bai, you can’t choose such monstrous people, or it won’t be beneficial for you.”

The others just took a deep breath when they heard Bai Yu. Heze’s Mahoraga was a terrifying cultivator, a monster. His poison could kill Celestial Emperors. And he was at the very top of the Di Qi layer. Heze’s Mahoraga was also very old, according to legends at least. Nobody dared get close to him because of his poison. They hadn’t though Miss Bai would choose such people.

“Three more people!” said another young man to Bai Yu. He was going crazy with thwarted ambition.

“Dark Golden Pupiled King, Zixu’s Flood Dragon, Dinuo’s Sword,” Bai Yu finished calmly.

Everybody around her, humans and beasts alike, was astonished. The people Bai Yu had chosen despised the young people who had come here. Those who had come were already considered geniuses in the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities. However, facing the people Bai Yu had mentioned, they felt tiny and weak.

Qing Hai’s Roc, Heze’s Mahoraga, the Dark Golden Pupiled King, Zixu’s Flood Dragon, Dinuo’s Sword; those five people were very strong, people didn’t even dare mention their names. Qing Hai’s Roc was the descendant of a terrifying blue-green bird and a great emperor. His speed and attacks were terrifying.

Heze’s Mahoraga had killed a terrifying Celestial Emperor in the past with his poison. People were really scared of him.

Few people dared offend either of them. Thankfully, they rarely showed up those days because they were trying to break through.

The Dark Golden Pupiled King was a descendent of a roc and a dark-pupiled king. He was extremely talented, with the qualities of both beasts. He was sly, brutal, and terrifying.

Zixu's Flood Dragon was a terrifying flood dragon. According to legends, when he was young, he had stolen the blood of the Purple-Emptiness Dragon King, which had granted him a terrifying strength. He had real dragon blood. Nobody dared fight against using purely physical attacks. In terms of defense, nobody could compete with him at the same cultivation level.

Dinuo's Sword was the most ordinary of all those people... but he wasn't ordinary. Nobody knew what he was, he was a beast but he studied the sword with humans. He had studied swords for a thousand years. People said that his swordsmanship had reached the peak of perfection. He had killed a flood dragon of the same cultivation level. After that, he had become famous in the animal world.

Miss Bai was Great Emperor Bai's descendant, and even though she was famous, she couldn't compete with those people. She had invited those five people and it was dangerous for her, any one of those five people could crush her if they wanted to.

Because of those five names, the young people who had come, felt powerless.

When Lin Feng saw those people's reactions, he understood how terrifying those named were.

The five people Bai Yu had invited could easily kill these young people. They were all at the top of the Di Qi layer, and could easily kill ordinary great emperors. It was thus obvious that Miss Bai wasn't a simple cultivator, otherwise, she wouldn't have dared invite them.

"Miss Bai, I would feel ashamed of being inferior in front of such people. It's just that this guy is a human and he only has the strength of the Huang Qi layer. Why would he go with you?" asked someone at that moment.

It was a young man in cyan clothes named Qing Yi. As Bai Yu had said, if one of those young people was stronger than the others, it

was him. He had the body of a blue-green bird, and was from the same sect as Qing Hai's Roc. However, he was much weaker, and would never be able to catch up with him. Despite that, he actually was really strong.

"If you don't agree, you can fight against him. If you defeat him, you can replace him," said Bai Yu carelessly.

Qing Yi was surprised. From the tone of her voice, Qing Yi had the impression she didn't believe he could defeat Lin Feng. He was a genius and he was a Great Imperial Beast, while Lin Feng was merely an emperor. Qing Yi couldn't imagine that, with only the strength of the Huang Qi layer, Lin Feng could defeat him!

"Of course, I don't think you need to fight, because apart from me and the six other people, I also need two substitutes because anything could happen in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory. Therefore, I hope we can be nine people. Qing Yi, you're also on my name list," Bai Yu continued calmly. However, Qing Yi didn't feel happy at all, as being a substitute was nothing glorious. Besides, how could he accept having a lower position than a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer?

However, Qing Yi accepted coldly. "I see, then. I feel honored."

Bai Yu knew he wasn't happy, considering his tone of speech. But she didn't care and said, "Since you agree, let's get ready to go."

"Go where?" asked Qing Yi.

"Go and see those five people!" replied Bai Yu.

"Miss Bai, do you know where they are?" asked Qing Yi. He was surprised. Even if Qing Hai's Roc and Qing Yi were from the same sect, he didn't know where Qing Hai's Roc was. The other four were also enigmatic. How could they find those people easily?

"Naturally," replied Bai Yu. She sounded convinced.

"Miss Bai, isn't there one last spot?" asked the other young people. They didn't feel happy. They had come to Bai Yu, and they

wanted to give her some presents. Now they had arrived and she didn't care about them. Those people were all geniuses, but Bai Yu kind of despised them.

“Yes, my maid,” said Bai Yu indifferently.

Those people were dumbfounded. No spot for them!

“We'll see if relying on your sense of judgement was a good idea, Miss Bai,” said one of them, staring at Lin Feng coldly. He was furious. He released explosive bestial Qi, which surrounded Lin Feng. His hands turned pitch-black and shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng ignored the strength which was coming towards him, flashing forward as death stamps attacked the young man.

“Piss off!” shouted the young man angrily. His oppressive strength surrounded Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng resisted using his physical strength, he moved lightning-fast and raised his fist. Death Dao and death stamps pounded at him.

“You really want to die!” shouted that young man furiously. He punched out and his energies turned into a cage. He wanted to prevent Lin Feng from moving away. The atmosphere around them turned into a dark world.

Sword energies appeared, mighty punches collided loudly. The pitch-black hand exploded. Lin Feng shouted, and lightning swords appeared, holes appeared in the sky around them. A terrifying Death Holy Spirit smashed into his opponent and corroded his life, turning his face grey. He shouted furiously as his body turned into a black ox king.

The atmosphere became oppressive around him, but Lin Feng landed in front of him. He raised his fist and punched the ox violently. Blood splashed everywhere, astonishing everyone.

“How brutal and explosive. He's scary!” whispered the crowd. That human's strength was more explosive than a beasts!

## Chapter 2244: Invitation

---

After Lin Feng punched his opponent, the latter fell from the sky, reeling. Everybody was surprised because the ox had a terrifying physical strength; he was an ox after all!

The crowd thought that Miss Bai had a good sense of judgement after all. Lin Feng was really impressive. He didn't need to use his cauldron to be extremely strong physically, and could easily defeat a Great Imperial Beast who was considered as a genius. The crowd was astonished.

"Do you have anything to say?" Bai Yu asked the ox indifferently. She had anticipated the result of the battle earlier.

The gigantic ox frowned and said hoarsely, "Since Miss Bai can go to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory, I can go, too. I don't need to go with you, Miss Bai. I'm sure we'll meet again."

After that, he turned into a human again and left, feeling ashamed and humiliated. The other young people left too. Only Bai Yu and Qing Yi were left behind.

Qing Yi asked Bai Yu, "Miss Bai, are we getting ready to go now?"

"Yes," Bai Yu nodded.

"Who are we going to look for first?"

"Qing Hai's Roc. Even though you don't know where he is, I do. In your nest, with Princess Qing Hai," replied Bai Yu evenly. Qing Yi was surprised, and pulled a long face. Qing Hai's Roc was with Princess Qing Hai? Qing Yi liked Princess Qing Hai, it wasn't a secret. Many people knew that. But Princess Qing Hai wasn't interested in him, and now Qing Hai's Roc was with her. How could he be happy about that?

"You others, stay here and protect the lake," said Bai Yu to the other people left behind. Her figure flickered as she left. Only one girl whom Bai Yu had invited came with them, the maid she had



talked about. She was a substitute like Qing Yi. Of course, in case Bai Yu needed her, she would also be able to help.

Lin Feng and Qing Yi followed along. However, Qing Yi unconsciously glanced at Lin Feng. He was a substitute, and if he had the chance, he would be able to replace the human. He had seen how strong Lin Feng was a moment before... He wouldn't be able to compete with the five others, but if he seized an opportunity, he might be able to replace Lin Feng.

---

Qinghai was a vast sea, and there were many palaces under the water. In one of the palaces, two people were snuggling. The young man was seated on a throne, he looked sharp and was wearing a cyan robe. Each time he moved, a mysterious Qi appeared around him. He looked like a great scholar respected for learning and integrity, he resembled nature itself.

On his laps was a woman. Even though she looked extremely strong, she also looked like a docile and gentle little girl.

“When will you propose a marriage alliance to my father?” asked the beautiful woman at that moment.

The young man gazed into the distance. He looked extraordinary. He said, “Wait until I break through to the Tian Di layer. Then, I'll propose a marriage alliance immediately. That way, nobody will be able to refuse.”

“Alright,” agreed the woman. “It's just that Qing Yi is pestering me. He keeps courting me. I'm not interested in him at all.”

“Ignore him,” said the young man indifferently. At that moment, he suddenly raised his head and noticed something in the sea. “Who's there?!”

The water opened itself, he turned into a beam of light, and rose up into the water at speed, carrying the woman with him. He crossed a distance of several thousands of meters in the blink of an

eye and saw some people.

“Bai Yu, Qing Yi,” the young man frowned, and asked coldly, “What do you want?”

“As expected.” When Qing Yi saw the woman with the young man, his face turned deathly pale. He clenched his fists. He wanted to be with that woman. Many people in Qing Hai agreed with him. But now it was impossible. He would never have a chance again because she was with that guy now.

When the woman saw Qing Yi, she pressed pressed her body against her boyfriend and smiled widely.

“Qing Hai’s Roc, I want to invite some people to come to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory. Do you want to come with me?” asked Bai Yu. She wasn’t the kind of person who spoke around a point.

“King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory.” Qing Hai’s Roc’s eyes twinkled and he asked, “Who else is going?”

“A few people: Heze’s Mahoraga, Dark Golden Pupiled King, Zixu’s Flood Dragon, Dinuo’s Sword,” answered Bai Yu.

Qing Hai’s Roc remained silent for a few seconds and said, “When?”

“We’re gathering now and then we’re leaving,” said Bai Yu.

Qing Hai’s Roc took out a jade talisman. Bai Yu understood. She took out a jade talisman as well. They exchanged a thread of godly awareness.

“When you’re ready, call me and I’ll come,” said Qing Hai’s Roc calmly. Neither of them talked for nothing.

“Alright, good bye,” replied Bai Yu. They left as quickly as they had arrived.

Qing Yi’s muscles were still twitching, he clenched his fists powerlessly.

---

In Heze, Bai Yu and the others arrived above a black hut. Lin Feng looked at that black hut and sensed a strong wind. It was sharp and stinky. His blood started boiling, and his hair bristled at the stench.

That's... a powerful poison, thought Lin Feng. Some people came outside, and energies emerged from the black hut.

Lin Feng released sharp sword lights. At the same time, Bai Yu took out her zither and started playing, her melodies transcendental. The energies continued emerging from the black hut, still smelling badly.

“Buddy, are you coming to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory or not?” asked Bai Yu. The black fog stopped and dispersed at that moment, and a mahoraga slowly appeared in the doorway. He slithered over to them. His eyes were filled with poisonous energies, and he kept hissing.

“Explain,” said Heze’s Mahoraga indifferently.

“I’ve invited Qing Hai’s Roc. I’m about to invite the Dark Golden Pupiled King, Zixu’s Flood Dragon, and Dinuo’s Sword. Are you coming?” asked Bai Yu straightforwardly.

Heze’s Mahoraga hissed, his eyes twinkled and he said, “When you’re sure, send someone to inform me.”

Then, he disappeared in black fog, like he had never appeared.

“He’s so rude, arrogant, and overbearing,” swore Qing Yi... then he realized he better shut up.

“Next one,” said Bai Yu indifferently. She already had two people, three more to go.

---

They went into another sea. Bai Yu quickly found Zixu’s Flood Dragon; he was a flood dragon with purple antennae, looking sly

and dangerous. He immediately accepted.

The Dark Golden Pupiled King was practicing cultivation in a volcano. Bai Yu found him anyway. She had prepared everything, and could easily find everyone. The Dark Golden Pupiled King accepted too.

The last one was Dinuo's Sword. Lin Feng gazed into the distance and saw a mountain. At first glance, he saw nobody. After a few hours, still nothing or nobody.

Finally, Bai Yu lost patience. Why was he wasting time?

"Are you coming to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory or not?" asked Bai Yu straightforwardly. However, this time, nobody paid attention to her. Dinuo's Sword was there, gazing into the distance.

Is he practicing cultivation?, wondered Lin Feng. Dinuo's Sword looked ordinary, but he was bathing in a special Qi. At first glance, he looked ordinary, but each time Lin Feng blinked and looked at him again, he had the impression he was looking at someone, or something, different. How extraordinary!

Bai Yu didn't say anything else useless. Dinuo's Sword was gazing into the distance. However, at that moment, Dinuo's Sword turned to Bai Yu and said, "I'm coming. When?"

"We're all ready," said Bai Yu. The five people had agreed. Nobody had refused. Nobody had talked nonsense.

# Chapter 2245: King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory

---

Since everybody was ready, Bai Yu informed everyone else and on the day after, they gathered together outside of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory.

“Old poisonous monster,” said Qing Hai's Roc to Heze's Mahoraga coldly.

“Little birdie, you're here too,” said Heze's Mahoraga smiled. They knew each other. Heze's Mahoraga had been famous for a while and when Qing Hai's Roc was young, people were already terror-stricken when they saw the former. Back then, he had almost killed Qing Hai's Roc. Then the latter had grown up, and they had stopped fighting. They were both dangerous, one was dangerous, one was fast.

“Dark Golden Pupiled King,” said Qing Hai's Roc, glancing at the Dark Golden Pupiled King. His eyes were dark and golden. He looked sly and strange. They had a similar bloodline, they both had roc blood and thus both were fast. However, apart from roc blood, the Dark Golden Pupiled King also had blue-green bird's blood, so he was even faster.

“How exciting. You're all here,” said Zixu's Flood Dragon. All those beasts were terrifying people. If people from the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities saw this, they would be amazed.

Dinuo's Sword looked calm and serene, completely ordinary. However, the others kept some distance. Those five people were all terrifyingly strong, and they were all vigilant. Even though they were self-confident, they didn't dare underestimate people who were as famous as themselves, including Bai Yu.

However, they ignored Lin Feng, Qing Yi, and Bai Yu's maid. They didn't even look at them. They only paid attention to the few

great emperors who were already there and people who were stronger.

“Alright, get ready. We’re going to enter King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory. The people there are crazy,” said Bai Yu calmly at that moment.

“Hehe, let’s go and have some fun. I’ve heard that the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory is divided into several small powerful groups. Weak beasts keep fighting chaotically. Bai Yu, your father came here a short time, how was it?” asked Qing Hai’s Roc. Not just anyone dared go to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory. Inside, there were many terrifying, cunning, and cruel beasts.

Bai Yu had decided to ignore all those young people who had potential to go to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory, opting for Qing Hai’s Roc and the others instead.

“We’ll know how it is once we’re inside. You won’t be disappointed,” said Bai Yu calmly.

Heze’s Mahoraga hissed and said, “Since it’s that way, let’s go. I can’t wait to see what it’s like inside and finally, I found some people to go there with me. Perfect. It won’t be easy inside.”

“Let’s go and we’ll see,” said Dinuo indifferently. He slowly walked towards the door. They crossed the door and disappeared.

---

They reappeared in a place where bestial Qi hummed and filled the air. The atmosphere was thick and oppressive. Many people stared at them as soon as they entered.

So many beasts, thought Lin Feng. He was surprised. The atmosphere was taut and ready to explode with violence. Suddenly, beasts roared, and his hairs bristled. He felt unsafe.

“Since we’re here, be careful. Otherwise, we’ll be like them, and we’ll never come out,” Bai Yu advised plainly.

Lin Feng's face stiffened, now realizing how dangerous this place was. They could get stuck inside!

However, they had accepted Bai Yu's invitation without hesitation, and the five strong cultivators had wanted to go there for some time already. They had just never found anyone to come with them. It was why they had accepted immediately.

For them, cultivators at the top of the Di Qi layer, it was difficult to find enemies who were as strong as them, this place was an opportunity.

Everybody nodded agreement and continued walking. This was the legendary King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory. According to legends, battles were bloody and difficult on the periphery, but cultivators had to go through those fierce battles to get to the central part of the territory.

Bestial Qi became more and more intense. They heard some birds flapping their wings. They were all emperors, powerful, with gigantic wings, frozen in some half-human, half-beast forms.

"I've heard that there were many terrifying beasts in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory. It wasn't a lie. The Great Imperial Beasts behind them must be their leaders," said the Dark Golden Pupiled King, looking far into the distance.

"Let's go and kill the Great Imperial Beasts," said Qing Hai's Roc calmly. He opened his cyan wings and slowly rose up into the air before shooting ahead.

"How fast!" murmured Lin Feng when he saw Qing Hai's Roc leave. There were tens of thousands of beasts there. Lin Feng hadn't imagined there were such places. It was an ocean of beasts!

Pitch-black claws moved towards Qing Hai's Roc. However, he was too fast. He opened his beak, sharp cyan lights emerged, and in the blink of an eye, he destroyed an ocean of beasts.

"Interesting!" Heze's Mahoraga laughed. He also moved

forwards. He spat poison far into the distance. His poison invaded all the imperial beasts who got too close and destroyed them. They fell from the sky one after another.

The Dark Golden Pupiled King also rose up into the air, his eyes shining. A strong wind swept across the area, the atmosphere became distorted, and it started raining blood. Beasts' corpses fell from the sky, one after another.

Dinuo also rose up into the air, and a sword streaked across the sky. It killed all the beasts in his way.

Lin Feng watched calmly. There was an ocean of beasts, but these posed no threat to them. Those five people were too strong. For those five beasts, this place was like the Celestial Country for Lin Feng. When he was there, mountains of corpses quickly appeared around him wherever he went.

Bai Yu was also extremely strong. Soundwaves kept spreading out all around her. Imperial beasts couldn't stand a single attack against her. Thousands of beasts fell from the sky one after another.

Lin Feng also flashed forwards. He released death lights around himself, and death stamps, which turned into a river and slew an incredible amount of beasts rapidly. He controlled Death Dao, he didn't fear those imperial beasts. Why would he?



## Chapter 2246: Avenging Spirit

---

Lin Feng and the others wouldn't have been able to resist against thousands of beasts attacking them at the same time, but they were extremely fast, especially Qing Hai's Roc. He was a Great Emperor and his speed was unparalleled. In the crowd, no attack reached him. Each time he flapped his wings, many birds fell from the sky.

Heze's Mahoraga kept spitting out poison clouds around many imperial beasts, and each time his poison exploded, they rotted to death and fell from the sky.

The beasts roared furiously. Lin Feng's death strength surged. Millions of threads of death stamps and deployment lights swept everything away. Beasts kept falling from the sky.

"Die!" Lin Feng's eyes were filled with death strength; he looked at a beast, and that beast died instantly. One glance and he could kill imperial beasts. At the same time, he continued releasing death lights, no beast could stop him. The nine cultivators were a terrifying force. Very quickly, there were tens of thousands of corpses on the ground, forming small hills. Blood rivers quickly appeared around those mountains of corpses.

"We just entered and the first wave of beasts was so impressive, I wonder what awaits us," mused Lin Feng and the others even though they had done pretty well already. They didn't relax. On the contrary, they were even more vigilant. This was just the beginning. If the simple soldiers in these armies of beasts were already this terrifying, how strong would the leaders be?

"Bai Yu, before Great Emperor Bai died, he came here. However, do you think we can really succeed and get to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory?" the Dark Golden Pupiled King asked Bai Yu at that moment.

"Since we're here, we'll see," replied Bai Yu indifferently. They continued moving forwards, following Bai Yu.

---

After a short time, they arrived in a foreboding place. There was nothing on the land at all. There were millions of dead strong cultivators on the ground, but there was no beast in sight. Sometimes, the group noticed fires, but otherwise, nothing. They could sense resentment and hatred.

“What the hell is this place? A ghost place?” asked Qing Yi, feeling cold and scared. He had the impression he was facing an army of ghosts. “Shouldn’t we make a detour?”

“You can take a detour by yourself,” replied Bai Yu, without even glancing at him. Qing Yi’s grimaced He had to control his fear and follow along. This place just seemed extremely dangerous...

They continued moving forwards. The resentment and hatred seemed to be intensifying as they moved forwards. They even saw some lights moving under their feet.

“What the Hells is going on!” said Heze’s Mahoraga, spitting out poison Qi. The white lights instantly disappeared.

“Maybe there are avenging spirits here. There could be a monumental number of them,” mused Dinuo carelessly. The others shivered. Avenging spirits...

“Ah...” Qing Yi shouted. White lights crawled up on his body, and he was covered by them.

“Piss off!” he shouted, releasing bestial Qi. An invisible and intangible light crawled up his body, a blade appeared, and strong wind started blowing. The white lights slowly disappeared. However, strange white lights appeared in Qing Yi’s eyes.

“Die!” shouted Qing Yi, closing his eyes. He seemed to be fighting inside of his head. After a short time, he reopened his eyes. He looked normal, save that his eyes still looked strange.

“Evil avenging spirits. They’re terrifying. They want to devour our minds. Be careful,” whispered Qing Yi. Everybody knew they

had to be careful. They continued walking forwards. Each time they took a step, lights twinkled. As they moved forwards, the white lights grew faster and more intense. Lin Feng sensed that many invisible and intangible avenging spirits wanted to penetrate into his body and occupy his brain.

Lin Feng's heart was suddenly filled with resentment and hatred, he wanted to kill. He was depressed, furious, and unhappy. The invisible and intangible strength was influencing him.

"Piss off!" shouted Lin Feng. His body turned grey. He released death stamps inside his own body. His Dao power destroyed the avenging spirits instantly. They could not resist his Dao power.

Lin Feng and the others gradually sped up. However, that place was vast and boundless.

Even if we kill all the avenging spirits, the resentment and hatred will still influence us, thought Lin Feng. At that moment, a terrifying white avenging spirit penetrated into his brain, and he immediately released his soul.

"Piss off!" Using his soul, Lin Feng bombarded the avenging spirit with death stamps. However, the avenging spirit just howled furiously. Surprisingly, it spat out an incredible amount of of resentment and hatred strength, which collided against his death strength. At the same time, the ghost released more resentment and hatred strength which drove into Lin Feng's brain.

Lin Feng shivered. Death stamps surrounded the resentment and hatred strength and pierced through the avenging spirit's invisible body. It wanted to destroy his soul. That ghost looked like a ghost king!

"Die!" Lin Feng released death Kalpa swords. Lin Feng's soul had gone through a lot, and he had been cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. His jet-black death Kalpa swords were deadly. He slowly destroyed all the threads of resentment and hatred strength, and then they drove towards the avenging spirit.

The avenging spirit howled furiously. It wanted to escape, but Lin Feng didn't let it flee. He released his godly awareness, and his sky palace, as well as terrifying demon Kalpa strength. They surrounded the ghost and instantly crushed it. The ghost exploded and turned into millions of lights. The threads of the ghost moved towards Lin Feng's brain again, including the threads of resentment and hatred strength!

Lin Feng destroyed them again and took a deep breath. That avenging spirit was extremely strong...

Apart from Lin Feng, Bai Yu also got attacked by all sorts of avenging spirits. Even though they were now expecting it, it was getting more and more dangerous.

At that moment, Lin Feng and the others suddenly gazed into the distance and saw gigantic white avenging spirits. Their resentment and hatred energies condensed, their eyes were empty and emotionless, and they were staring at Lin Feng and the others.

The gigantic avenging spirits didn't only have human shapes, some of them also had animal shapes. White lights twinkled in their eyes. They looked extremely dangerous.

"So many avenging spirits. Hundreds of them," said Lin Feng, releasing Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. He had noticed that the avenging spirits didn't like that kind of strength.

"They were like us at the beginning, I suppose. And then avenging spirits occupied their brains and they turned into ghosts. If they manage to occupy our brains, we'd also turn into ghosts," said Bai Yu. Everyone's faces stiffened, and they all released impressive energies solemnly.

"How exciting," said the Dark Golden Pupiled King coolly. He turned into a vortex, a strong wind condensed and turned into a hurricane. He moved towards a gigantic avenging spirit in front of him and the avenging spirit instantly disappeared.

How strong, the Dark Golden Pupiled King is really gifted, that must be one of his innate powers!, thought Lin Feng. Talent was carved into Lin Feng's genetic code, it was probably the same for the Dark Golden Pupiled King.

Dinuo also attacked, he waved his hands and swords filled the air. They turned into beam of lights, and he destroyed avenging spirits one after another. He looked extremely calm and serene throughout the process. However, his strength was explosive.

Qing Yi was looking at the five cultivators in front of him: Qing Hai's Roc, Heze's Mahoraga, the Dark Golden Pupiled King, Zixu's Flood Dragon, Dinuo's Sword, they were all terrifying. The difference between them and him was huge. An avenging spirit charged Qing Yi; even though he was also a great emperor, the five others could easily kill the avenging spirits, but he couldn't!

But since they were nine people, they still managed to destroy all of the spirits and continue on. They killed hundreds and hundreds of avenging spirits, nothing could stop them. They drew closer and closer to the central area of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory.

# Chapter 2247: Disappearance of Strong Cultivators

---

Finally, the nine people saw an ancient door. However, between them and the door, everything was colored red. Out of that redness, a terrifying Qi emerged that set their hairs on end.

“If we cross that area, we’ll reach the real part of King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory,” said Bai Yu.

Lin Feng and the others frowned. Finally, the legendary land, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory. What was there? They had heard that many terrifying ancient beasts gathered there. Apparently, it was a heaven for beasts. There were many legends about the area.

At that moment, Lin Feng and the others looked enthusiastic. They had killed so many beasts to get this far.

“What is this place?” whispered Qing Yi, gazing into the distance. Nothing had surprised them so far, but they remained vigilant.

“Let’s try and we’ll see,” said Qing Hai’s Roc, moving forwards. He flapped his wings and turned into a beam of light. When he entered the redness, it felt like he had flown into moving sands, he was flying much slower. He could barely flap his wings.

He frowned. Lin Feng and the others looked worried.

“What is this place?” repeated Heze’s Mahoraga. The redness in the air turned into an invisible and intangible strength which kept attacking Qing Hai’s Roc. But that kind of strength didn’t seem to be caused by someone, it was inherent to this place.

“Condensation of ancient dead animals’ intent. Their Dao and intent is here,” said Qing Hai’s Roc. Suddenly, the air began to hum. He was suddenly surrounded by cyan lights, and moved to destroy them instantly.

“Qing Hai’s Roc is extremely fast. That kind of strength can’t really stop him.” Zixu’s Flood Dragon also started flying ahead. The air began to rumble and shake. When he penetrated into that strength, he suddenly started moving slower as well. He shouted loudly and struck out as hard as he could. He even managed to move faster than Qing Hai’s Roc.

“Oh, he’s relying on strength. A kind of strength is slowing Qing Hai’s Roc and Zixu’s Flood Dragon down. Because Zixu’s Flood Dragon is really strong, he has an advantage here.”

Bai Yu and the others also entered the red area, including Lin Feng. After entering the area, Lin Feng sensed a terrifying strength surround him. It was extremely heavy, and made his soul tremble. Great Imperial Beasts’ thoughts penetrated into his body, and his body suddenly felt numb. He had the impression he had the whole world on his shoulders. No wonder, it was composed of Dao strength and intent.

Lin Feng jumped ahead, surrounded by demon lights, his eyes pitch-black. Nothing could corrode his body.

A red beam of light shot towards him, attacking his soul.

“Piss off!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He released death Kalpa swords, which attacked the ray and destroyed it. However, he didn’t relax. These red energies were dangerous...

The nine cultivators pressed forward with an indomitable will. It was difficult, but nobody flinched.

What is this place? How come there are such terrifying energies here? Do they really come from dead animals?, wondered Lin Feng, but it was just for a second before he re-focused on the path.

Dinuo’s Sword was the first one to get close to the door. When he arrived in front of it, he immediately crossed it and disappeared.

Zixu’s Flood Dragon roared furiously, the earth and sky shaking around him. He destroyed all the energies in his way and reached

the ancient door.

After that, the Dark Golden Pupiled King, Qing Hai's Roc, Heze's Mahoraga, Bai Yu, Lin Feng and the others also arrived, nothing stopped them.

---

When Lin Feng crossed the door, he appeared on a platform. He wasn't alone, Bai Yu and the others were there, too. Lin Feng was speechless, because there were people everywhere. They looked at Lin Feng and the others, and seemed amused.

Lin Feng sensed something. He followed the crowd's gazes and saw a curtain of light. On it, Qing Yi, Bai Yu and her maid appeared. Their journey through the red area flashed up on the light screen, and everybody could see how much they had struggled.

Lin Feng's face stiffened. Had the crowd been watching their journey from the beginning to the end?

Lin Feng glanced around. It was a beast city, an animal world. There were animal buildings everywhere. The buildings had all sorts of shapes. Some of them had the shape of an ox, thousands of meters high. Some had the shapes of apes, some of dragons...

There were gigantic beasts in the air: bats, eagles, great rocs, dragons with long black wings, all of them looking in their direction.

This is the real King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory. It's an animal heaven, thought Lin Feng. His heart was pounding. Qing Hai's Roc and the others were also stupefied at this reception.

"Little boy, you're here too!" exclaimed a voice at that moment. Qing Hai's Roc was surprised and turned around. There was a middle-aged man there, wearing a cape.

When Qing Hai's Roc saw him, he was astonished and blurted out, "You're... Uncle Ox!?"



“Indeed. You’re a grown up now. You’ve become extremely strong. Your parents must be proud of you!” said the middle-aged man. He had two horns on his head, and was smiling gently. Qing Hai’s Roc had known him since he was a child. Qing Hai’s Roc’s father had good relations with the ox. Now, Qing Hai’s Roc had met him in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory.

“Uncle Ox, what are you doing here?” said Qing Hai’s Roc, looking confused.

“Not only me. Your father is here too!” said the middle-aged man patiently.

Qing Hai’s Roc’s expression changed. He trembled and asked, “My father is alive?!”

“Of course, did you think he was dead? He’s here, and on top of that, he’s an officer here!” said the middle-aged man calmly.

Qing Hai’s Roc trembled, “Since it’s that way, why didn’t he come to see me?”

Qing Hai’s Roc didn’t understand, he was perplexed. The middle-aged man smiled and shook his head, “It’s the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory here.”

“You poisonous vermin, here we meet again!” said someone else. This time, Heze’s Mahoraga was astonished, staring at a figure. That person looked horrible. He had pustules all over and he looked terrifying.

“It’s you! You disappeared two hundred years ago, and now you’re here!” exclaimed Heze’s Mahoraga staring at that person. His heart was pounding. The person was extremely strong. Even though he wasn’t very talented, he was an extremely strong warrior.

“Indeed. I came here two hundred years before you. You old poisonous vermin, you’re so slow!” said the one who looked horrible with a smile.

“You old monster, you’re a Celestial Emperor! When did you break through to the Tian Di layer?” asked Heze’s Mahoraga.

“Haha, over a hundred and fifty years ago. Surprisingly, you haven’t broken through!” replied that person, laughing loudly. He looked amused. Heze’s Mahoraga pulled a long face. Over a hundred and fifty years... how strong!

“What is this place, exactly?” asked Heze’s Mahoraga. He was annoyed. That beast used to be as strong as him in the past, and now he had broken through a hundred and fifty years ago...

“King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory. You will love it here,” that person smiled. Heze’s Mahoraga’s heart was pounding. Bai Yu and the others glanced around.

“Back then, many beasts disappeared from the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities, did they come here?” the Dark Golden Pupiled King to the crowd.

In the outside world, many people had heard of cultivators who had died, but actually, they had come to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory. But those were only legends. Now, however, the newcomers understood that many of those beasts hadn’t actually died.

# Chapter 2248: King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' World

---

Qing Yi, Bai Yu and Bai Yu's maid were astonished. It was indeed an animal world, it was an independent animal world.

“Since we're in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory, his world, what about the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city? Is it a legend? Does it exist?” asked the Dark Golden Pupiled King, glancing at the crowd.

“It's the world created by King of the Ten Thousand Beasts,” replied someone, “You came to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory because you want to go the King of Ten Thousand Beasts' city, right? But you'll just be like most beasts who come here.”

“How can we know if we don't try?” said Bai Yu calmly. She had come for the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city.

“You're Great Emperor Bai's descendant, right? A short time ago, he left the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city,” someone said to Bai Yu. “Great Emperor Bai was a real genius, but he was too curious. He acted dangerously. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts is a dangerous creature. Great Emperor Bai was doomed.”

Bai Yu's face stiffened. She stared at that strong cultivator and asked, “You knew that my father was going to die?”

That person was surrounded by bestial Qi. It was impossible to see his face. However, from the outside, he looked terrifying.

“Of course! Great Emperor Bai wanted to break through, it was impossible. You can't escape from the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. Actually, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts attached importance to Great Emperor Bai, but Great Emperor Bai decided to act on his own. He was doomed,” said that person indifferently.

Bai Yu's face was rigid. She was even more determined to go to

King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city.

“From what I know, anyone who comes to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory can go to King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city, right?” Bai Yu pressed.

“Indeed, but only one opportunity,” said that person indifferently.

“We want to go to the King of Ten Thousand Beasts' city,” said Bai Yu, staring at the man.

“Each time someone comes here, it's to go to King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city, you're no exception,” smiled that person. “When you go to King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city, you will discover how powerful he is.”

“Uncle Ox, I want to see my father!” said Qing Hai's Roc at that moment.

The ox nodded and said, “Naturally. Are they your friends? You can go together.”

Qing Hai's Roc looked at the others. Heze's Mahoraga's eyes twinkled and he nodded. “You can meet in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory first.”

“Come with me.” The ox's figure flickered. He rose up into the air, Lin Feng and the others followed, and they flew together between the many immense and spectacular castles.

“How old is the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts?” asked Lin Feng, curious now. Did the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts really exist? Was it only a legend?

“According to legends, he's extremely old. But not many beasts have seen him for real. I've heard that this world is tens of thousands of years old already. Therefore, if the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts really exists, he must be extremely old, maybe hundreds of thousands of years old,” replied Bai Yu. Lin Feng took a deep breath. Hundreds of thousands of years... how impressive...

“Of course the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts exists! Besides, you will also understand that he’s not only the king here, he’s the king of all animals in the world,” said the ox with awe and veneration. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was a sort of supreme god in his heart!

They flew above many castles before arriving in front of a gigantic castle which had the form of a great roc. The great roc was bigger than many other buildings. Its sculpted wings were gigantic. It looked like a great roc which had been petrified and turned a real castle.

The ox landed with the small group and entered the castle. There were many beasts inside, and many battle stages. There was an army of beasts wearing armor, too, all of them great rocs. Their eyes looked as sharp as eagle’s eyes. Even in their human shapes, they had gigantic wings in their backs. They also had beaks which contained a sharp Qi. Their beaks and wings were similar to those of Qing Hai’s Roc and Qing Yi.

What a powerful army, thought Lin Feng quietly. The army of great rocs was formidable. The ordinary great rocs were all emperors at the top of the Huang Qi layer. The officers were all great emperors. Lin Feng sensed a Qi similar to Qing Hai’s Roc’s Qi emerging from them.

“The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts gathered many heroes. They’re all incredible, obstinate, and unruly. Therefore, they have to have a powerful army to keep strong beasts under control. They’re in charge of making sure that the rules are applied, no matter how strong you are. Even though many beasts come here, they all have to respect the rules. With your fighting abilities, you could all become small leaders,” explained the ox. He walked over to a small group. “Your father has the highest military rank in here. He has many divisions under his control. When a hundred divisions are together, they form an army. A commander-in-chief leads them.”

Lin Feng and the others were impressed. Lin Feng asked, “How big is the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory?”

Bai Yu and the others looked excited, they also wanted to know how big it was.

“It has existed for a very long time. At the beginning, they were bored, but then more and more beasts came and they started expanding. Now, it’s not a territory anymore, it’s a world. A military faction consists of millions of beasts. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ personal army is composed of over ten thousand beasts, they are all the strongest heroes.”

Lin Feng shivered. This world had existed for hundreds of thousands of years and already had billions of beasts. Beasts lived for an extremely long time, especially the strongest ones.

“Are there other worlds?” asked Bai Yu.

“Of course. We’re not in the outside world, everything is perfectly organized here. Because mortality rates are low, the armies become stronger and stronger, and the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts has created rules. When people have children, they must go to other worlds, they can’t keep in touch with their parents. Even officers can’t break the rules. Only when they are strong enough can they return and meet again with their parents. Of course, they must want to come back. Sometimes, they enjoy the worlds in which they live.”

“What does the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts want to do?” asked Lin Feng. A perfect organization, a world composed of heroes, many strong cultivators, many worlds, very old place... did the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts want to create a world as big as the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

That kind of organization reminded Lin Feng of Hell, rules, officers... had the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ world become as wide as Hell, though?

“How many worlds are there?” asked Qing Hai’s Roc.

“You’ll see. You’ll also become a member of this world. We’re here!” said the ox at that moment. They arrived in front of a golden great roc building. It was spectacular... did the king of great rocs live in there?

“Officer Roc!” said the ox at that moment, the army of great rocs recognizing him and letting him pass.

“Brother Ox!” replied a voice. A strong wind started blowing. A dignified and majestic middle-aged man appeared in front of them. He looked very similar to Qing Hai’s Roc. However, his Qi was sharper. When he saw Qing Hai’s Roc, his eyes looked even sharper.

“Father...” said Qing Hai’s Roc when he saw that person.

“Good little boy. No wonder you’re my son. You’re here too!” said the middle-aged man, laughing loudly. All the great rocs in the area trembled, his voice was so loud. And his son was here? Incredible!

“Father, I thought you were dead, but actually you were here. You never told me, why?” asked Qing Hai’s Roc.

“I didn’t need to tell you. You were strong enough. I didn’t need to protect you!” said the Officer loudly and firmly.

# Chapter 2249: Dreamlike Life

---

Qing Hai's Roc was stupefied and could only nod. "What about mother? Where is she?"

"She's dead. She died in war," said the officer calmly, like he was talking about something ordinary. Qing Hai's Roc's heart started pounding. Dead?

"Don't think about it. She's dead. No need to miss her. Work hard and become stronger. That way, you'll become an officer like me. You'll avenge your mother," said the officer to Qing Hai's Roc coldly.

"Who killed her?" asked Qing Hai's Roc.

"I'll tell you when the right time comes," said officer firmly.

Qing Hai's Roc asked, "I'm going to King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city, how is it there?"

"Since you came here, you'll go to King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city, obviously. I'll take you there," said the officer. He snapped open his gigantic wings. The crowd sensed a terrifying wind carrying them along.

After a short time, they arrived in front of a door.

"That's a teleportation portal. It can take you to the gates of King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city. There will be a few gates," said the officer.

Lin Feng and the others nodded, and entered the door.

---

They appeared in another world, with seven doors before them.

"Seven doors. Bai Yu, was that why you wanted seven people to come?" asked Qing Yi to Bai Yu.

"I just knew that my father faced seven doors. I will investigate



his death. Therefore, when we come out, we'll share what we discover, alright?" Bai Yu asked Lin Feng and the others.

"We'll talk about that when we come out," said Heze's Mahoraga. His eyes twinkled. His old friend had surpassed him a hundred and fifty years ago. He wanted to see what there was in King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city. His figure flickered, and he entered a door.

"Let's go in first," said Qing Hai's Roc. His figure flickered as well, choosing another door. The Dark Golden Pupiled King also chose another door.

There were seven doors, Bai Yu's plan was one person one door. If an incident occurred, she would have gone in with her maid, but the nine of them were safe and sound, so they needed a solution.

Lin Feng walked over to one of the doors.

To his surprise, a vortex appeared and surrounded him.

"No..." Lin Feng stopped, his soul was being absorbed. His soul seemed to travel across space and time.

Lin Feng's soul was outside his body. However, he realized that struggling was useless. He felt tiny and powerless.

"A celestial path... Continent of the Nine Clouds, you created a world, a king's path..." said a voice in Lin Feng's mind. He trembled as an old man appeared in front of him. He was wearing a king's robe, and had the demeanor of a transcendent being. He looked extraordinary, like a peerless cultivator.

"Who are you?" shouted Lin Feng. However, his voice was barely audible.

Lin Feng continued trembling. He suddenly realized he was in a child's body, and talking like a child. However, his soul was independent. He wasn't one with the child's body, he was just stuck in it. And just before, the child had spoken.

"Who are they? What's wrong with King of the Ten Thousand

Beasts' city?" Lin Feng didn't understand what was going on.

The man in front of him nodded and petted his head. He smiled and said, "Little Tian, you will go to the Continent of the Nine Clouds and become a king."

"Those are your teacher's teachings. Bear them in mind," said a voice. The child smiled innocently. Then, he hugged the middle-aged man and taught the child about cultivation. Lin Feng had the impression he was personally on the scene.

—

Lin Feng had the impression time passed quickly. He was growing up. He traveled in the continent. He had furious battles. Little Tian killed millions of strong cultivators, and suddenly, he didn't look like a child anymore, he looked like someone who had gone through lots of hardships in life.

"Pfew..." Little Tian walked into the distance. He practiced cultivation. He saw his teacher. He looked mature and cold. When he saw his teacher, he suddenly looked like a child again. His teacher loved him, and taught him all he could.

Time passed, Little Tian was growing older and older. Lin Feng didn't know how many years had passed. He lost the notion of time. It looked fake and real at the same time. Was he Little Tian? He shared everything with him.

Today, Little Tian became a great emperor. However, he was crying in the middle of a crowd, holding a beautiful woman in his arms. He loved her, but he hadn't managed to save her. He was crying blood. Finally, he put the woman at the top of a mountain and looked at the crowd savagely. He started killing them. A river of blood started flowing down the mountain.

From that moment, he started acting coldly, even in front of the most beautiful women in the world from the pain in his heart. However, no matter what, when he went back home, he was

always happy, and warmth always filled his heart, like Lin Feng when he went back to Yangzhou City.

Little Tian grew up, becoming stronger and stronger. He faced many difficulties and had insane battles. Each time Lin Feng felt nervous, like he had lived Little Tian's life in real time. But at the same time, he understood that to become a peerless cultivator, he had to go through such things, no matter whether someone was good or evil.

One day, Little Tian built his own world. Many people respected him. He already looked a bit old. His eyes were filled with stars of wisdom.

Another time, Little Tian finally got married. He hadn't forgotten his first love, but he loved his new wife too. He had already become a Saint Emperor. He had a wife and descendants.

Time passed, and Little Tian had many grandchildren. He was old, and at the top of the Sheng Di Layer.

Finally, Little Tian did all he could to break through, and he did. He had his own world, and he created a terrifying spell.

On that day, he went back to his family.

"Teacher." The middle-aged man looked old now. Little Tian was surprised, he was catching up with his teacher. His teacher was old now!

"Little Tian, you're back," said the old man sitting at the foot of a mountain. He was smiling. Little Tian walked up to him and knelt down. No matter how strong he was, he would always respect his teacher.

"I'm old now, I'm happy to see you're so strong."

Little Tian raised his head and smiled, "You will break through, teacher. I will do my best to help you."

"Is that so? You will help your teacher?" said the old man,

shaking his head.

“I will do my best!” said Little Tian. He was already a peerless cultivator, but in front of his teacher, he would always be a child.

“Alright, help me. I want to see what you’ve gone through these years!” said the old man, smiling in a gently.

“Alright,” Little Tian nodded. He closed his eyes.

His teacher put his hand on Little Tian’s head and said, “Open your mind and let me see.”

Little Tian nodded and let go. After a long, long time, Little Tian opened his eyes. He looked extremely sad, he had tears in his eyes. He never thought he would cry again after what had happened, but he was wrong.

“Teacher, why?” shouted Little Tian. It was the first time he shouted in front of his teacher. “I can give you anything, but why?”

He didn’t understand why he was suffering so much. His heart ached. He respected his teacher the most. When he was desperate, he thought of his teacher.

Lin Feng was crying too. He had experienced Little Tian’s life. His heart ached.

“Silly boy. For strength, you must forgive everything,” said the old man kindly. A terrifying strength surrounded Little Tian’s body, soul and memories.

# Chapter 2250: Eighty-One Lives

---

After that, Little Tian didn't die. He killed his teacher, he saw his teacher's desperate look, but he looked indifferent. He had no emotions anymore. He had been betrayed by the person he respected the most. He had done all his teacher had asked him. He had taken risks. He had shown him all his memories. However, the old man had attacked him, it was a true tragedy.

Life was cruel. He had become cold and indifferent, apathetic. His teacher's love had become an illusion. He had created a Saint's technique, and then he had killed his teacher.

However, he wasn't excited at all, he was just sad, and felt nostalgic. That wasn't the reason why he had decided to break through, it wasn't the reason why he had gone through so much...

Suddenly, the illusion dispersed. Lin Feng suddenly felt much more relaxed. Little Tian raised his head and looked at Lin Feng's soul. Lin Feng's heart was trembling. Did Little Tian know he existed? What had just happened?

"What do you think about my life?" Little Tian asked Lin Feng's soul. He sounded indifferent. Lin Feng's heart was pounding. He hadn't had time to calm down. He had just lived someone else's entire life!

"How moving and touching," sighed Lin Feng. He had experienced Little Tian's life from the beginning to the end. He had experienced his life as a baby and grown old with him. How could Lin Feng remain stoic?

"Who are you?" Lin Feng asked Little Tian.

"You arrived in my territory, and you ask me who I am?" asked Little Tian calmly.

Lin Feng took a deep breath. He wasn't wrong. He had guessed right, Little Tian was the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

However, why wasn't he a beast?

"You're strange. Why isn't the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts a beast? Maybe you would be surprised if you saw what was there was behind those doors," said Little Tian calmly. He knew what Lin Feng was thinking!

"Who said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had to be a beast? You're a human, but you're here, right?" said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, answering his own question. Everything was natural. He said calmly, "Of course, when the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was a beast, perhaps his life was different from what you could experience or feel, but it's also true. A life is a life. It's the life of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, in any case."

"How many lives has the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had?" asked Lin Feng. He didn't understand.

"The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts has lived many lives," said Little Tian calmly. He didn't look sad or hopeless anymore. Lin Feng had the impression he was hallucinating. A moment ago, it had felt like he had been sad and hopeless, not the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

"Why did you create King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' city? Why do you make people come here? Why do you make people go through what you have lived?" asked Lin Feng, trying to calm down.

"I want people to understand what the life of a strong cultivator looks like. I want them to understand that sometimes, what you try to have in life can only be an illusion. Your world can collapse anytime. I want them to understand what a life is," said Little Tian slowly, "Just like you, that life has had an incredible impact on you."

"So what?" asked Lin Feng calmly.

"So, you'll be even more determined in the future, and stronger."

“You made many worlds, which comprise the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ world, why?” asked Lin Feng.

“To understand my life. At least, you understand that no matter how strong someone is, including peerless cultivators, they can drift and live without purpose, or drag out an ignoble existence. They cry too... everyone has similar feelings,” answered the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. He slowly turned around and looked at the sky, continuing evenly, “Nobody should be arrogant. Everybody is the same when they die. Everyone becomes ordinary when they die. When you reach the top, your existence can be meaningless.”

Lin Feng looked at the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ back. His heart was pounding. No wonder the beasts admired him.

He was humble, an extraordinary being, but he was not arrogant. It was his conception, his perception. It applied to everyone though, whether they accepted it or not. After hearing such stories, people did their best to progress; they were determined, but they didn’t take themselves too seriously.

“Who do you want to sacrifice? The Supreme Animal World? The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? All the Shrines?” asked Lin Feng. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was startled, and cold lights flashed in his eyes. He turned around and looked at Lin Feng.

“Since you’ve had many lives, Little Tian is one of your lives. It’s not your current body, which means that you’re much stronger now. You want to control them. You want to control everything,” said Lin Feng casually.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was staring at Lin Feng. He looked surprised, but smiled and said, “I like you. Before you, there was another guy I liked: Great Emperor Bai. Unfortunately, he wanted to control things too much. He didn’t want to help me. But I’m convinced you can help me. Even if you’re only at the top of

the Huang Qi layer, I can let you experience my eighty-one lives. I guarantee you that within fifty years, you'll become a Saint Emperor if you experience my eighty-one lives."

"Eighty-one lives, you've had eighty-one lives?" Lin Feng was astonished. How awesome! Each of his lives might have lasted for hundreds of thousands of years.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had led eighty-one lives. He had reincarnated eighty-one times! His understanding of cultivation was probably terrifying. If Lin Feng experienced eighty-one lives, he would probably understand cultivation much better.

"Indeed, eighty-one lives. I can easily form an army of great emperors, a few hundreds of years are enough, not to mention that I've spent a long time here," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts with a smile. Lin Feng found that kind of smile scary. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts probably knew a lot.

Lin Feng had heard that there were some terrifying cultivators in the Continent of the Nine Clouds who had lived for as long as the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts; were they from the same era? Did he want to surpass those people? Were they competing?

In the ancient days, some Shrines had been destroyed, some others had been created, some others had risen. Was it like that in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world?

This world is way too complex and mysterious, thought Lin Feng. There were so many mysteries in the world. Little Tian had only seen the continent a little bit, he had lived a different life. He had chosen a different path.

"Alright, I will first let you experience seven lives. You will understand a lot. If you want to assimilate, then learn slowly. There is no hurry," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts patiently. Lin Feng sensed his soul shaking. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was controlling his soul again!



# Chapter 2251: Another Life

---

Lin Feng's soul went back into his body. However, at that moment, it felt like everything had changed in his life. He had experienced someone else's life, but it had felt so real, enough that he had the impression he had really lived that life.

He couldn't forget those memories.

Won't Little Tian's life influence my own life?, thought Lin Feng. If he perceived that life as something that helped him improve on the path of cultivation, then it was good. But if he perceived it as his own, then it could be problematic. He wouldn't be Lin Feng then, he'd be a mixture of Lin Feng and Little Tian. But it had been, and still seemed, so real. When his soul was in Little Tian's body, he felt like he really was Little Tian.

However, Lin Feng didn't think about that too much. A terrifying absorbing strength surrounded his body again. His soul was taken away once again. He left his body. Lin Feng understood that the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was making him experience another life.

Lin Feng took a deep breath mentally. He hadn't even had time to assimilate one life, and he was already going to experience another one! Wouldn't Lin Feng forget who he was if he continued? Because he really had the impression that that life was his own...

---

"Snowflakes float around, a sword twinkles in the sunlight," said a voice at that moment. Lin Feng was standing in a snowy field in another body. He was performing a sword dance. Each time he used his sword, snowflakes floated around. The sun was shining, the snow kept glittering.

It was a sword cultivator, he looked clean. He was a sword cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, and already controlled several sorts

of abstruse energies.

“Fellow disciple!” said someone at that moment. Lin Feng saw a beautiful woman, as white as snow, clean and beautiful. The young man smiled broadly when he saw her, as if his heart had melted.

“Fellow disciple! Get ready!” A dazzling sword moved towards the young man. He smiled and raised his sword. The two cultivators exchanged views on cultivation, both performing a sword dance. It was a beautiful scene.

After that, they got tired and snuggled in the snow. The beautiful woman put her head on the young man’s shoulder and smiled. “Fellow disciple, our older fellow disciple is extremely talented, he wants to ask our teacher for a marriage alliance.”

The young man’s face stiffened and turned pale. Finally, it was happening...

“Can’t you ask our teacher for a few more years, to wait for me?” The young man knew he was weaker than his older fellow disciple, but he was determined to become stronger for his female fellow disciple.

“How many years?”

“I will surpass our older fellow disciple within five years.” said the young man. He looked determined.

The young woman smiled, kissed him on the forehead, and said while leaving. “Leave the mountain, I will definitely wait for you for five years.”

The young man scratched his head and smiled, he looked determined as he replied, “Definitely!”

Then, he stood up, carrying his sword on his back, and went down the mountain.

—

After that, the young man traveled for five years. He went to

forbidden areas; he traveled the world; he looked for extremely powerful spells, skills, and techniques. He forgot about everything. He exchanged views on cultivation with many sword cultivators, he created his own sword attacks. Within five years, he killed many people. Finally, he went back to the snowy mountain. He had succeeded, and become much stronger. He was already a low-level emperor.

When he saw his female fellow disciple, he was so happy. They slept together but then the young man became extremely sad. He realized it wasn't her first time. But because he loved her, he decided not to mention it. However, on the second day, when he woke up, she had already disappeared. She had just left a letter written in her own blood. "Fellow disciple, I'm so sorry... our older fellow disciple, he... raped me. I lost my honor. I don't deserve you... Don't look for me. Someday, when you become the king of the snowy mountain, get rid of that vermin. I will come and see you."

Lin Feng felt despondent. He was that young man. He felt like that young man. He shouted furiously. Sword intent filled the air and made the small room explode. He felt guilty, he had to avenge her.

On that day, he went to see his older fellow disciple and fought against him. He hated him. His older fellow disciple hated him too, though, because they loved the same woman.

Both sides suffered losses. Their teacher defended his older fellow disciple, however. He cut one of his arms and said. "Insolent bastard, useless disciple, piss off! Never come back to the snowy mountain!"

The teacher was furious, and the young man was crushed. He didn't know whether their teacher had contributed to this tragedy or not. He kept thinking about what his female fellow disciple had said; he was desperate, hopeless, and crushed. Once again, he went down the mountain.

Everything in life – love, intimacy, hatred, all those things – required energy. All those things also made people stronger. Lin Feng was like that, and that young man was like that, too. Everybody had sad stories to tell in life. The young man went down the mountain and traveled the world. He nearly died several times. He met many people. Many things happened.

However, he remained cold. His heart was frozen. One letter written with blood had had such consequences.

People who managed to reach the top all had heartbreaking stories to tell. The young man nearly died a few times, but each time he was lucky, he always managed to survive. Strong cultivators all had a common point, they were determined!

The young man was extremely determined. He broke through to the Di Qi layer, and became a great emperor. He went back to the snowy mountain. However, he didn't see his enemies, or the woman he loved. He asked about them everywhere. In the end, he learned that she had gotten married to a descendant of the Yong City's leader, and that she was considered the most beautiful woman of the city.

---

In Yong City, a gigantic city, he saw his female junior fellow disciple, she was heartbroken. She told him she had almost died once. Because her husband had begged unceasingly, she had accepted becoming his wife.

However, she still loved him. She had had the best moments of her life with him. She remembered when they used to exchange views on cultivation, she remembered their romance. But in the end, she left.

The young man was furious, and determined to wipe out Yong City, regardless of the price. He slowly became demonic and dedicated his whole life to sword cultivation. He sacrificed everything he had to become a stronger sword cultivator. He killed

millions of people. He didn't know what love was anymore.

---

Time passed, many strong cultivators rose, many also fell. The young man went back to Yong City. He had changed already, he wasn't like in the past. He started killing millions of people in Yong City. On that day, he saw his elder fellow disciple, who had become a terrifying cultivator. Their eyes met with hatred.

Apart from them, there were also some other terrifying cultivators: their female junior fellow disciple's husband, the current leader of Yong City, and an evil cultivator. They didn't say anything, they just had a monstrous battle. Rivers of blood flowed in Yong City. Mountains of corpses were piled high.

Finally, the young man won. He killed everyone.

"Fellow disciple!" His female junior fellow disciple had become a symbol of peerless grace and elegance. She looked at him, feeling sad, but she also had affection for him.

The young man looked calm and serene. He looked at her, not saying anything. Suddenly, a sword shot towards her and pierced through her chest. Her face turned deathly pale, she looked crushed, sad, and hopeless. She asked, "Why?"

The young man gazed into the distance. Everything was destroyed around them. He looked apathetic about it all.

"You were too strong," said the young man flatly. He already had white hair on his temples. He looked emotionless.

"You shouldn't be that strong. And our older fellow disciple, I understood him. He looked me in the eyes, his eyes were filled with hatred. And our teacher, he hurt me back in the days, he was furious, I knew why," said the young man calmly.

The woman smiled and said, "So you knew... so why did you kill our older fellow disciple?"

“I don’t care. I dedicated half of my life to you. However, in the end, I realized it was useless to keep thinking about it because I had forgotten about it long ago,” the young man said indifferently.

Sword energies filled the air and cut apart everything. He didn’t spend too much time explaining. Why would he? All those things were not important anymore...

---

Everything vanished, Lin Feng and the young man appeared in another world, Lin Feng’s soul came out of that body. The young man looked at Lin Feng and asked, “What did you think about that life?”

Lin Feng remained silent for a long time. It was another life, he had experienced it very clearly. What a mysterious life, but again, it was the life of a strong cultivator.

“I’m curious, how was your first life?” Lin Feng asked indifferently.

The other smiled. His first life?

“My first life was the most splendid and glorious one. However, it was also the most humiliating one!” he replied, a cold rictus on the corner of his lips. That smile meant “I now despise the whole world”.

# Chapter 2252: Fighting Phantoms

---

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' first life had been the most splendid and glorious one, but also the most humiliating one. Lin Feng didn't understand what that meant. However, he could imagine that kind of humiliation had made him what he had become. Now, he was emotionless and so strong; he stood at the top, and he didn't care about anyone or anything.

"Five more lives, and you will start understanding me," smiled the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

Once again, Lin Feng's soul emerged from his body. Each time Lin Feng lived one of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives, he had the impression he had reincarnated. He didn't feel those lives were the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives.

When Lin Feng experienced a few more lives, he felt confused. He hadn't even finished his own life, and he had experienced seven of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives. As one could well imagine, it was a shocking experience.

Lin Feng's soul was returned his body. He closed his eyes and forget about the outside world. He thought about all the things he had experienced.

He kept telling himself that those lives weren't his, but the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts'. He had just observed those lives. He couldn't let those lives influence him. He couldn't become like the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts!

The seven lives turned into seven stars in his brain. Around the stars were his own memories; he couldn't mix them with the others. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives could be beneficial to him, as long as he didn't mix everything up!

—

Lin Feng opened his eyes; he looked normal again. He inspected

those lives using his own memories and experience, studying them from the outside.

Lin Feng used the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. However, this time, he didn't use the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures to modify strength; he used them to modify those memories, those lives!

The Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures were extremely powerful. They allowed him to study those memories while staying relatively safe. Using the things he had studied in the Fortune Shrine's archive hall, Lin Feng studied for ten days and ten nights, and after that, he felt exhausted and stopped.

He frowned, opened his eyes and sighed. "The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, in each life, broke through after having understood something great. Each time, he loved his teachers, but in the end, everything becomes cold. In his second life, he was in love with his female junior fellow disciple, but then he became extremely strong and killed her, and at the same time he understood something great. All of this is related to the eight distresses; you become emotionless as you become stronger.

"Apart from his first two lives, the five other ones were similar; he understood incredible things and changed. However, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts and I are different. I'm at the top of the Huang Qi layer, but I can't break through to the Di Qi layer. The ten thousand things of creation originate from the same things. I control my own world, but it still needs to be improved. I don't know what will happen in the future, I don't know what my close ones will do in the future. However, I think I understand what to do now."

Lin Feng stood up and walked into that world. That city was like another world, indeed. It was different from all the worlds in which the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had lived in his previous lives. Of course, when cultivators became stronger, their lives became similar, no matter what world they lived in.



---

Someone came over to Lin Feng. It was the body the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had in this life. He was in the sky, looking down at Lin Feng. “You still haven’t broken through to the Di Qi layer, even though you’ve experienced my lives?”

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts didn’t understand. He had noticed Lin Feng’s physical strength, soul, and comprehension were incredible. He had an incredible sense of judgement, and couldn’t be mistaken about Lin Feng. Nevertheless, Lin Feng had experienced his lives, and still hadn’t broken through. As long as a cultivator remained determined, there was no reason for them not to break through.

However, Lin Feng was still at the top of the Huang Qi layer!

“King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, those are your lives. I studied them, but it was useless. My cultivation is different, I have my own life. Therefore, if I stay here, I won’t be able to become stronger. I hope you’ll let me leave this place,” Lin Feng said calmly.

“You want to leave the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory?” repeated the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. He didn’t understand how Lin Feng felt.

“Yes. After studying your lives, I had the impression you were me. Perhaps many people who come here admire and respect you, and I respect and admire you, too.

“However, I am still me. As you said, if I stand at the top, then nobody will humiliate me ever again. When I reach the top, I will come back and meet you again, I think,” Lin Feng said calmly.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ eyes glittered as he stared at Lin Feng. Lin Feng would come back after reaching the top? He was truly self-confident...

“Apart from me, only Suzerains and Fighting Phantoms can come in and out freely,” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts to Lin

Feng calmly. “If you want to leave, you must become a Suzerain or a Fighting Phantom.”

“But those Suzerains have reached the peak of perfection. You won’t have the opportunity to reach the peak of perfection before fifty years, I think. And a Fighting Phantom... you’re just an emperor, if you want to win against some of the strongest Great Imperial Beasts and become the strongest one of a territory, it will be extremely difficult, as well. You’ll have to break through to the Di Qi layer first,” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

A Suzerain or a Fighting Phantom? He’s even more terrifying than I thought, thought Lin Feng. Maybe those who could go in and out freely could infiltrate the Continent of the Nine Clouds....

“How do I become a Fighting Phantom?” asked Lin Feng.

“I suggest you don’t bring about your own destruction. First, focus on breaking through to the Di Qi layer, and then you may have an opportunity,” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.

“How do I become a Fighting Phantom?” Lin Feng asked again.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts looked amused, and smiled. “You’re in a world of heroes. If you want to become a Fighting Phantom, you have to make a public announcement and say you want to become a Fighting Phantom. Then, you’ll have seven days to rest, after which you’ll fight against a terrifying amount of of beasts. As long as they are great emperors, they can fight against you, and try to kill you. After three months, if you’re not dead, you’ll become a Fighting Phantom.”

“A public announcement.” Lin Feng frowned. That was even more terrifying than the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

“Can they join hands to fight against me?” asked Lin Feng.

“They cannot. But they can fight against you one after another as they wish, without waiting,” replied the King of the Ten Thousand

Beasts.

Lin Feng took a deep breath. He couldn't fight against groups, that was obvious... however, even one-on-ones, that was incredible. Lin Feng couldn't imagine what it would be like. Qing Hai's Roc, Heze's Mahoraga... such people were terrifying. They were geniuses.

"What about Great Imperial Weapons?" asked Lin Feng.

"You can't use them," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, shaking his head. "There have been only a hundred and some Fighting Phantoms in history, less than two hundred. Only one appears every thousand years or so, and they were all great emperors. Now, they've become my best assistants. They replace Suzerains who die."

"That's dangerous," said Lin Feng, rather annoyed.

"Of course, when someone becomes a Fighting Phantom, they have lots of advantages. I even give them the army of a whole world," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts coolly.

Lin Feng's eyes glittered and he said, "I'll go out and think."

"Study my seven lives properly. When you reach the top of the Di Qi layer, you can try," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts calmly. He waved his hand, and Lin Feng appeared outside of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' inner city.

Lin Feng crossed the door through which he had come in.

---

Very quickly, he arrived back where he had started. He was wondering whether Bai Yu and the others had come out or not. They had probably experienced the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives as well...

Fighting Phantom, a public announcement, thought Lin Feng. He had no choice. It was the only solution to leave that place. He had

to become strong first, he had no choice now...

---

The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds had shaken the whole Continent of the Nine Clouds. After that, things had calmed down. Many new geniuses had started springing up, like bamboo shoots after a spring rain.

In Hell, there was a young man called Mo Zheng. He was insane. He had no enemy at the same cultivation level. He was a successor of the Ancient Demon Clan, and one of the grandsons of the Ten Yama Courts' kings. He was also a member of the Hell Shrine; all his social statuses were dazzling. He went to the Celestial Country alone and killed many people. He wanted to go to the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

At the same time, in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, some geniuses were rising. In the Snow Clan, two young monarchs, a beautiful woman and a handsome young man, had appeared. It was said that they were mother and son!!!

# Chapter 2253: Fighting Phantom Protectors

---

Bai Yu and the others were back together in the great roc's palace. At that moment, they were together.

"He's the only one who hasn't come back. How was it in town?" asked Bai Yu calmly.

"I experienced a life. What about you?" asked Dinuo calmly. The others understood and nodded.

"A life, the life of a very strong sword cultivator," said Bai Yu, staring at them.

"Mine wasn't like that, it was the life of a peerless demon cultivator," said Qing Hai's Roc.

Everybody was startled. The Dark Golden Pupiled King said, "The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives were terrifying."

"He's been living for such a long time. I could study one of his lives for years and years."

"But why did my father die?" Bai Yu pulled a long face. She was furious. Her father had come to this place. After coming out, he wanted to break through, what had happened? What difficulty had he faced?

"Old poisonous monster, what are you doing?" Qing Hai's Roc asked Heze's Mahoraga. His eyes were closed.

"I'm going to break through to the next cultivation layer. I can feel it!" said the old poisonous monster, smiling evilly and hissing.

The others were surprised. He was actually a middle-aged man, much older than them. He had been famous for a long time, but he hadn't managed to break through. After experiencing a life, he was going to break through!

"We were nine people initially," said the old poisonous monster suddenly. He looked evil. Qing Yi and Bai Yu's maid had come

back, but Lin Feng hadn't. The memories of an entire life were precious...

The old poisonous monster looked at Bai Yu's maid and Qing Yi slyly. Everybody knew what he wanted.

"Share the memories you obtained," said the old poisonous monster. The memories of those lives were priceless.

Qing Yi was stupefied. He said. "If everybody wants to share, I don't mind sharing."

"Yes, just share yours first with everyone," said the old poisonous monster. Qing Yi pulled a long face. That bastard wanted to force him, but it didn't look good. Those people all had the same thoughts. Everybody was staring at him.

"Alright..." said Qing Yi, his face stiff. All those people could easily kill him, he felt humiliated, but he had no choice.

Qing Yi shared the memories of the life he had experienced with everybody else. However, it wasn't the same as when the king had absorbed their souls to make them experience the lives, it was a different sensation. It felt less real, but it was still very beneficial.

At that moment, the ox arrived. Even though he tried to walk lightly, he made the ground shake.

"Uncle Ox!" Qing Hai's Roc greeted him.

"Alright," the ox nodded and looked at everybody. "You managed to come here, you have incredible fighting abilities. Now, you've had the experience to experience new lives. You will all become stronger. Do you want to go to the Bestial Memorial Pagoda to test your strength, and see if you're eligible to become Fighting Phantom Protectors?"

"What is the Bestial Memorial Pagoda, and what are Fighting Phantom Protectors?" asked Heze's Mahoraga.

"The Bestial Memorial Pagoda is a place you can enter and exit

freely. You use a fake body to enter that place, and you can compete with all the other strong cultivators. That way, no risk of dying. You can even disguise yourselves within, nobody will know it's you. Regarding Fighting Phantom Protectors, you know what Fighting Phantoms are, Fighting Phantom Protectors protect Fighting Phantoms. All the Ministers have to acknowledge you for you to become one."

"Where's the Bestial Memorial Pagoda?" asked Qing Hai's Roc.

"Every territory has an entrance to the Bestial Memorial Pagoda. Your father is in charge of this place. The entrance to the Bestial Memorial Pagoda is here, in the great roc castle," Uncle Ox replied.

"Good. I wanted to see how strong the others here are," said Zixu's Flood Dragon, standing up.

They followed the ox and headed to the Bestial Memorial Pagoda.

---

At that moment, Lin Feng was coming back to that place. After asking around, he realized that this world was even stricter than the world of humans. Everything was strictly organized. Everything was logged in journals, too. If Lin Feng was here, it meant he was strong enough to live here.

Lin Feng was assigned a residence. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was really a terrifying cultivator, but he was also an excellent manager. It also meant that he had a vision for the future.

Lin Feng didn't go out for some time, he started meditating in seclusion. Even though the lives he had experienced weren't his, they were useful, and he could learn many things from them. He had seen many cultivators' spells, skills and techniques in them. His clone was also studying in the Fortune Shrine...

---

The Deva-Mara Kalpa strength cleansed Lin Feng's body again.

He didn't break through. Each wave of Deva-Mara Kalpa strength was, as usual, stronger than the previous one. Each time the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength cleansed Lin Feng's body, he used his Deva-Mara Body Cleansing Technique twice. That way, his physical strength kept increasing. Even if he couldn't break through, he was already much, much stronger than many great emperors in terms of physical strength.

After some time, Lin Feng stopped meditating in seclusion and came out. He walked out into the middle of all those palaces. Next to him was a beautiful woman, Liu Fei.

At that moment, Liu Fei was smiling gently. It was the first time Lin Feng had taken her out of Xue Yue.

"Lin Feng, where are we?" asked Liu Fei. She was astonished, there were so many terrifyingly strong beasts everywhere.

"A powerful animal world called the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory. It's very well organized here. Better organized than the world of humans," replied Lin Feng. He didn't spend much time with her, therefore, he wanted to have a walk with her. She wasn't weak either, and she was extremely bored in Xue Yue. After, all Lin Feng's world wasn't developed at all.

"These beasts are extremely strong, are they all imperial beasts?" asked Liu Fei, firmly holding Lin Feng's hand. She felt nervous here.

"Yes, at least! They're really strong, and there are also many, many Great Imperial Beasts," explained Lin Feng.

Liu Fei didn't know what to say. She didn't even know how strong Lin Feng had become.

However, Lin Feng felt guilty because if she hadn't gotten married with him, she would have had a more peaceful life. He owed her. He rarely spent time with her, and rarely went to Xue Yue.



Liu Fei was holding Lin Feng's arm tightly. They arrived on a beautiful and vast road. There were many vendor's booths there, selling all sorts of precious items. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world was well organized, but nevertheless, many beasts died regularly, including extremely strong ones, because others wanted to steal their items.

"How beautiful." Liu Fei saw a Taoist robe made of peacock feathers with seven colors. The woman who was wearing it was extremely beautiful. She looked elegant and free of vulgarity.

"How is it?" the woman asked a young man next to her. She kept pivoting to show him her robe, beaming happily.

"So beautiful," said the young man with a smile. He looked at the vendor and asked. "How much?"

"Level three Great Imperial Weapon, that'd be enough," said the vendor smiling.

"Level three Great Imperial Weapon," whispered Liu Fei, gaping slightly. The woman wearing the cape looked at Liu Fei in a proud and arrogant way. That woman was wondering what a weak cultivator like Liu Fei was doing here.

Lin Feng walked forwards and looked at the vendor. "Do you have the same Taoist robe made of feathers? I can pay a level three Great Imperial Weapon."

The vendor smiled neutrally and shook his head without saying anything.

"Such clothes have to be tailor-made. Otherwise, they'd be worthless. Who would want to wear the same clothes as other people? Besides, level three Great Imperial Weapon?" said the woman glancing at Lin Feng disdainfully. Not everybody could pay a level three Great Imperial Weapon for clothes.

"If you agree, I am willing to give you a level four Great Imperial Weapon," said Lin Feng. He knew Liu Fei liked it. He kept calm,

talking gently, even if this woman was making fun of him.

The woman was surprised, staring at Lin Feng, and said, “Look at yourself.”

Then, she turned around, dragging the young man next to her, and left. The young man glanced at Lin Feng with a flat smile. He looked proud and arrogant, too.

“Lin Feng, I’m sorry.” said Liu Fei. She felt guilty. She felt like she had made a fuss about nothing.

“I’m sorry. So many years, I’ve been trying to solve as many things as possible, and I didn’t take good care of you. I messed up.” said Lin Feng, caressing Liu Fei’s cheeks. He felt guilty.

At that moment, the vendor said. “That’s the Seven Feathers Prince. According to rumors, he has been selected by the Fighting Phantom Protectors to become one. If a Fighting Phantom emerges, he’ll probably become a protector. He has a very high social status. Surprisingly, you wanted to obtain his item...”

The vendor shook his head. In his eyes, Lin Feng had overestimated himself.

## Chapter 2254: Bestial Memorial Pagoda

---

Lin Feng looked at the two people leaving in the distance and said. “I’ve heard about Fighting Phantoms only. I’ve heard that one Fighting Phantom emerges every thousand years, or even more. What do Fighting Phantom Protectors do? What is their role?”

“You haven’t been here for very long. Even if there is no Fighting Phantom, we need protectors for our territories. Some people can be selected in advance, and then when a Fighting Phantom appears, some people can become Fighting Phantom Protectors. The Seven Feathers Prince has already publicly announced his identity in the Bestial Memorial Pagoda, and he’s had incredible results. Not many people can defeat him.”

“Bestial Memorial Pagoda?” Lin Feng looked surprised.

“Yes, the Bestial Memorial Pagoda is one of the most important places in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ Territory. Everybody can go there, and if they want, they can hide their real identity to fight against everyone else and see how strong they are. Every territory has an entrance to the Bestial Memorial Pagoda,” said the vendor.

“Thank you for your time,” said Lin Feng, smiling and nodding, before leaving with Liu Fei. Lin Feng enjoyed the feeling of her warm hand in his. He smiled and said. “Feifei, do you want anything else?”

“No. Taking a walk is enough.” said Liu Fei. She had gradually gotten used to the environment here. Things became more natural for her. Lin Feng nodded and they continued walking around. Sometimes, he found some small things which he thought she’d like, and he bought them for her.

---

The Bestial Memorial Pagoda's entrance was in the great roc palace. Actually, the entrance was a gigantic place, with many vaults. There were dazzling lights in the vaults, where many people were seated alone and motionless.

"Are those void entrances?" murmured Lin Feng. He walked forwards and arrived in front of a vault. He went under it and sat down in the light. He closed his eyes, and suddenly, a terrifying strength drew him in. Lin Feng felt as light as a feather as he ended up somewhere else.

What, how strange!, thought Lin Feng. He looked down at his body. His real body was probably outside, but the body made of consciousness he had in here didn't feel different at all.

So many cloaks, armors and masks!, thought Lin Feng, glancing around. Were those things there for them to hide their identity? Lin Feng put on a black cloak and a black mask. His body was suddenly surrounded by an illusion.

"How strange!" murmured Lin Feng happily. His silhouette flickered, and he left that hall.

After a short time, he met someone. That person looked strong, he was a great emperor.

"Even emperors dare come in here?" That person was wearing a tiger mask, and sounded icy.

The Bestial Memorial Pagoda was divided into different floors. The first floor was for emperors, the second floor was for great emperors, the third floor was for Celestial emperors. Lin Feng was on the second floor, the floor for great emperors. Celestial Emperors couldn't go to the second or first floors, but the opposite was possible, emperors could go to the second and third floors, but great emperors couldn't go to the first floor.

That cultivator jumped ahead with a rumble of rising power. A massive strength surrounded Lin Feng and oppressed him.

The cultivator roared, suddenly turning into a gigantic lion. The ground cracked under his paws. Lin Feng's soul was trembling.

“Piss off!” A gigantic hand moved towards Lin Feng. The lion looked at him disdainfully. In his eyes, an emperor had no business here.

A terrifying sound suddenly filled the air. It contained cursing strength, and reverberated everywhere. The lion's intent started shaking. Lin Feng's fist was filled with terrifying demon lights. Rumbling sounds spread out, and the ground exploded under their feet as their energies met.

The beast roared furiously. How dare an emperor come there! He wanted to crush Lin Feng's hand.

“Piss off!” shouted the lion.

The lion was a bit careless, but Lin Feng had gotten ready. He shouted, and cursing strength made the lion tremble. At the same time, he released sword strength, which shot towards his opponent's head. His consciousness broke apart, and he disappeared from there.

When Lin Feng saw his opponent disappear, he didn't look satisfied. Even if his opponent was a great imperial beast, he wasn't as strong as Qing Hai's Roc and the others. He was, at most, as strong as Qing Yi. He had also been careless, so Lin Feng had crushed him.

“This place is incredible. My consciousness is like my body in here. I wonder how the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts made this place. It's good to practice and people don't die for real here!” thought Lin Feng with a sigh.

——

In a hall outside, the cultivator Lin Feng had defeated appeared, still wearing his tiger mask. Many people looked at him and laughed. “Haha, he crushed you?”

“It was strange, so strange!” said that person in annoyance. “I was too careless. But I will find him!” He got ready to go back inside.

“You’re acting recklessly,” said all the beasts, laughing at him.

—

Bai Yu and the others were also inside the Bestial Memorial Pagoda.

Heze’s Mahoraga was extremely strong. At that moment, he was devouring someone entirely. The person kept shrieking madly.

Heze’s Mahoraga was uncaring. Even if his opponent didn’t really die, he liked doing that to them. When they came out, they had a really bad memory.

—

In another place, the Seven Feathers Prince was wearing a feather robe with seven colors. Even if he was wearing a mask, people knew who he was, and many people fled, not wanting to fight against him. Next to him was a mysterious silhouette, looking graceful and swift. But considering her silhouette, she was probably a banshee. Her eyes looked cunning and evil.

“Everybody is avoiding you, it mustn’t be fun?” the woman smiled.

The Seven Feathers Prince replied, “I’m behind you. You try.”

“Alright,” the woman nodded.

They were both hunting for prey. After a short time, the woman’s eyes gleamed. She saw an emperor, was he a human or a beast? After all, there were mostly beasts in there, but sometimes there were humans too.

“Good boy. An emperor on the second floor. What kind of place does he think the Bestial Memorial Pagoda is?” the woman giggled. She stalked forwards gracefully, like a snake in the water.

Lin Feng saw that woman, and he also saw the Seven Feathers Prince behind her. He had already seen these two at the market. Coincidence?

“The Seven Feathers Prince has the potential to become a Fighting Phantom Protector. I’ll see how strong he is, it’s a perfect opportunity.”

A silhouette moved gracefully, wearing a gigantic snake mask. Lin Feng and the others could clearly sense their evil Qi, however.

When people turned around, including Lin Feng, they sensed the evil energies even more clearly. That person was extremely dangerous.

Lin Feng recognized those eyes and that Qi. It was the old poisonous monster.

Perfect, he wanted to see how strong he was. He would be able to see how strong all those cultivators were.

But at that moment, the old poisonous monster and the Seven Feathers Prince weren’t interested in Lin Feng at all. The banshee had dark-green eyes, and was staring at Lin Feng. It was like she was trying to bewitch him.

# Chapter 2255: Continuous Battles

---

Lin Feng was determined, wise, and persistent. Even if the woman was a great emperor, it was not effective against him.

“Heeheehee...” a giggle resonated in Lin Feng’s brain. He saw many silhouettes of dancing women, slim and beautiful. They were getting closer and closer to him. How not to have lusty thoughts when seeing such beautiful women? Lin Feng’s heart sped up, the illusion looked so real...

Lin Feng ground his teeth, his eyes became pitch-black. He broke the illusion and came back to his senses. However, a beautiful woman was still walking towards him. Was he unable to stop the illusion?

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng. He raised his fist and bombarded the illusion. It broke apart. Lin Feng grunted coldly. That illusion was powerful, and looked so real...

A gentle breeze brushed against him. Lin Feng felt unsafe. Illusionary beautiful women appeared all around him again, slowly taking off their clothes, their snowy-white skin appearing. They looked extremely arousing.

What an incredible Temptation Dao, thought Lin Feng. Suddenly, the women turned into snakes and opened their mouths wide open, lunging towards him. Lin Feng was standing in the middle of all the snakes, he had the impression he was going to be devoured alive, and sleep forever...

“Hmph!” Wisdom Kings appeared in Lin Feng’s brain. How could he sink into temptation with Wisdom Kings? His eyes shone darkly. He released sword energies and sliced apart the snakes. At the same time, he moved towards one of them.

The snake woman’s face stiffened. How could he recognize her real body?



Lin Feng could see through the illusion; his eyes were filled with death stamps. Dao strength surged out, and the woman's face changed drastically. Lin Feng broke the illusion and attacked using Death intent. He was too close to her, she couldn't block him.

A strong wind started blowing. The woman turned around and looked to the Seven Feathers Prince. His face stiffened, and he suddenly moved forwards and shouted explosively, "Stop!"

However, it was useless. Lin Feng smashed her with his fist. She screamed loudly as she was hurled back into the main hall and exploded.

—

The woman suddenly opened her eyes, she was back under her vault. Her chest kept heaving for breath, her face was deathly pale.

"Bastard, I will kill you!" shouted the woman furiously. She went back into the Bestial Memorial Pagoda, to the place where Lin Feng had crushed her.

—

The Seven Feathers Prince was staring at Lin Feng, his Qi released. Lin Feng dared attack women like that? And he was a mere emperor...

"You want to bring about your own destruction!" said the Seven Feathers Prince coldly. Razored wings suddenly appeared in his hands and shot towards Lin Feng. In reply, a terrifying river appeared and surrounded Lin Feng.

Lin Feng suddenly rose up into the air. Some feathers fell from the sky. Black lights appeared and fissures appeared in the air.

The Seven Feathers Prince, are all those feathers special spells?, wondered Lin Feng. Very quickly, a third feather cut towards Lin Feng from behind. Claws suddenly appeared and lunged towards him.

Lin Feng didn't flinch; he raised his empowered fist, and smashed the claws. As he destroyed them, a gigantic hawk swooped towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng released Sword intent. The Seven Feathers Prince threw his last feather, and Lin Feng had the sensation dark assassin's claws were reaching for him. It wasn't only a physical attack, it was also a soul attack. Lin Feng had to be extremely cautious!

When Lin Feng saw that, he released as much Sword intent as he could and his nine ancient words started floating around him.

Terrifying lights filled the air, a bell sounded off as the energies moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng started punching out repeatedly. Everything in front of him seemed to explode.

The Seven Feathers Prince threw himself at Lin Feng. He raised his hands, the atmosphere around him crackled. Lin Feng's physical strength was incredible, but against such an attack, he had the impression he was going to be cut apart. It was extremely dangerous!

"Die!" shouted the Seven Feathers Prince furiously. His seven wings descended from the sky, like seven sharp swords.

Lin Feng grunted. His face was a bit pale. What a powerful attack; with such attacks, he could even destroy great emperors!

Lin Feng shouted out, and his Nine Words resonated with the cosmos. He charged at the Seven Feathers Prince.

"He's not dying, after all this?" The Seven Feathers Prince hadn't thought that Lin Feng wouldn't die, he was just an emperor! The Prince looked angry. He raised his hands, and more claws shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng ignored the attacks, moving towards the Prince. He looked like a brutal and violent beast.

He cast his celestial stage deployment spell, adding in a soundwave deployment spell which oppressed the Prince. The

atmosphere kept trembling. The Seven Feathers Prince's attack exploded, but he continued punching out in Lin Feng's direction.

At the same time, deployment lights made of empty space cosmic energies appeared around him.

"Kill!" shouted the Seven Feathers Prince, releasing his seven wings again. They turned into several beasts which looked like sharp swords. Fissures appeared in the air around them.

Lin Feng disappeared, and reappeared higher up in the air. Many black holes appeared in the air and descended towards the Seven Feathers Prince.

"Die, die!" the Seven Feathers Prince felt oppressed. Lin Feng was using his terrifying Nihility Death sword. The atmosphere around him was filled with death strength. His silhouette flickered as he flapped his wings.

Lin Feng disappeared and reappeared again, blocking him. He shouted furiously and released more strength which penetrated into the Prince's body. He raised his fists too and punched out in the Prince's direction. It contained a terrifying amount of strength and cosmic energies.

The Seven Feathers Prince's face stiffened. Maximum level Death Dao! He could kill great emperors of the top of the Di Qi layer with such attacks! He didn't want to fight anymore, but Lin Feng prevented him from leaving, so he could only block the attacks.

The Seven Feathers Prince didn't want to fight anymore, and wanted to escape from a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer. Lin Feng watched him as he fled.

Lin Feng didn't chase him. He could defeat him, but he couldn't kill him easily.

When Heze's Mahoraga saw the Seven Feathers Prince escape, he stared at Lin Feng. That guy's attacks were scary, but also, that guy's style looked like the style of the guy who had come with

them, who was also an emperor.

When Lin Feng was with them, he hadn't thought Lin Feng looked that strong. Now this guy in front of him also controlled death strength... but it couldn't be the same, it had to be a coincidence.

But an emperor with such incredible fighting abilities, that was surprising.

"Heh heh, what a strong guy," said Heze's Mahoraga, spitting out poison.

Lin Feng turned to stare at him. He felt like battling. Death strength surrounded him like poison did the Mahoraga.

"I have someone to fight against, it seems!" said Heze's Mahoraga, spitting out more poison. His poison surrounded Lin Feng. That poison was thick, it wasn't too liquid. Lin Feng suddenly jumped forwards. However, poison stuck to his clothes and it penetrated into his organs. It contained a toxin which slowed Lin Feng down.

Poison also emerged from the Mahoraga's eyes. He controlled Dao power. This kind of fighter could paralyze enemies in battles. It could stop someone's blood, even if they had a powerful heart. Vital organs could stop functioning because of the poison, too. It could even paralyze someone's soul.

Lin Feng's strong blood was boiling. He kept releasing life energy into it. At the same time, he oppressed the strength which was flowing in his body. He wanted to purge the poison. At the same time, he also released death strength which also started flowing through his opponent's body.

The Mahoraga opened his mouth wide and spat out a thick and yellowish poison. Lin Feng couldn't dodge, the poison was definitely going to reach him so Lin Feng had no choice, he jumped forwards and got closer to The Mahoraga.

However, the old poisonous monster didn't care, he looked at Lin Feng and reopened his mouth widely. His mouth was now dozens of meters wide. He wanted to devour Lin Feng alive. His poison was extremely powerful, and if he managed to devour Lin Feng, the poison would dissolve his body. That's how he had become so big, he had devoured many people in his life!

# Chapter 2256: God of Hell's Name

---

Lin Feng was staring at his opponent. The Mahoraga's gigantic teeth were yellowish and green. Poison stuck to his palate, gums, and teeth. Lin Feng found the smell horrible. On top of that, even if the Mahoraga didn't devour him entirely and dissolved him with poison, he could also bite him. It would be enough to kill him!

Lin Feng released dazzling Holy Spirit swords, and attacked his opponent's teeth. His silhouette flickered. The old poisonous monster snapped his mouth shut. Lin Feng heard some snorting sounds as green poison splashed. The old poisonous monster looked at Lin Feng, pulling a long face.

The Mahoraga started transforming, growing to thousands of meters long. He looked as mighty as a dragon. His Qi was evil and ice-cold. The air darkened around them.

Lin Feng looked at the gigantic Mahoraga, acknowledging his strength. His poison Qi was deadly. No wonder so many people feared him. Back in the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities, all the great emperors were scared of him.

Lin Feng summoned thousands of Holy Spirits. Some of them turned into Sky Absorbing Holy Spirits, some others into death Holy Spirits, some others into Nine Netherworlds Holy Spirits, some of them into Wisdom King Holy Spirits! Holy Spirits appeared everywhere! Lin Feng's Holy Spirits were much more powerful than in the past. Even though he could summon Great Holy Spirits now, his Holy Spirits were still deadly!

The gigantic Mahoraga spat out poison again, and moved towards Lin Feng. The Mahoraga was gigantic, but he was also very fast. He arrived in front of Lin Feng, trying to constrict him.

"Die!" An incredible amount of Holy Spirits moved towards him, and Ancient Qi filled the air around them. Nine Words floated around Lin Feng. He condensed the energies of the ten thousand

things of creation, and they surrounded the Mahoraga. Lin Feng also released some terrifying sword Qi. The Mahoraga was resistant, it wasn't easy to defeat him...

Lin Feng released Sky Absorbing strength and condensed cosmic energies. He raised his fist and condensed cosmic energies in his fist, as well. Terrifying black lightning fire appeared in his fist, and it also contained sword strength. Deployment lights started intertwining in front of him. He was staring at the Mahoraga. The Mahoraga roared defiantly, facing a terrifying attack.

Lin Feng disappeared, reappearing in front of the Mahoraga. The old poisonous monster roared furiously. When he saw that Lin Feng dared come closer, he opened his mouth widely again, trying to bite Lin Feng with his poisoned teeth. However, Lin Feng was too fast, and went down his throat!

It smelled horrible, there was poison everywhere. However, Lin Feng was so fast, the Mahoraga had no time to dissolve Lin Feng's body.

The Mahoraga's face stiffened. Lin Feng kept attacking from inside his body!

Killing energies kept exploding out, and his body was blasted open from within!

Lin Feng reappeared, soaked in terrifying poison. Lin Feng released life strength to counter it, but still, it felt extremely unpleasant.

"Forget it. I'm out too," said Lin Feng. After a short time, he returned to his body. When he reappeared there, the old poisonous monster was shouting and roaring in a thundering rage. He wasn't far from Lin Feng.

"Who!?" shouted the Mahoraga furiously. An emperor had crushed him and hurled him out of the fighting area... an emperor! How could that emperor be so strong? How had he managed to

pierce through his body from the inside? His body was filled with poison!

“Old poisonous monster, what are you shouting for? Were you killed inside?” asked Qing Hai’s Roc coldly. The old poisonous monster stared at Qing Hai’s Roc. He just grunted coldly.

“The Bestial Memorial Pagoda is really mysterious. It can condense people’s consciousness inside and yet people have the impression everything is real. Did you get killed, old poisonous monster?” asked Qing Hai’s Roc.

The old poisonous monster shouted furiously. “If you want to try, go inside and let’s agree on a place to fight.”

“Is that so? You were defeated and now you want to release your anger on me? But with your speed, can you even reach me?” queried Qing Hai’s Roc coldly. “Come. Let’s go to Celestial Protection City and fight in the sky above.”

“Alright,” said the old poisonous monster coldly. Many people looked excited. They wanted to watch battles. Lin Feng didn’t go to watch them though, he just left the place.

—————

He continued going to the Bestial Memorial Pagoda regularly. Very quickly, a certain God of Hell became very famous. Many who had been defeated by Lin Feng called him that, or Death God. Many people couldn’t stand his death strength. Some people said that he had never lost.

The rumors also said that the Seven Feathers Prince had been defeated by the God of Hell, that he had killed him in the pagoda back then. His reputation was increasing each day. Black robe, black mask. Everywhere he went, people died. Many people started paying attention to him.

———

Lin Feng re-entered the Bestial Memorial Pagoda. He was at the



top of a castle, his black cloak fluttering in the wind. He wanted to try attacks he had created and see if how strong he had become. He was waiting for the next time he was cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, he had plans.

In the distance, people saw him, but they didn't get close. Bai Yu was in the crowd; Lin Feng could recognize her, as she was wearing white clothes and had a great figure, and he could also recognize her Qi.

God of Hell; back then, he defeated the old poisonous monster. His death Qi is terrifying. Is he really only a cultivator of the top of the Huang Qi layer?, thought Bai Yu. His death strength had reached perfection, and he could defeat great emperors at the top of the Di Qi layer. It was incredible. She couldn't believe that a cultivator of the top of the Huang Qi layer could defeat someone like the old poisonous monster.

She had met some incredible emperors in her life, but they had never been so terrifying. The old poisonous monster and the others could easily kill those people...

At that moment, the God of Hell's body became illusionary and he disappeared. He left the Bestial Memorial Pagoda. Bai Yu closed her eyes and left as well.

—

In the pagoda, a moment before, Bai Yu had seen that the God of Hell had killed a few people. She still remembered the battles. She left the palace, but looked absent-minded and preoccupied.

"Miss Bai!" said someone at that moment. Bai Yu turned around and saw Lin Feng.

"What are you doing here? Where did you go after leaving the city?" asked Bai Yu.

"I came back a while ago. I've seen you a few times. But in the pagoda, you don't have time to talk to me," said Lin Feng, smiling

thinly. The pagoda was a nice place for another reason, as people could practice without worrying about dying or lasting harm.

After that, Lin Feng left alone. After Lin Feng left, someone came up to Bai Yu. “Why didn’t you keep him here?”

Bai Yu turned around and looked at Heze’s Mahoraga. “Why would I?”

“He received the memories of a life too. Lives are precious treasures! I just need one more life and I’ll break through! Even if you don’t want the memories, I want them,” said the old poisonous monster, evilly staring after Lin Feng.

———

After he left, he brought out Qiu Yue Xin. After breaking her Dao, Qiu Yue Xin had spent some time in his spirit’s world. She had given up Dao. Now, she was happy as long as she was at Lin Feng’s side.

Qiu Yue Xin was much calmer than Liu Fei, she had gone through much more in life and was less excitable.

They were on a bridge and looking at the sun. It was beautiful.

“Is that sun fake? It’s so beautiful, though,” murmured Qiu Yue Xin with a smile.

“Who cares? Life is like a dream anyway. We don’t need everything to be real to enjoy ourselves,” replied Lin Feng lazily.

“That guy knows how to talk to women!” interrupted a voice coldly. Lin Feng turned around and saw the Seven Feathers Prince and that woman.

“He’s stronger than you, though,” said that woman, when she saw how beautiful Qiu Yue Xin was. She smiled at the Seven Feathers Prince.

“You’re bewitching enough,” said the Seven Feathers Prince indifferently. He glanced at Lin Feng and the others around. The

pair passed next to Lin Feng and Qiu Yue Xin, disdaining them. Lin Feng likewise ignored them. His eyes were pitch-black. He smiled broadly and dark clouds condensed in the sky above them.

“Go!” Lin Feng said to Qiu Yue Xin, and their silhouettes flickered, vanishing into the wind. The Seven Feathers Prince and the woman who weren’t that far away suddenly turned around and frowned. Lin Feng and the woman had suddenly disappeared...

# Chapter 2257: The One Who Wants to Become a Fighting Phantom

---

Time passed.

In each territory of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world, there was a gigantic martial arts stage. Above the martial arts stage, there was always a gigantic mirror. Those mirrors were called Ten Thousand Beasts Mirrors, and they could illuminate the whole territory.

In the great roc territory, there were many people going to that place, looking solemn and respectful. No battle had occurred on the martial arts stage for a very long time. Only the strongest beasts fought on those martial arts stages.

Bai Yu, Qing Hai's Roc, Heze's Mahoraga, and the others were there too. Minister Roc had made them become Fighting Phantom Protectors because they were extremely strong. However, they would need a very long time before becoming Fighting Phantoms. However, they were tough opponents, and there were many other geniuses in every territory.

“Unfortunately, I will brush past that opportunity,” said the old poisonous monster, staring at the mirror. Icy lights appeared in his eyes.

“Dinuo, Dark Golden Pupiled King, Zixu's Flood Dragon, do you want to try?”

They all remained silent. They were self-confident, but they knew they weren't strong enough for that.

Apart from them, many people around were also staring at the mirror.

They saw someone else arrive, someone they knew.

“It's him!” Bai Yu looked stupefied. Heze's Mahoraga looked at

that person greedily. He hadn't forgotten about the memories.

"Little boy, stop!" said the old poisonous monster when he saw Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked over at them, seeing Bai Yu and the others. He nodded at them.

"Last time, you also experienced a life, right?" the old poisonous monster asked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at him calmly, and nodded.

"Since it's that way, share the memories with us!" said the old poisonous monster calmly, as if he had said something ordinary.

Lin Feng looked at him for a few seconds, but then ignored him. He glanced at the others; they remained silent, just looking at him as if they agreed with the old poisonous monster.

Lin Feng smiled thinly and continued walking on.

"Eh?" the old poisonous monster looked surprised. That boy dared ignore them?

"I told you to stop!" said the old poisonous monster coldly. Lin Feng continued ignoring him though, and kept walking forwards. The old poisonous monster pulled a long face.

"Eh, there's something wrong. Where is he going?" asked Bai Yu. She was stunned. Lin Feng continued walking, towards the martial arts stage, he was going under the Ten Thousand Beasts Mirror.

"Impossible. He wants to die." thought Bai Yu. She couldn't believe it. Lin Feng was definitely going to stop.

At that moment, Qing Hai's Roc also realized something was wrong. Lin Feng went under the mirror. Was he insane?

They all frowned. Lin Feng stopped at the foot of the martial arts stage, and they all took a deep breath. As expected, he wasn't insane, how could they even think he wanted to get onto the battle stage?

And then, Lin Feng rose up into the air and then landed on the

martial arts stage.

“He’s...” Bai Yu was astonished. People around were astonished. The Ten Thousand Beasts Mirror illuminated Lin Feng.

“You’re insane!” Bai Yu shouted at Lin Feng.

“Let him die,” said Heze’s Mahoraga, smiling coldly. Lin Feng was acting recklessly.

However, Lin Feng didn’t care about what they were saying. He raised his head and looked at the mirror. He said calmly, “I announce I’d like to become a Fighting Phantom.”

When he said that, the mirror illuminated the whole territory. Dazzling lights flashed everywhere.

—

Everywhere in that world, people raised their heads and saw a silhouette on a martial arts stage. He was publicly proclaiming, “I announce I’d like to become a Fighting Phantom.”

The Seven Feathers Prince raised his head, the woman next to him raised her head, their faces stiffened.

The fool they had met at the market? They frowned. He was making a public announcement?!

“He wants to die!” said the Seven Feathers Prince coldly.

—

Lin Feng jumped off the stage. He was illuminated by lights, they were following him. It wasn’t a secret anymore. Everybody knew what he intended now!

Seven days from now, he would welcome anyone, and he would fight. It would be a massacre!

Seven days from now, he would fight against the world. He would then need to resist them for three months. If he succeeded, he’d become a Fighting Phantom!

Lin Feng left the martial arts stage. Bai Yu's mouth was wide open as she stared at Lin Feng. She didn't recognize him anymore. It was as if she had met him for the first time at that moment.

"Fighting Phantom?" Heze's Mahoraga smiled coldly. He spat glossy green poison onto the ground.

Qing Hai's Roc opened his wings, streaked across the sky and landed in front of Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng ignored him, and continued walking calmly.

Qing Hai's Roc was flying above Lin Feng, it was as if he could attack anytime.

"Shouldn't you transmit your memories to me before I kill you?" said Heze's Mahoraga, who was following too. To him, Lin Feng was already dead!

Anywhere Lin Feng would go, the mirror would follow him. Lin Feng went back to his residence and closed his eyes, calmly waiting.

During those seven days, many people came to find him. This guy wanted to become a Fighting Phantom?

---

Finally, seven days passed, and a gong clanged loudly. The palace in which Lin Feng was living was broken down by many beasts. They had been waiting for this day impatiently. Finally, it was time!

A silhouette slowly rose up in the air. He was wearing a black robe; his eyes were pitch-black. He looked cold and grim.

"Eh?" Many people were astonished. That guy's costume was too familiar!

"God of Hell." Bai Yu looked at Lin Feng, her face stiff, and said, "He's the... God of Hell."

Heze's Mahoraga's face was hilarious; back then, he had been

crushed by the God of Hell.

The Seven Feathers Prince and the banshee raised their heads and saw a black cloak fluttering in the wind.

“It’s him.” The banshee’s face turned deathly pale. The Seven Feathers Prince pulled a long face. He had escaped back then when he was fighting against Lin Feng.

“Isn’t he the one you saw last time? Why are you surprised?” the street vendor asked the Seven Feathers Prince, he had recognized Lin Feng. Why was the Seven Feathers Prince surprised?

“He’s the God of Hell. The Bestial Memorial Pagoda’s God of Hell!” said someone next to them. The vendor’s face was funny. He looked at the Seven Feathers Prince’s face... so, the rumors were true...

The street vendor remembered what he had said to Lin Feng back then, and laughed at himself mockingly. A Fighting Phantom Protector, so what? Lin Feng wanted to become a Fighting Phantom. He had made a public announcement!

A beast moved towards Lin Feng, lightning-quick. Lin Feng wanted to become a Fighting Phantom? He could dream on!

That beast looked as sharp as a sword. However, Lin Feng raised his hand and grabbed the beast’s claws. Then, he raised his other fist; it was sharper than that beast’s claws!

A terrifyingly sharp demon fist smashed into the beast. The beast gave a horrible shriek and exploded. Blood splashed everywhere.

Lin Feng stood there. He looked apathetic, like a God of Hell.

From that moment on, anyone could kill him and he could kill anyone.

The first person who attacked him died in brutally and atrociously, and was a Great Imperial beast. Everybody in that world had seen that clearly. The Bestial Memorial Pagoda’s God of



Hell was terrifyingly strong; if anyone wanted to kill him, they had to get ready to die first.

As expected, after the first one died, many people who had gotten ready to attack didn't attack in the end. They were shaking and stunned. People who wanted to become Fighting Phantoms were extremely strong.

He had crushed the first Great Imperial Beast in one punch!!!

# Chapter 2258: Death God

---

Lin Feng stood there and waited. Everybody could see him clearly in the whole King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world. He wanted to become a Fighting Phantom, so he was in everybody's field of vision. It was a cruel challenge, and he had to pass it. Many people had tried to become Fighting Phantoms in the past, and some of them had been crushed badly.

However, that young man in black clothes was the first one ever who wanted to attempt becoming a Fighting Phantom with the strength of the Huang Qi layer. It astonished everyone.

The air began to hum. Many beasts moved towards Lin Feng. They all wanted to crush Lin Feng's soul. However, Lin Feng remained there motionless. He steadfastly stood his ground.

A strong wind started blowing. A gigantic creature descended from the sky and moved towards Lin Feng. It wanted to peck at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng released death stamps, a pitch-black beam of light emerged and dashed to the skies. Lin Feng's eyes were dazzling and filled with death strength. He shouted furiously. "Die!"

Death Qi turned into a beam of light and shot towards the beast as Death Qi surrounded it. Its life was being corroded, giving it the impression it could die anytime. Lin Feng's cosmic energies had become much stronger, and they became stronger and stronger each day. His death cosmic energies were deadly, and coupled with Dao, terrifying!

Beams of light kept emerging from Lin Feng's eyes. He kept punching out using Ancient Holy Punches. The air thundered, and the gigantic beast exploded.

It started raining blood again. Blood splashed at Lin Feng's face. His death strength dispersed as another Great Imperial Beast's

corpse fell from the sky. Even the beasts who had gotten ready to attack Lin Feng were surrounded by death strength.

They were staring at Lin Feng coldly. He was truly intimidating. They weren't sure they could defeat him.

"How strong." Bai Yu looked at Lin Feng, found herself shaking. Lin Feng had come here with them; back then, he was calm and discreet. His Qi wasn't too powerful. She had never thought he could be so strong. How could he be the God of Hell, a death god? Each time he attacked, he killed!

The old poisonous monster was also staring at Lin Feng. Back in the Bestial Memorial Pagoda, he had lost against him. Now, he had the impression that Lin Feng had become even stronger...

At that moment, they all looked pensive. Lin Feng moved, and each time he moved, he turned into a beam of light. His wind and empty space cosmic energies were terrifying. He also had wings. Each time he took a step, he could travel incredible distances.

Lin Feng's attacks were dazzling and magnificent, he used the most aggressive attacks he could when he punched. He condensed demon Kalpa lights in his fist and punched a Great Imperial Beast. This last time when he had been cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, he had used his Deva-Mara Body Cleansing Technique thrice. His physical strength was terrifying. With Lin Feng's physical strength, nobody could compete with him anymore.

Beasts had a greater physical strength than humans, and their physical attacks were often formidable. However, when Lin Feng threw himself at a Great Imperial Beast, he turned into a beam of light and pierced through his body. Those watching were trembling when they saw such attacks.

People heard a melody start up, and Lin Feng's demon strength became even stronger. The source of the Nine Netherworlds appeared all around him, demon Qi filled the air and spread far away. Everybody heard the demonic melody.

“Oh no, the Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song can influence people’s intent and turn them into demon puppets!”

Lin Feng pointed at a person. The Nine Netherworlds lights penetrated into his body, he turned black, and his intent shook violently. His eyes turned pitch-black and glittered.

He roared furiously, before running away in a frenzy.

Lin Feng was standing before the Source of the Nine Netherworlds. He said indifferently. “Who wants to kill me?”

He sounded calm and steeled, totally self-confident. His physical strength, soul, and intent were incredible, and he had experienced the King’s lives. He had become stronger, and even more determined. When he used his Nine Netherworlds Demonic Song, his demon-types attacks were even more powerful and effective.

Many beasts had the impression they were falling asleep. The demon energies didn’t just corrode their lives, it also made them tired.

“I saw something, a dream, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ life,” mumbled a beast. He started dreaming, he could see the beast king’s life...

“It’s the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. It’s one of his lives. He wants me to understand something?” whispered another beast. Some beasts were determined and struggled. They knew it was a dream. Lin Feng had created dreams for them, and put the dream energies into the demon strength. People were falling asleep without paying attention.

Many strong cultivators far away raised their heads and said, “Interesting, I need to go this time.”

Many extremely strong beasts hadn’t come, but now they had seen how strong Lin Feng was, so they were getting ready to go and fight against Lin Feng. They were definitely going to kill him before he had time to become a Fighting Phantom. They wanted to

show Lin Feng that to become a Fighting Phantom, he had to be ready to risk his life, and maybe even die.

But only the strongest beasts thought that way, the others were just astonished. Lin Feng was just too strong. Killing him would be too difficult. Weaker beasts were thinking that if Lin Feng got badly injured, they'd finish him; otherwise, they wouldn't have the opportunity to kill him!

The Seven Feathers Prince was shaking in astonishment. He had lost against Lin Feng once, and he wouldn't have an opportunity this time, either.

"I've heard that the God of Hell defeated the Seven Feathers Prince in the Bestial Memorial Pagoda, and the Seven Feathers Prince wants to become a Fighting Phantom Protector. The God of Hell is so strong that he could beat a Fighting Phantom Protector."

"If the God of Hell becomes a Fighting Phantom, then the Seven Feathers Prince will be his Protector for millions of years."

Some people who didn't know the Seven Feathers Prince said that. The Seven Feathers Prince heard that, he was furious because his woman was next to him.

Her beautiful eyes were gleaming. She remembered what she had told Lin Feng back then. Look at yourself... she felt ridiculous. Lin Feng had just ignored her because he didn't feel like talking to people like her.

---

In the sky, the mirror was still displaying everything. The Great Imperial Beasts who attacked were getting stronger and stronger. However, when they attacked, the Nine Netherworlds strength kept piercing through their bodies, and death stamps assaulted them. In a short time, a few more corpses appeared on the ground.

Lin Feng killed all his opponents mercilessly. He had no choice. Only strength mattered here.

“Old poisonous monster, don’t you want his memories? Go and try.” said Bai Yu to the Mahoraga. The old poisonous monster’s face stiffened. That guy was the God of Hell. He had already lost against him. He wanted to fight again, but in the Bestial Memorial Pagoda, not outside, because he could die for real outside.

Lin Feng had become much stronger. He was dangerous!

“Don’t you want to try?” the old poisonous monster asked Bai Yu.

Bai Yu smiled indifferently. “Old poisonous monster, if you don’t dare attack, in three months, if he’s still alive, you can become his Fighting Phantom Protector, if he wants to recruit you.”

When the old poisonous monster heard that, his face stiffened. Becoming that guy’s Protector?

“Pfew...” he took a deep breath, looking desperate. He slowly rose up in the air. Bai Yu’s beautiful eyes twinkled when she saw that... was he going to attack?

“What do you have to say about what we talked about?” the old poisonous monster said to Lin Feng calmly.

“What?” replied Lin Feng coldly. He looked like a death god.

“I am about to attack you. If you lose, I won’t kill you, just transmit me the memories. If I lose, I’ll transmit you the memories,” said the old poisonous monster calmly.

Lin Feng smiled coldly. “You’re afraid to die.”

The old poisonous monster’s face stiffened in tight anger. “I am about to become a Tian Di-level beast, how could I fear you?”

“So, just attack then,” replied Lin Feng detachedly. The Mahoraga’s face stiffened into a grimace. He had reached a point of no return.

“If I lose, I am willing to become your Protector,” proposed the old poisonous monster. However, on the inside, he was thinking

he was going to do his best to kill Lin Feng. If he lost, he'd find a way to escape.

Lin Feng understood perfectly, he just nodded coldly. "Alright, I will recruit you then."

# Chapter 2259: Candidate

---

When the Mahoraga heard that, he was furious; everybody feared him in the Great Imperial City. Lin Feng was saying he was going to recruit him? How insolent!

Poisonous Qi filled the air. Many people quickly retreated. Very quickly, the poison surrounded both fighters, the air began to hum thickly. The crowd saw a terrifying gigantic Mahoraga taking his true form.

The gigantic Mahoraga threw himself at Lin Feng. He opened his mouth and spat out poison unceasingly. When the poison appeared around Lin Feng, he stopped opening his mouth. The previous time, he had made that mistake and Lin Feng had defeated him that way. Lin Feng was too fast. He wanted to use physical strength or spells to defy him.

“Dong!” Nine Words appeared around Lin Feng, the earth and the sky trembled. An incredible quantity of death Qi surrounded the Mahoraga. The poison corroded his body and his death Qi corroded the Mahoraga’s body. Lin Feng then charged the old poisonous monster. He was a tiny little cultivator and his enemy was a gigantic Mahoraga. Everybody had the impression the Mahoraga had the advantage because of that.

The Mahoraga spat out more poison at Lin Feng. That poison was thick, and there was enough for Lin Feng to drown in it.

Lin Feng condensed dark demon lightning, which streaked across the sky in flickers of energy. The poison instantly disappeared, turned to powder. Lin Feng attacked the Mahoraga, millions of death stamps appeared and rained down.

The Mahoraga’s heart was pounding. But his Dao intent was corroding Lin Feng’s body, too. His Poison intent was fearsome!

Time passed, the two fighters drew closer and closer, the battle



was explosive. The Mahoraga's face looked ferocious. His gigantic eyes were filled with green lights, he desperately wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“Roar!” the Mahoraga shouted furiously. A terrifying poison pellet moved towards Lin Feng, the poison Qi was deadly.

However, Lin Feng countered with an incredible amount of strength, which turned into sword energies and cut apart everything around him. The sword energies descended from the sky and cut the poison pellet in two. Lin Feng then threw himself at the Mahoraga, aiming at his head.

The Mahoraga threw himself at Lin Feng as well, trying to constrict Lin Feng. An ancient Qi filled the air. Lin Feng completely turned into a death sword and shot himself at the Mahoraga. The Mahoraga lowered his head, not daring to let Lin Feng attack him. However, Lin Feng still aimed at his head!

Of course, Lin Feng was just a gigantic death sword at that moment. The Mahoraga constricted the sword, sensing the terrifying sharp Qi. The sword energy gradually cut into his head, and death strength penetrated into his body.

His gigantic body was trembling. He kept screaming. He wanted to crush Lin Feng, but Lin Feng was too strong. His face began to distort.

The gigantic Mahoraga was trembling, which made the crowd tremble as well. The old poisonous monster wanted to constrict Lin Feng, not a sword!

“I lost!” shouted the old poisonous monster. He let go of Lin Feng. The crowd saw a third of the sword penetrate into the old poisonous monster's body. It was astonishing. The Mahoraga turned black.

The sword emitted whistling sounds before coming out of the Mahoraga's body. Lin Feng became himself again. He was staring

at the Mahoraga, who was breathing loudly. Lin Feng said coldly, “I’ll recruit you as a Protector!”

The Mahoraga was shaking; he raised his head and asked, “Are you really only a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer?”

“Yes, for some reason, I can’t break through to the Di Qi layer,” said Lin Feng calmly. “Of course, that’s probably only temporary. If I had broken through to the Di Qi layer, I would have been able to kill you in the blink of an eye.”

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they shuddered with fear. How arrogant! However, they had to admit that with the strength of the Huang Qi layer, Lin Feng was already terrifying. If he became a great emperor, he would be impossibly strong!

The Mahoraga spat out Qi, staring at Lin Feng and said, “Alright, if you become a Fighting Phantom, I’ll become your Protector. Of course, if you die, I won’t be able to.”

“Don’t worry,” replied Lin Feng indifferently, glancing at the crowd. “If nobody attacks me, I’m going.”

Lin Feng started walking. All the beasts were stunned, and wavered as they watched him go.

—————

After a short time, Lin Feng arrived in a mountain range. Life and death lights glittered around him. Sky Absorbing life and death strength filled the air. He summoned the strength of the ten thousand things of creation, condensed them, and cast a deployment spell. It contained a terrifying amount of death strength.

All the beasts were scared. Nobody dared provoke him anymore. Even though beasts didn’t like humans, they had to admit that this human was terrifying. His understanding of cultivation was incredible. He didn’t just have incredible fighting abilities, he was a genius. Now that he had cast a deployment spell, killing him was

almost impossible.

However, some beasts didn't fear him. A terrifying rhinoceros wearing armor charged at Lin Feng. The air kept trembling. The deployment spell was shaking fiercely and seemed to be on the verge of collapse. Gigantic pieces of stones exploded, rose up in the air and then fell down from the sky towards the deployment spell. The rhinoceros was wrecking the mountain range!

The gigantic rhinoceros galloped, craters appearing under him. Pieces of mountains continued flying towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and raised his fists. He used his Ancient Holy Fists, and didn't even open his eyes. When the rhinoceros arrived near Lin Feng, he roared out; the deployment spell became dazzling and deployment spell energy filled the air. At the same time, Lin Feng released Death Dao and death stamps, which smashed down on the rhinoceros.

The Great Imperial rhinoceros collapsed and fell from the sky!

"His Death Dao has reached the maximum level. How explosive!" murmured all the beasts. Even Celestial Emperors didn't understand Dao strength that well. Many people only reached the last level at when they became Saint Emperors, but even then, they didn't reach the top of the maximum level.

But Lin Feng's Death Dao had reached the top. He could crush Great Imperial Beasts in the blink of an eye!

"If we continue with one-on-ones, nobody in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory can compete with him. Only a group can defeat him. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory hasn't seen such a genius in such a long, long time..." commented many people staring at the mirror. They looked at Lin Feng with great respect.

People admired strong cultivators. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts wanted to show everyone in his world what the

Fighting Phantoms had in common, so he wanted everyone to be able to look at them.

Strong cultivators from all territories came. More and more corpses appeared at the foot of the deployment spell. All of them were incredible Great Imperial Beasts. But it didn't matter, because a Fighting Phantom was emerging.

If Lin Feng wanted to become a Fighting Phantom, he had to kill a countless number of Great Imperial Beasts. It was inevitable.

---

Gradually, time passed. There were more and more corpses. The strong cultivators of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world didn't feel like fighting anymore, they slowly looked at Lin Feng respectfully.

Bai Yu and the others were still watching. Bai Yu said calmly. "One more week and he'll become a Fighting Phantom. I never thought this guy who came in here with us would become a Fighting Phantom."

"If he hadn't used a deployment spell, I would have been able to defeat him, but his deployment spell contains a terrifying death strength, I can't do much against him," murmured the Dark Golden Pupiled King.

"If he becomes a Fighting Phantom, all the Ministers will select Protectors for him. Will you become Protectors for him?" Bai Yu calmly asked the others.

"Fighting Phantom Protector?"

That was an incredible title and social status in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world, because Fighting Phantoms were extremely rare. One appeared maybe every thousand years. Becoming a Fighting Phantom meant that everyone else was already too inferior to be compared. Becoming a Protector was a way to improve in the future.

However, Lin Feng was only an emperor. But still, they couldn't help admiring and respecting him.

"I wouldn't mind becoming his Protector," said Zixu's Flood Dragon, staring at Lin Feng. He didn't think it was something to be ashamed of. Being a Protector wasn't like being a slave. During a few hundred years, Protectors enjoyed a special status. If they didn't like their Fighting Phantom, they could also give up.

# Chapter 2260: Master

---

The final deadline was approaching. Everybody was excited and watching Lin Feng enthusiastically.

“A Fighting Phantom is going to appear.”

There were mountains of corpses at the foot of Lin Feng’s deployment spell. He had killed so many people. After making a public announcement, he had only been to two places. He hadn’t been traveling around constantly.

His Death intent is terrifying. During these three months, not only didn’t he get injured, but he also became stronger, thought Bai Yu, staring at Lin Feng’s eyes. During those three months, she had seen Lin Feng change. He had become even more terrifying. These days, Great Imperial Beasts just had to glance at Lin Feng’s eyes, and they died. One second, and he could kill them.

His fighting abilities were terrifying. She had never seen anything like that in her life.

More beasts jumped into his deployment spells. People sighed... how brave! Some terrifying beasts also came from other places, but in all, fewer and fewer people dared go and attack Lin Feng. Many beasts already considered him a future Fighting Phantom.

But the beasts who were brave enough to go and try all ended up dead. After a short time, they just became corpses among the others. Many beasts were thinking that the corpses on the ground represented an almost endless source of wealth, too...

---

During the last two days, nobody attacked, and the three-month deadline arrived.

Some gigantic silhouettes appeared in the sky. They looked like gods.

“Minister Roc.” Many beasts were stupefied when they saw Minister Roc. “Minister Jiao.” The people looked at the Ministers with respect and admiration. Minister Jiao was from another territory. All the Ministers from all the territories had arrived at that moment.

They all looked at Lin Feng. They had watched his battles. It was the first time someone managed to become a Fighting Phantom with only the strength of the Huang Qi layer. It was incredible. They would always remember such an accomplishment.

Kacha!

The mirror which shown down on Lin Feng broke apart, startling everyone. It meant that the three-month period was over.

Lin Feng was now officially a Fighting Phantom!

“A new Fighting Phantom!” Everybody was shaking. In the sky, yet another silhouette appeared. That person descended from the sky. He had no Qi, and looked ordinary. On the ground, nobody would have paid attention to him. However, everybody understood that this person had regained a natural state.

“Leader!” The Ministers all bowed. The crowd shuddered with fear. The Master was there!

“Haha! Congratulations! Finally, another Fighting Phantom after me,” said that person, laughing loudly.

“Oh, so the Master was the last person who became a Fighting Phantom? Now he’s a peerless cultivator?”

“I don’t know what his cultivation level is, but he’s terrifying anyway.” They looked at Lin Feng. Would Lin Feng become a peerless cultivator too?

“Follow me,” said the leader, smiling at Lin Feng. Then, he looked at all the beasts and said. “Since the Fighting Phantom has already appeared, he’ll probably choose Protectors in the following month. The Ministers are in charge of that.”

“Yes, Master!” said the Ministers in unison, looking at the leader and Lin Feng. “Let’s go.”

After that, some strength surrounded Lin Feng and they disappeared. Bai Yu and the others looked stunned and hopeless. He was gone. He had become a Fighting Phantom! He was going to become a terrifying cultivator someday!

---

Lin Feng followed the leader. He looked like a forty-some year-old man, but he was probably extremely old. He looked absolutely ordinary as well.

“Master, where are we going?” asked Lin Feng.

“Your temporary residence,” said the leader, smiling.

---

They traveled a great distance. They even crossed some doors.

Finally, they arrived in an ordinary city. There were beasts and humans coexisting peacefully. Their cultivation levels were extraordinarily low. Lin Feng didn’t understand.

When the leader saw Lin Feng’s face, he said. “Don’t call me Master. Call me Uncle Wang.”

“Alright, Uncle Wang. But where are we?”

“A small city in King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ world. I’ve been living here recently. It’s peaceful,” the leader and Lin Feng took a walk down the main street.

Someone smiled and asked, “Teacher Wang, who’s that little boy? Are you trying to help him find a woman?”

“Woman?” Lin Feng’s face stiffened.

“Hehe,” the leader smiled fatuously.

On the way, many people called out to him. In front of them, a beautiful woman appeared and looked at the leader. She smiled



and said, “Dad, you’re back!”

“Yes, I’m back!” the leader grinned. The woman looked at Lin Feng and followed them as they entered a forge.

“Dad, we’ve acquired many goods, I was waiting for you to make weapons,” said the young woman happily.

The leader smiled and replied. “Let’s do it.”

Lin Feng looked at them strangely. They took up hammers and started forging weapons.

The young woman looked at Lin Feng, smiled and asked. “Who are you?”

Lin Feng was surprised. The leader just smiled, so Lin Feng replied. “I’m Uncle Wang’s friend, I’m from abroad. I’m here as a tourist.”

Lin Feng asked her “You’re Uncle Wang’s daughter?”

“Don’t we look similar?” laughed the woman.

“How old are you?” asked Lin Feng.

“Nineteen,” replied the young woman. Lin Feng remained silent. He looked at the leader’s wife, she was also a beautiful woman. He had a beautiful wife and a talented daughter...

—————

Lin Feng spent some days there. The leader had an ordinary life there. Nobody knew he was a leader, nobody knew he was a terrifying cultivator. He was just an ordinary blacksmith there.

But Lin Feng was astonished and speechless. This person had gone through hardships in life? Lin Feng had no doubts about that. Maybe the leader had lived there for dozens of years... well, at least nineteen years, because his daughter was nineteen years old.

Lin Feng couldn’t help but wonder if other strong cultivators had such lives at some point? After many lives and reincarnations, they

ended up with many families, many descendants...

---

Lin Feng and the leader were in a backyard sitting in chairs. The leader smiled and asked. "How do you feel?"

"Surprised," replied Lin Feng.

"Normal. You're young. You can't imagine what it feels like to have all sort of lives. Only after having had many lives, it feels like you've lived once. It's good for you to be here. Many people like me have ordinary lives. Even if you pass next to them, you won't know who they really are."

Lin Feng nodded. Indeed, next to people like the leader, it was impossible to know they were extremely strong. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there had been many, many peerless cultivators. Had they died? Of course they hadn't, but where were they? Did they have very ordinary lives in villages and small cities?

"You've just become a Fighting Phantom, many people will be watching you. Will you get used to it?" asked the leader.

Lin Feng shook his head. He wasn't interested in being a Fighting Phantom, but change was always something special.

"Polishing, cleaning, that makes you change, that makes you grow up," laughed the leader. Lin Feng understood what he meant. He wasn't trying to teach him how to become stronger.

"I decided to become a Fighting Phantom just so I could leave the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts Territory. Now, I'm thinking, after leaving, shouldn't I have a normal life for some time too?" Lin Feng smiled.

The leader nodded. "No rush. Don't be impatient. First, your Protectors will be chosen. After that, you can leave. You can also take them with you."

"Thank you very much, Uncle Wang." said Lin Feng politely.

“No need. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts asked me to take care of you. He attached great importance to you,” replied the leader easily. “If someday we become extremely strong, you’ll definitely be with us.”

# Chapter 2261: Leaving the Territory

---

Lin Feng smiled casually and gazed into the distance. He had already traveled around the world. However, he couldn't be like the leader and live like an ordinary person, because people who stood at the top already had everything they wanted in life. There was no risk they would fall anymore, almost.

Among the strong cultivators who stood at the top, some people had joined Shrines and had incredible privileges. Some people were invited all over the world, such as Shi Jue Lao Xian, and some people stood aloof from worldly strife. For them, cultivation was about cultivating one's mind and body, but it was more maintenance work at their level.

Of course, some people decided to contribute to society even more by writing books for others, such as the strong cultivators who had written the books in the Shrines. Other extremely strong cultivators had written about the eight distresses to help people. It mainly depended on their lives.

—

Lin Feng spent some peaceful days on the leader's side, living like an ordinary human being. Finally, the leader took Lin Feng away and they left.

"Father, come back soon!" said the leader's daughter. He waved at his daughter and smiled, "Don't worry, I'll come back soon. Take care of your mother."

"Alright!" smiled the young woman. Then, Lin Feng and the leader slowly disappeared from their field of vision.

People in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world were still amazed at the existence of a new Fighting Phantom. The ministers announced publicly that they would be looking for Fighting Phantom Protectors. All the ministers were involved. People who

wanted to become Fighting Phantom Protectors could be recruited at all levels among Great Imperial and Tian level beasts. Many people wanted to become Fighting Phantom Protectors, and some of them were extremely strong. They cared about the future, and had long-term plans.

---

Thirty-six Fighting Phantom Protectors were chosen and gathered in front of the leader's palace, waiting for the leader to come back. Some beasts who had lived for a very, very long time looked excited. They remembered back when the leader had become a Fighting Phantom, they had heard that many of his Protectors had a much higher cultivation level than him. Many of those people were already ministers and were extremely strong, but the leader had already become much stronger than them.

The new Fighting Phantom was even more special because he only had the strength of the Huang Qi layer, but he was already extremely strong. Many people who wanted to become Protectors actually had much better fighting abilities than him, but they didn't think about too much. They knew it was only temporary. They were convinced that a thousand, or even just a hundred, years later, he'd be much, much stronger than them.

Two people arrived slowly. People raised their heads, and saw the leader and Lin Feng had returned. Where had the leader taken Lin Feng?

"These are the Fighting Phantom Protectors who have been chosen for you. You can keep some of them only, or all of them, as you wish." said the leader to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng glanced over the crowd. The beasts there all looked terrifying and had a terrifying Qi. They were among the strongest people of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' territory. Fighting Phantoms had an incredibly high social status, because they were sure to become leaders someday.

“I know that many of you are ambitious and proud. However, I need people who will listen to my orders. Otherwise, don’t blame me for being impolite. Now, you can choose, you stay or you leave, as you wish,” said Lin Feng indifferently. He didn’t need to have a burden. If he had an extremely strong cultivator on his side, but that cultivator didn’t listen to him, then that would just be a burden; such cultivators were useless.

On the ground, many beasts’ eyes glittered. They were wondering, what would happen if someday Lin Feng asked them to do something they weren’t willing to do? Would they be willing to serve him?

“I give up,” said a beast. Stepping back, he bowed before the leader and left.

“Me too.” Very quickly, people left one after another. Just over twenty beasts were left. They all looked determined.

“You, you, leave now...” said Lin Feng, pointing at a few beasts. They all looked stupefied. Lin Feng didn’t want them, how humiliating! However, they didn’t know that Lin Feng had carefully observed their faces and had seen that they weren’t as determined as they thought.

Only eighteen beasts were now left. Lin Feng was surprised because apart from Dinuo, all the other beasts who had come to that world with him were there.

Eighteen beasts, six Celestial Imperial Beasts, Qi filling the air around them. Those Celestial Imperial Beasts were among the best in the territory.

“Master, last time, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts told us that Fighting Phantoms could leave the territory, but can Fighting Phantom Protectors leave the territories?” asked Lin Feng.

“Of course, they’re your Protectors, and you have the privilege of being able to leave, you can keep them with you.”

“Great, I will take them with me,” said Lin Feng calmly. So many years had passed. Things had changed in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. With a personal army, he’d be much safer.

---

Lin Feng left the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ territory with his Protectors. When he arrived in the eight Great Imperial Animal Cities, some people saw Bai Yu and the others, and their hearts started beating faster. Bai Yu, Qing Hai’s Roc and the others were following Lin Feng? What was going on?

However, Lin Feng didn’t stop there. He left that place too. They arrived in Long Night City, the Sword Sect appeared in front of them. Very quickly, a group of strong cultivators appeared outside, including several Celestial Emperors. When Jiu You’s Ministry learned about it, some of their cultivators also came to watch.

“Eh?” When the strong cultivators arrived and saw Lin Feng, they were stunned. Those beasts’ Qi were dreadful!

“Die!” said Lin Feng. A terrifying amount of bestial Qi filled the air. The beasts rose up into the air and blotted out the sky. Horrible screams arose as blood splashed and gushed all around. When the crowd saw that, they were terrified. Where were these beasts from?!

“Great Emperor Bai’s daughter! Qing Hai’s Roc!” Some strong cultivators of Jiu You’s Ministry recognized some beasts, frowning when they saw them. Some noble beasts from the Great Imperial City had surprisingly come here! Qing Er was stupefied, what was going on?

Lin Feng suddenly looked over at the people from Jiu You’s Ministry, including the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights. The previous time he had seen him, he remembered now. That person had also forced him into Hell. He had noticed Lin Feng was extremely strong back then, even though Lin Feng was a nobody.

“Kill him,” ordered Lin Feng, calmly pointing at the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights. Everybody was astonished. He wanted to kill a strong cultivator from Jiu You’s Ministry? He was the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights!

The beasts didn’t care though, they threw themselves at the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights. The strong cultivators of Jiu You’s Ministry shouted explosively, “Insolent! This is Long Night City! Great Imperial Beasts can’t afford to act insolently here!”

When that great emperor said that, some claws landed on his head and tore him apart. He didn’t even have time to react before he collapsed, headless.

“Jiu You’s Ministry is nothing in comparison to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ world. Jiu You’s Ministry is a futile and trivial place, we can easily destroy you!” said a beast rudely. Many strong cultivators shuddered with fear. These beasts were under the orders of the legendary King of the Ten Thousand Beasts?

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts really existed?

But in any case, these beasts were terrifying, that was a fact!

“Why do you want to kill me?” asked the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights, staring at Lin Feng. He sounded cold and bitter. A few Celestial Imperial Beasts had surrounded him. He was stuck!

“Do you remember back in the small world? In Jiu You? Back then, you forced a young man to jump into the black water,” replied Lin Feng flatly.

The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights frowned. He looked pensive for a few seconds and then he remembered. His face changed drastically, “Impossible, who are you?!”

“I am that young man,” said Lin Feng, releasing Death intent. The Celestial Master of the Seven Nights’ face completely changed. The terrifying beasts around him were Fighting Phantom Protectors. Even the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights couldn’t



do much against Celestial Imperial Beasts, all he could do was put up a last-ditch struggle. Until the moment he died, he never thought he'd feel so humiliated in life. This had happened because a long time before, he had bullied a young man...

A terrifying Qi filled the air. In the distance, some strong cultivators from Jiu You's Ministry arrived, they were furious. Their Qi rolled out and they shouted, "Who dares act that arrogantly and kill people from Jiu You's Ministry?"

"If you don't want Jiu You's Ministry to be wiped off the map, piss off!" retorted a Celestial Imperial Beast, coldly staring at those people.

The one who had just talked pulled a long face and asked, "You're from the Great Imperial City?"

"Great Imperial City? I used to be, a very long time ago," said the Celestial Imperial Beast coldly, then he said, "Piss off now. You don't want to offend the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts."

That strong cultivator grimaced. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts? Jiu You's Ministry had a high position in the region, they had heard about the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, and if these beasts really came from the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' territory, indeed, Jiu You's Ministry couldn't afford to offend them.

"Let's go," Lin Feng said calmly at that moment. He didn't want to stay there.

His forces all left and the strong cultivators of the Sword Sect and Jiu You's Ministry didn't dare do anything, but glare helplessly after them.

# Chapter 2262: How Long Did That Dream Last?

---

In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Shrines had incredible privileges. Their headquarters were gigantic pyramids which towered over that gigantic territory.

However, the Shrines hadn't been that relaxed for the last few years. Chu Chun Qiu was still in Ganges Time, he had already become extremely strong. A short time before, he had defeated a Celestial Imperial Beast, his fighting abilities were shocking, he was progressing way too fast and the Supreme Animal World also supported him a lot. After the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he had almost immediately become a Great Emperor; now, a dozen years had passed and he was already a Celestial Emperor. That kind of speed was astonishing and breathtaking.

The Shrines felt pressured. Was Chu Chun Qiu that guy?

All the Shrines paid attention to Chu Chun Qiu. Everybody in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds paid attention to him, actually. Back then, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, many people had paid attention to him and a few others. However, after the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, many people had stopped paying attention to the others, especially since many of them had left the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Of course, in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were many, many strong cultivators. Many of them paid attention to Chu Chun Qiu, as he was a core disciple in a Shrine. Core disciples, no matter which Shrine they belonged to, were extremely strong. There were also some other influential groups, many of them very strong cultivators. Many of them were at the top of the Huang Qi layer already.

Everybody was becoming stronger. Even the strongest cultivators

of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were becoming stronger, including the Holy City. People of the same generations continued competing. Such things influenced everybody, and every faction.

---

However, Lin Feng didn't care about those things. At that moment, he was in Purple Clouds, in a cave situated in a place where there weren't many people. He was seated cross-legged practicing cultivation. The Fighting Phantom Protectors were with him.

He was visualizing various things.

There was a scene with one Lin Feng, he was at the very top of a mountain, watching the sun rise and set. He was living like a hermit. Another scene was Lin Feng traveling around the world. Another scene was Lin Feng, living in a small village and hunting with other villagers; he met a woman he liked, and they got married. He didn't disappoint her, even though he felt lonely in the end because his mood and thoughts changed with time as he grew older.

There were many other scenes; Lin Feng's clones, the Three Lives Scriptures. Lin Feng could make as many ordinary clones as he wanted, those clones could have ordinary lives. Lin Feng was wondering whether the Three Lives Great Emperor was doing that too, whether he had many clones everywhere in the world.

The original Lin Feng's hair was very long, and his beard was long, too. He started looking more mature. However, he didn't know that, he just continued meditating. Apart from Purple Clouds, he was also in many other places, many other places in the continent, many other places in small worlds, many places in his own small world.

Gradually, it was as if one brain wasn't enough anymore. It was like a dream, as if all those lives had been dreams.

—

One day, Lin Feng went into a dream; he was in a restaurant, working as a servant. Every day, he chatted with guests and heard them talk about interesting stories in the continent. Lin Feng smiled indifferently. Ordinary days like that were also pleasant.

However, not every dream was great. Lin Feng was in another dream, and there he was a hunter in a village and had gotten married with a beautiful woman from the village, as well. Their relationship was harmonious. However, one day, a group of brigands arrived and attacked them. They killed everyone. Lin Feng was furious. He wished he could have gone there himself with his real body to kill them.

Lin Feng's real body was asleep, but he was still furious. However, he also managed to calm down. Millions of clones, millions of lives, could he remain calm? Wasn't he lonely actually? Could he just let nature take its course? He gradually calmed down when thinking about that. After that, in other dreams, he ended up in many other similar situations. His mood, his perceptions, his vision were changing.

Everything was changing everywhere. The same thing happened in his spirit's world. It was becoming bigger and bigger. It was almost a perfect small world. There were all sorts of Qi, all sorts of energies, but at the same time, that world corresponded to Lin Feng's vision and it was improving quickly.

Lin Feng's real body was asleep. An ancient tree appeared indistinctly around him. Terrifying cosmic energies surrounded his body. They were intense and contained the strength of the ten thousand things of creation around Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng didn't move. He was sleeping. In his mind, golden lights intertwined. His godly awareness started communicating with the earth and sky.

Lin Feng dreamed about many, many things. Apart from

dreaming of millions of lives, he also dreamt about cultivation, he dreamt about the World of the Living Imprints attacks. In his dream, he understood those attacks even better. One attack, and it seemed that the earth and sky could collapse.

He also dreamed about his spirit, about many other spirits, and finally, he dreamt of his most powerful spirit, the celestial book spirit. All the pages looked dazzling and beautiful.

In that dream, he studied a lot. Time passed in the outside world, but Lin Feng forgot about time.

---

The Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Continent of the Nine Clouds, everything changed.

In the Snow Clan, a beautiful silhouette appeared on a snowy field. Her Qi looked extraordinary. She was standing at the top of a mountain, gazing into the distance. She was thinking about him, missing him.

Finally, tears appeared in her eyes, her lips twitched and she said, "I've been a lone fox for a thousand years, I've been lonely for a thousand years, I love you unconditionally, you passed the imperial examinations, I want to dance for you again..."

"May I dance for you, may I dance for you..." she was singing. Her voice was beautiful. She started dancing, looking extremely beautiful as she danced with the snow. Could he see her dance, though?

Snowflakes floated around her. She continued chanting.

In the distance was a snowy tree. A young man was standing there. He was wearing armor, but tears appeared in his eyes.

He raised his head, his eyes were red, he took a deep breath and swore, "Someday, I will do my best so that nobody forces my parents to live apart. If anyone stops me, rivers of blood will flow, even if those people are from the Snow Clan!"

On that day, that young man was eighteen years old; the twenty-year period was imminent!!!

On that day, Lin Feng was dreaming!

# Chapter 2263: Waking Up – Destruction of the Sky

---

Lin Feng didn't know how much time he had spent in the cave. His hair and beard were really, really long, and he was covered with dust. He looked much more mature.

His golden godly awareness palace was dazzling and lofty. In his dream, he had managed to create the real godly awareness palace. It had become a Great Imperial godly awareness palace. His physical strength had been improved by the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree. During these years, he had improved in every aspect. Without the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree, he would have needed many more years to become that strong.

His celestial book spirit was dazzling. He absorbed all the spirits he had ever absorbed and transformed them into his own strength. His spirit and his spirit's world were becoming better and better. Lin Feng didn't need to control it anymore, it was an independent world. During these years, his millions of clones had developed that world.

"The Sky Palace, what's the date tonight?" remembered Lin Feng. He came back to his senses.

"My Dao is going to be complete." said Lin Feng without paying attention, as if he didn't know what was going on.

Lin Feng's celestial book spirit trembled. Dark lightning filled the air around him, as if his spirit were about to explode. Dark lightning started bombarding him. It looked like Judgement Day around him. Finally, his celestial book exploded and turned into a world, and only that world was left.

Lin Feng didn't look perturbed. His spirit's world was trembling, people inside raised their heads and saw terrifying dark lightning across the sky.

---

Tang You You was in Xue Yue, and when she saw the dark thunders, she looked terrified. Luckily, those were ancient forbidden lightnings, so they weren't destructive. It was just Qi contained in that world; otherwise, such a powerful Qi could have destroyed that world if it had been part of an attack.

---

At the same time, in the outside world of Purple Clouds, the sky started breaking. Many people raised their heads and started trembling. The sky was breaking in Purple Clouds?! There was no sky anymore in Purple Clouds!

What kind of strength had provoked that?

---

In a distant mountain, an old man was seated in a chair and suddenly stood up. He was bent, and soon started shaking, and then rose into the air like a spiritual being.

“Am I dreaming?” His son was speechless. The sky was broken? His father had risen up into the air, what was going on? Were Heaven and Earth on the verge of collapse?

The old man gazed into the distance and saw pitch-black forbidden lights. He realized something, and his face changed drastically.

“The prophecy, the legends, in the old days, it's happening...?” whispered the old man. He suddenly disappeared from where he was. He wanted to see what was going to happen.

---

Throughout Purple Clouds, many hidden strong cultivators raised their heads, all thinking the same thought. The sky was going to change!

---



In the Fire Shrine, someone who protected the entrance trembled. His face paled; he was staring at the sky, where forbidden lights were flashing in Purple Clouds and the sky was broken...

“Something big is going to happen, oh no...” He started running and disappeared. After a short time, many people reappeared at his post. Everybody looked at Purple Clouds, they all grimaced, including the leader of the Fire Shrine.

“Pfew... we’ve been fooled...” whispered the leader of the Fire Shrine. Then, he said, “Go to Purple Clouds. If you find the one who attracted the forbidden energy, kill him! Do all you can to find out who among the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds went to Purple Clouds!”

“Yes sir!” everybody nodded. Some people headed to Purple Clouds, some people asked around, some people went to other Shrines.

—

At the same time, the other Shrines also realized what was going on.

In the Fortune Shrine, the Diviner was up in the starlit sky. He could see the forbidden lightning, and smiled. He wouldn’t have thought that the forbidden lightning would cause such damage to lower-class worlds.

Next to him were a few people, including the leader of the Fortune Shrine. He said to the Diviner, telepathically, “Go and tell him to hide. He can’t appear.”

“I understand,” the Diviner nodded. He left immediately. He went to find Lin Feng’s clone, who was in the archive room.

“From now on, the Shrines are all on alert.” said the leader of the Fortune Shrine calmly. Everybody around nodded. Actually, most of them were uninformed, completely in the dark. They didn’t

know about the Destiny Wheel, and they didn't know about Lin Feng.

---

Lin Feng had the impression he had been dreaming for a thousand years. He slowly opened his eyes. Even though he had dreamt, everything had felt so real. Obviously, he knew what had happened. He also knew that his Dao was going to be unlimited soon. There would be no restrictions anymore. However, the last step would be gigantic!

He stood up and looked at himself, smiling wryly. Sword energy filled the air, and cut his hair and shaved his beard. Fire and water appeared around him; hot water cleaned his body. He looked normal and clean once again.

But very quickly, he also changed his face. The Diviner had warned him that nobody could know he was in Purple Clouds. Luckily, only the Celestial Master of the Seven Nights knew about him, but he was dead already. The others didn't know who he was, and the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' territory was a forbidden area.

The lights of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree gradually disappeared. Lin Feng smiled. He would bring the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree back to Godly Wood Valley at some point. It had helped him a lot already.

But what is my cultivation level? What is that mysterious Dao?, thought Lin Feng. He finally understood what a Forbidden Body without a cultivation level meant; actually, he just had different levels from other people.

Lin Feng walked out of the cave in which he had spent a few years. Behind him, the cave exploded and rumbling sounds spread out as the mountain collapsed. He didn't leave a single thread of Qi inside.

He headed back to Purple Clouds. The sky had already reappeared here. However, many people were still shocked about what had happened. Some terrifyingly strong cultivators had come and were looking for something. People were really scared. The outsiders had been looking for someone for half a year already!

---

Those days, Lin Feng spent some time in a small city. He went to a small restaurant there and chatted and drank alcohol with other guests. When the restaurant closed, he went back to the village, watching the sunset above the mountain. He had an ordinary, peaceful, and tranquil life there.

---

Time passed. Many people in the Shrines were furious, but because nobody found him, the Shrines didn't start fighting. All the Shrines were looking for the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, with orders to kill them if anyone saw them!

This time, someone who had a Forbidden Body was in the world and he had to be killed, no matter what! The situation was different from a thousand years before!!

## Chapter 2264: Old Friend

---

Many people were walking along an ancient road. The city was packed. Now and then, one could hear a drunk young man singing, he looked natural and unrestrained. He was with four beautiful women. They were singing with him.

“Little You You, now Qiong Sheng must be an adult already. How strong do you think he is?” asked Lin Feng, smiling sadly. He missed his son.

“How could I know? We haven’t seen him for such a long time. I wish we could go and see him,” said Tang You You with a smile.

“Yes, we will!” said Lin Feng, smiling and nodding. He looked at Qiu Yue Xin and Liu Fei and smiled, “Yue Xin, Feifei, should we have children together, too?”

The two women blushed and rolled their eyes. The other one, a beautiful woman too, smiled and giggled, “You’re right, Sister Yue Xin and Sister Feifei should have children, too!”

“You little indecent girl!” Liu Fei said to Xiao Ya.

“I’m still a little girl?” Xiao Ya stuck out her tongue.

“Yes, you’re not a kid anymore, you should find a husband,” Lin Feng smiled. They kept laughing.

Lin Feng took out a bottle of alcohol and downed it. His blood and Qi boiled, and he took a deep breath.

So many years had passed. How was everyone? They weren’t like him, they probably weren’t stuck at the same cultivation level. They were probably all great emperors already, especially those who had king-type bodies. Jun Mo Xi and Lang Ye had probably become extremely strong, their fighting abilities had probably greatly increased.

Time passed, and even though Lin Feng was only 30-40 years old,

he already had the impression he had lived many lives. That was natural, though. In the last years, many things had passed. Lin Feng had the impression life became more and more dreamlike as time passed. He had experienced the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' lives and then he had dreamt. "The Sky Palace, what's the date tonight?"

---

Their group continued walking in the city. They walked a lot, crossing the continent and finally, they arrived in Dark Clouds. They arrived near a vast stretch of water, where some people played the zither; Lin Feng listened and smiled.

It looked like a painting, a beautiful painting. Some beautiful women were dancing. Many young geniuses were seated cross-legged, drinking and listening to the music.

"That music is beautiful. The Vast Celestial Ancient City is the only place where you can see such a scene," proclaimed a young man. He was out on a small boat. Many people looked at him with admiration; he was the Prince of Sadness. The Prince of Sadness made women sad. He was extremely strong. He had good relations with the women of the Moon Palace, and he was complimenting the Moon Palace by saying such things.

"Prince of Sadness, you're flattering us," said a beautiful woman playing the zither. She bowed in front of him.

"Miss Luo Ye, you're too humble. With your abilities, you could join the Moon Palace. You have a perfect figure and incredible artistic abilities. Why don't you become a celestial woman of the Moon Palace? I would recommend you," smiled the Prince of Sadness. Many men were in love with the celestial women of the Prince of Sadness.

Luo Ye looked excited, she had heard that the Moon Palace had many incredible skills and techniques.

“How could a beautiful woman fall into that decadence?” interrupted Lin Feng at that moment. Many people looked over at him. How audacious, how arrogant! He was humiliating the Moon Palace! The Moon Palace was like many Ancient Holy Clans, nobody could offend or criticize them. Besides, everybody admired the Moon Palace! They had existed for a very long time, and many people thought well of them.

The Prince of Sadness looked at Lin Feng, he smiled and asked calmly, “Who are you, Your Excellency?”

“A traveler,” replied Lin Feng calmly. He recognized the Prince of Sadness, but the Prince of Sadness didn’t recognize him.

“Since you’re a traveler, why do you talk nonsense? Why don’t you keep your mouth shut?” asked the Prince of Sadness with a carefree smile. Everybody understood that the Prince of Sadness loved the Moon Palace. He was elegant and unrestrained, and when people were disrespectful, he immediately threatened them.

“I don’t know,” replied Lin Feng. He turned around and looked back at the Prince of Sadness. The Prince of Sadness was talented and outstanding. Back then, he was already famous in the Vast Celestial Ancient City. Many people didn’t know how strong he was. He was a great emperor now, and he had broken through to the Di Qi layer a long time ago.

The Prince of Sadness looked at Lin Feng calmly. He smiled indifferently, yet coldly. Lin Feng looked apathetic.

He waved his hand and arrows of sadness appeared. The atmosphere became sad and sorrowful.

“Prince of Sadness, arrows of sadness.”

An arrow shot towards Lin Feng. They were some distance from one another, but the arrow moved so fast, it was like they were right next to one another. Lin Feng raised his hand; sword strength emerged from his fingers and the arrow broke instantly. At the

same time, Lin Feng walked out above the lake, looking confident and at ease.

“Your Excellency, your dissimulation technique is incredible. We can’t even see your cultivation level,” said the Prince of Sadness flatly. A melody of death spread through the air, the water of the lake began to churn. Sharp swords hurtled towards Lin Feng. Beasts roared, and people’s souls shook. Many arrows also whistled towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng continued walking forwards and destroyed all of the Prince of Sadness’ attacks. The Prince was astonished.

“Back in the day, I was wondering why the chessboard was in the Prince of Sadness’ mansion house. Now, I think that you’re a member of the Moon Palace, and that you’ve studied the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures,” said Lin Feng calmly. He had noticed the Prince of Sadness’ insane attacks contained all sorts of evolved and modified strengths.

The Prince’s face changed drastically. He was staring at Lin Feng as he shouted extremely loudly, “Who are you?!”

“Prince of Sadness, you will never be sad, or make people sad, again,” said Lin Feng calmly. A terrifying Death strength penetrated into the Prince’s body, and his face turned grey. He released as much life Qi as he could, terrified and staring at Lin Feng. Who was this extremely strong cultivator? When had he offended him?

“Back then in the Vast Celestial Ancient City, you were the one who tried to kill me using attacks which had been modified with the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, I think I’m right,” said Lin Feng. The Prince of Sadness gaped. He was staring at Lin Feng, the first cultivator of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!!!

His mouth was wide open, he wanted to say something, but he had no time, Death intent was corroding his life, and he couldn’t resist. After a few seconds, he softly collapsed in the small boat.

Everybody around was astonished. The Prince of Sadness had just died? Like that? In a few seconds?

When they turned around, they noticed that the murderer was already walking away, as if killing the Prince of Sadness had just been a trivial thing.

“Who is he?” wondered everyone. Their hearts were pounding.

Luo Ye looked desperate, the Prince of Sadness had just died because of what they had just said? The crowd was looking at the corpse in the small boat, they had the impression that they were dreaming. The Prince of Sadness had been killed in the blink of an eye... They didn't understand how or why!

---

Outside of the Animal World, Lin Feng was standing in the sky, waiting calmly. After a short time, a Great Imperial Beast came out and looked at Lin Feng coldly. “Who are you, Your Excellency? What do you want?”

Lin Feng looked at him and sighed. He had to force his way into the Animal World. He instantly disappeared.

“Where are you going?” demanded the Great Imperial Beast. His face stiffened. However, Lin Feng had turned into a beam of light and disappeared. He couldn't stop him anymore! He charged back into the Animal World and shouted furiously, “If you dare invade the Animal World, you'll die!”

Lin Feng headed to the mountain peak he remembered. He landed in front of a thatched hut, where someone was seated cross-legged, practicing cultivation. Lin Feng slowly walked forwards and smiled. At that moment, the person opened their eyes and frowned. A terrifying strength moved towards Lin Feng.

At the same time, someone shouted furiously in the distance. Many beasts hurried over there.

“Master, it's me, Lin Feng!” said Lin Feng to the person



telepathically.

That man's eyes twinkled and he shouted to the crowd, "Everybody go back!"

The beasts were stunned; they looked at Lin Feng sourly, but turned around and left. Lin Feng walked over to the man and sat down cross-legged. He took out some bottles of alcohol and gave one to the man. "Master, why are you looking at me like that?"

"Your disguise has reached the acme of perfection," replied the leader of the Animal World. "I really wonder if you're really Lin Feng."

Lin Feng laughed, he waved his hands and looked normal again. He raised his glass, both of them laughed and Lin Feng said, "After the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the Fortune Shrine gave me an illusion robe. I can change my face and my Qi, too. It's normal that you can't recognize me."

"Very good!" the man nodded. The Fortune Shrine was indeed thoughtful. Back then, Lin Feng was young, and he didn't draw people's attention too much. But these days, everything had changed, and the Fortune Shrine had to protect him.

"Lin Feng, you changed," sighed the old man. Lin Feng had changed in front of him, he didn't look at the old man with admiration and respect anymore, he looked at him in a comradely way, like an old friend he hadn't seen for a long time.

Lin Feng laughed. He had gone through so much. He had met the leader of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' World, and had learned a lot then and afterwards.

## Chapter 2265: Great Army

---

Lin Feng still remembered everything the old man had done for him, and he was still touched when thinking about it. Without the old man of the Animal World, Saint Shi Jue Lao Xian would have never helped Lin Feng in the Holy City when the four Ancient Holy Clans had encircled him, and later in Qi Tian Holy Town. He was still alive partly thanks to the old man.

However, at the top of the Huang Qi layer, many people had a countless number of friends and people willing to help them.

“Master,” said Lin Feng after remaining silent for a few seconds. He raised his glass, they toasted and downed their glasses, and Lin Feng asked, “Master, how is Qing Feng doing?”

“She’s in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. She went back to her clan. I don’t know how she is now,” said the old man.

Lin Feng’s eyes glittered and he said, “Back then, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there was a woman called Jing; was she really Qing Feng’s sister?”

“Jing?” the old man raised his head and looked at Lin Feng.

“She controls phoenix strength. She’s extremely strong. She has a phoenix necklace with imprints inside.”

“I see. You must be right. She must be Qing Feng’s sister; however, they have the same mother and different fathers,” said the old man. Lin Feng was a bit surprised; same mother, different fathers? It was usually the other way around, if they were half-sisters...

“I’ll tell you the truth; I’m Qing Feng’s biological father, and I’m not from the Vast Celestial Ancient City. I was born in the Supreme Animal World,” said the old man with some reluctance.

Lin Feng was startled. This old man came from the Supreme

## Animal World?

“Qing Feng’s mother is a woman from the Void Phoenix Clan in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Void Phoenix Clan’s members have real and genuine phoenix blood. They are very strong in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“Qing Feng is my only daughter. In the Supreme Animal World, I am not considered as a very strong cultivator. Therefore, I was expelled and left there. I will never be able to go back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. If Qing Feng’s mother hadn’t protected me, I would have died already,” said the old man slowly.

Lin Feng was astonished. Such a sad story!

“Jing and Qing Feng have the same mother, but different fathers; why did she come to find Qing Feng?”

“Because her mother is also Qing Feng’s mother. Their mother wants to see her daughters, and their mother has good relations with Jing.”

“I see...” whispered Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, if you go back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, go to the Void Phoenix Clan, and go see Qing Feng. She went to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds because of you, otherwise she wouldn’t have gone,” the old man sighed.

Lin Feng shivered. He remembered back then when she had gotten injured for him. She also wanted to finish in the top hundred... that was because she wanted to find another way to go to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? And she wanted to go there to stay with him...

When Lin Feng thought about that, he felt guilty again. He owed so many people! He felt like an ingrate.

“I have to sort some things out; I am about go to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Snow Clan and I agreed on a twenty-year period. I’ll also go and see Qing Feng,” Lin Feng informed the old man respectfully.

“Twenty years, time flies. Lin Feng, will you be alright?” asked the old man, smiling at Lin Feng.

“It’s not a big deal,” Lin Feng nodded. The old man’s eyes twinkled. Lin Feng was so self-confident. Besides, he didn’t understand Lin Feng’s cultivation, like he had no cultivation level anymore.

“Come,” said the old man, raising his glass and smiling. He was inwardly amazed, and he couldn’t help but think of Forbidden People; was Lin Feng a Forbidden Person?

---

In the Vast Celestial Ancient City, the Prince of Sadness had died, many people had been astonished, especially the Moon Palace. Many people started looking for Lin Feng. Deep within the Moon Palace, a beautiful woman raised her head; her eyes glittered, and her heart was pounding.

She thought of something: it seemed he was back. She fully remembered her previous humiliation. However, she had the impression everything was a dream.

She sensed his presence. He was near...

Behind her was a man with hair black as ink. He was standing there like her shadow. He said nothing.

“You’ve been feeling ill at ease these years,” his voice finally rose from behind her. His voice seemed to come from the netherworld.

The beautiful woman was surprised, her heart twitched.

“You’re being influenced by your clones?”

The woman frowned and said coldly, “That’s enough!”

The person behind her remained silent, sighing and walking away.

She was startled. She turned around and thought of something, running after him.

—

Duan Xin Ye was in her palace practicing cultivation. However, at that moment, a terrifying Qi filled the air and surrounded her chambers.

“Who’s that?” shouted Duan Xin Ye coldly. However, she heard music, and her face stiffened. She said, “Master of the Nine Netherworlds.”

Her chambers exploded with a loud boom, and Demon intent filled the air. Duan Xin Ye’s face changed drastically.

“Nine Netherworlds, stop!” said a voice coldly. Another woman arrived and shouted furiously, “If you kill her, I will never see you again!”

The Nine Netherworlds demon landed next to Duan Xin Ye and stared at her. However, he was a bit surprised and sighed.

The beautiful woman took a deep breath, sweating coldly. That guy was insane, he wanted to kill Duan Xin Ye! Luckily, she had reacted quickly.

Duan Xin Ye also had cold sweats. She looked at the Nine Netherworlds demon, never thinking he’d try to kill her.

“Xin Ye, don’t leave the Moon Palace.” said Empress Xi. Duan Xin Ye nodded. She didn’t know why, though.

—————

The Vast Celestial Ancient City was a gigantic city. After the Moon Palace and the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan had reappeared, nothing extraordinary had happened there until the news spread that Chu Chun Qiu, who was born there, had finished

third at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and Lin Feng, the one who had been abandoned by the gods, had finished first.

However, neither of them had returned since then...

A group of people had arrived outside of the city. The person at the very front of the group was a Taoist priest, seated on a cloud. He was holding a whisk and smiling.

“Vast Celestial Ancient City, the Great Emperor is back!” murmured the Taoist priest. Behind him were many other people. All of them were incredibly strong. Walking next to him was someone all in black.

“Teacher, why did Lin Feng call us here?” Fu Hei asked the old Taoist Priest.

“To fight, of course,” replied Yan Di.

“Fight? Against whom? He made us come back from so far away to fight?” said Fu Hei.

“Eh... he’s my disciple. He’s so strong thanks to me. Last time, at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he finished first, but he didn’t give me credit because I wasn’t there. But anyway, he’s my disciple, and I have to help him.” said Yan Di, scratching his beard and smiling thinly.

Fu Hei’s mouth twitched, but he was used to hearing such things. He said, “Indeed. You are extraordinarily talented, Teacher, so your disciples are incredible, too.”

“Indeed, you’re the only exception, though,” said Yan Di disdainfully. Then he added, “You’re a miserable disciple. You’re a disgrace. Without me, you’d still be a low-level emperor. Even though you’re extremely stupid, I went through lots of hardships to raise you and make you stronger, and finally I managed to make you a great emperor.

“You were extremely lucky to meet me. Maybe you’ve been good

in your previous lives!” Yan Di said calmly.

Fu Hei nodded and agreed obediently, “Without you, I wouldn’t even have become an emperor.”

“I educated you properly,” said Yan Di approvingly.

The two people were talking naturally. The people behind also seemed to find their conversation natural.

Down on the ground, many people raised their heads and watched them. They were astonished and started shaking at the power passing above.

—

A few hours later, many beasts arrived, their Qi terrifying. It rolled in waves and carried everything away, blotting out the sky. That group was composed of eighteen people. Their Qi shook everyone in the city.

“What’s going on? People above the lake of the Vast Celestial Ancient City were astonished, their hearts pounding. Was something big going to happen? Since that young man had come and killed the Prince of Sadness, some weird things were happening in the Vast Celestial Ancient City!

# Chapter 2266: Going Back to the Moon Palace

---

In the Animal World, Lin Feng's robe was fluttering in the wind at the top of a mountain. He gazed into the distance and saw a Taoist priest. He smiled thinly.

"Little boy, not bad. I can't even see how strong you are anymore. No wonder. I raised you," said Yan Di, looking at Lin Feng happily. Apart from the old man of the Animal World, Yan Di was the only person who knew Lin Feng was a Forbidden Person. Even though he was curious and didn't understand what it meant, he didn't think about it too much.

"Old buddy, as humble as before, I see," Lin Feng smiled. He nodded at Yan Di and Fu Hei. He also looked over the group of people behind Yan Di. Even though there weren't many people, they were all very old, and they had all studied the Rebirth Scriptures; they were really strong.

Yan Di looked at Lin Feng and said, "You had me come back to fight against the Moon Palace; do you know who supports the Moon Palace?"

"Are those stories about the Three Lives Great Emperor true?" Lin Feng asked. Back then, in Xue Yue, Lin Feng had read the word: Goddess, Empress Xi's Grave. Yan Di had said he had robbed it and that he had then been chased, but he hadn't revealed everything, Lin Feng knew.

Of course, Yan Di used to be the prince of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan, and back then the Three-Lives Emperor had destroyed the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan. Their relations were complex.

"The Three-Lives Emperor loved her, that's true," said Yan Di nodding. First mystery solved: he loved her...

"How strong is the Three Lives Great Emperor?" asked Lin Feng.



“Nobody can be stronger in this world,” said Yan Di calmly. Lin Feng’s heart began to race. The Three Lives Great Emperor was so terrifying?

“I see. So why did Empress Xi die back then, when the Moon Palace was destroyed?” asked Lin Feng.

“Because Empress Xi hates the Three-Lives Emperor,” replied Yan Di, “She would never ask him for help. She hopes that someday she’ll surpass him and kill him.”

Lin Feng’s heart was pounding. What an incredible story! But Lin Feng didn’t really care. He just knew that the Moon Palace had to be destroyed.

“So, if the Three-Lives Emperor doesn’t show up, the Moon Palace will be destroyed,” said Lin Feng indifferently. “I had you come to ask you for something, too.”

“It’s ready,” said Yan Di, giving a jade talisman to Lin Feng. Lin Feng put his godly awareness inside and glanced at Yan Di. This guy understood Lin Feng; the talisman contained the Rebirth Scriptures. He already knew Lin Feng wanted to ask him for them.

“Old buddy, thank you very much!” smiled Lin Feng. Even though Yan Di was annoying sometimes, he was incredibly generous; the Rebirth Scriptures were precious to Lin Feng.

“When will you be ready to attack?” asked Yan Di.

“Since we’re all ready, tomorrow. The Moon Palace must be destroyed,” said Lin Feng calmly. He gazed into the distance.

Xin Ye was probably in the Moon Palace. He was wondering what to do with Empress Xi.

Yan Di nodded. One day passed quickly...

—————

The Vast Celestial Ancient City seemed as peaceful and calm as always. Nothing happened. However, a hundred li away from the

Ice-Moon Lake, a group of people wearing black robes appeared. All those people were wearing dark clothes and nobody could see their faces. They looked mysterious, their Qi bestial and powerful.

They were waiting.

At the same time, in the pavilions above the Ice-Moon Lake, there were many young women dancing and young men who were watching them. Even the women who weren't from the Moon Palace looked beautiful. All the men there were staring at those women. They were all outstanding and attractive.

"How come there are so many people today?" asked someone out on a boat.

"Some celestial women from the Moon Palace are coming, so there are always more men when they show up."

"Which one?"

"A few. We're lucky to be able to see them," The crowd looked impatient. The celestial women of the Moon Palace were extremely famous for their beauty.

The crowd didn't notice that a young man had arrived, staring at the lake. In the pavilions, the beautiful women were still dancing. Back then, when he was here, the gods had abandoned him. He had temporarily lost hope.

However, he had gotten back onto his feet and had continued fighting. Now, he had changed a lot... so many years had passed.

He remembered that, but he didn't feel sad at all. He was just calm and composed.

When he saw someone come out of the pavilion, he shivered. He had never forgotten.

A passionate night, a couple for a hundred days, such beautiful memories. Even if Lin Feng had gone through a lot in life, he couldn't forget her.

Yi Ren Lei was even more beautiful than before. Her Qi was dimly discernible. She smiled knowingly. She was bewitching, even in the middle of all those incredibly beautiful women, like a goddess.

---

Empress Xi gazed into the distance and asked, “Is he here?”

---

At the same time, Duan Xin Ye was in her new chambers, and her heart was pounding. She sensed something, and Empress Xi didn’t want her to come out.

---

Empress Xi came out.

Outside, the atmosphere was lively. However, some people raised their heads and gazed into the distance.

“How beautiful, who’s that?”

“Empress Xi, the leader of the Moon Palace!”

“Empress Xi came out, and with so many beautiful women behind her, too!” Everybody was looking at them. Empress Xi was walking slowly, and arrived in front of the pavilion in which Yi Ren Lei and the others were. She studied the edge of the lake, looking for someone.

Finally, she noticed Lin Feng.

Lin Feng’s eyes gleamed. Empress Xi could recognize him?

Actually, it was her instinct.

Empress Xi looked at Lin Feng and he also looked back at her calmly. She couldn’t see how strong he was...

“You came back,” Empress Xi said suddenly. Everybody turned and looked at Lin Feng. Who was this guy? Surprisingly, Empress Xi came out personally to see him.

“I’m back,” Lin Feng nodded. She had indeed recognized him.

“Back then, I could have killed you, but I wasn’t cruel enough,” Empress Xi sighed. She didn’t know why she had never killed him.

Lin Feng knew she was right, but he said, “You missed your chance. Now, you’ll never have the opportunity ever again.”

“Is that so?” asked Empress Xi. His cultivation level was hidden. She didn’t know how strong he was. In twenty years, could Lin Feng have become strong enough to compete with her?

Behind Empress Xi, Yi Ren Lei’s heart was pounding. How familiar a voice, her heart started pounding. Was it him...?

“You’ve become extremely self-confident since you finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” said Empress Xi calmly. People’s hearts pounded even more furiously.

First at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?!?!

Ten years before, in the top three of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, two cultivators were from the Dark Night Region, one was even from the Vast Celestial Ancient City, and the other one had amazed the Vast Celestial Ancient City at some point in his life.

One of them had been abandoned by the gods back then by the lake. He hadn’t been cleansed by the cosmic energies of the earth and sky. There were many legends about him, even children could tell those stories.

Was he back? Was it him?

Everybody looked at Lin Feng in a different way. That guy was Lin Feng?

Yi Ren Lei’s heart was pounding even more. That was Lin Feng?

Lin Feng didn’t admit who he was, but he didn’t deny it, either. He just looked at Empress Xi calmly and said, “I came to destroy the Moon Palace today.”

“Destroy the Moon Palace? How audacious!” murmured the crowd. Even if he was Lin Feng, that was too arrogant! The Moon Palace was extremely strong, they were more powerful than Ancient Holy Clans!

Empress Xi’s eyes glittered. Destroy the Moon Palace? “What makes you feel so confident?” she asked indifferently.

## Chapter 2267: Heaven Clan's Appearance

---

Lin Feng looked back at Empress Xi calmly. He knew that Empress Xi had given up everything, had died and sealed herself in the Three Lives Scriptures. She was stubborn. She wouldn't dismantle the Moon Palace willingly.

A strong wind started blowing. People appeared on the horizon. The atmosphere became oppressive.

"Celestial Evolution Holy Clan?" Empress Xi was startled. She saw Yan Di, her eyes glittering, and said, "You think a few cripples can destroy the Moon Palace?"

"The Moon Palace will disappear from the Vast Celestial Ancient City," said the old man of the Animal World in the distance. A group of terrifying beasts also appeared.

"Animal World, aren't you afraid of the consequences?" asked Empress Xi coldly.

"I dissolved the Animal World, I am free and unfettered now," said the old man indifferently. Empress Xi was astonished.

Shooting sounds cut through the air, and more people in black robes appeared. Their Qi was bestial. They were terrifyingly strong beasts, including some Celestial Imperial Beasts, their Qi was terrifying. Who could compete with them?

"What a terrifying army. Since Lin Feng ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, three influential groups agreed to help him destroy the Moon Palace."

"It's the Moon Palace's Judgement Day."

When Empress Xi saw this, she remained silent. The celestial women of the Moon Palace were staring at Lin Feng, especially Yi Ren Lei. She remembered back in the days when they used to make love in the snow. Lin Feng was already obstinate and unruly back then. Now, he had progressed so much. In less than twenty years,

he had become so strong that he could land in front of the Moon Palace with an army, how domineering!

Lin Feng had changed so much. He now looked calm, aloof, and self-confident.

“Go and kill him!” ordered Empress Xi coldly. Instantly, a few celestial women ran forwards to kill him. They were all great emperors already, and they all knew many terrifying ancient scriptures, spells, skills, and techniques, and they all had their own Dao already. Their Qi surrounded Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at those women calmly. He absorbed all the Dao which surrounded him. The women sensed that, and were astonished. Now, they could also sense the terrifying strength in Lin Feng’s body.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng aggressively. He released a terrifying Dao strength which thundered out, his voice also carrying an explosive, ancient strength. He instantly destroyed their attacks and injured them.

Everybody was trembling, especially when they saw the celestial women of the Moon Palace cough up blood. They looked so weak in front of Lin Feng. Many men wanted to avenge them, and attack Lin Feng.

Screams kept spreading in the air. The celestial women fell down from the sky one after the other, their faces as pale as sheets of paper. They couldn’t compete with Lin Feng. He was terrifyingly strong, and he could kill them easily.

Empress Xi looked at him coldly. She realized Lin Feng had changed completely. He was terrifyingly strong now, not a weak little boy anymore.

“According to rumors, ten years after the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Chu Chun Qiu is practicing cultivation in the Supreme Animal World. He’s practicing really

hard, and now he's become a Celestial Emperor. Now Lin Feng, the First Emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, has become a terrifying fighter," muttered many people after seeing his voice attack. He hadn't only come back with a powerful army, he had also become incredibly strong!

A terrifying Qi emerged from the Moon Palace. Many people rose up into the air, their energies rumbling as they were unleashed. Their Qi was impressive, especially Chu the Insane's. He was a descendant of King Chu, one of the two most outstanding geniuses in the history of the Chu Clan. If he hadn't gone insane, the Moon Palace wouldn't have been able to control him. But it didn't matter now, because Chu Chun Qiu had already surpassed Chu the Insane by far.

"The Moon Palace has always had talented individuals in hiding. Those people are really strong. They're all Celestial Emperors, at least."

"They're controlled by the Moon Palace, they have no way to free themselves."

"Dear friends, if you help us today, the Moon Palace will give you many ancient Scriptures, and we'll also let you get married to our celestial women," Empress Xi offered at that moment calmly. Many men were immediately aroused. However, against such terrifying cultivators, ordinary people couldn't do much.

"This is between the Moon Palace and me, Lin Feng. If anyone helps them, I'll kill them instantly," said Lin Feng calmly. His Qi surged around him. It seemed like a great war was on the verge of breaking out.

Many strong cultivators had gathered around the Ice-Moon Lake. Even some people from powerful groups were there. Their elders had informed them about the situation, so they had come to watch. When they heard Empress Xi, they were excited for a few seconds, but most people didn't want to get involved in the end. The



enemies were too scary.

—

However, some people still had some thoughts, such as the members of the Heaven Clan.

Cang Ling was in the crowd, and staring at Lin Feng coldly. Back in the days, he had chased Lin Feng, trying to kill him. However, he hadn't had the opportunity. Lin Feng had become so strong, so quickly! He needed to get rid of him as soon as possible now; if Lin Feng broke through to the Tian Di layer, he wouldn't be able to kill him anymore. If the Heaven Clan helped the Moon Palace, they'd probably kill Lin Feng!

Lin Feng finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and he's a member of the Fortune Shrine. Now he's a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine. I need to get rid of him. If he dies outside, the Fortune Shrine won't avenge him I hope; they'll just say he was too weak if he died outside, right?, thought Cang Ling, before looking at the Saint Emperor of the Heaven Clan. "Uncle, we don't like Lin Feng, we can't let him become stronger. We must get rid of him now, it's an opportunity!"

"What do we do if the Fortune Shrine comes to avenge him?" said the Saint Emperor.

"I'll kill him. If the Fortune Shrine comes, I'll say I killed him," said Cang Ling coldly. He had to stamp out the source of trouble, and kill Lin Feng!

"Uncle, the Moon Palace is powerful, you know that; we can collaborate with them. It would be great for the Heaven Clan. You know Lin Feng has to die!" continued Cang Ling.

"As you wish," said the old man, but he hesitated. Lin Feng had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and he was now a member of the Fortune Shrine. Killing him was dangerous. But if they didn't kill him, Lin Feng might remember

them and come and destroy them, especially that now he wanted to destroy the Moon Palace.

—

An old man called out to Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, my boy.”

“Eh?” Lin Feng turned around and saw an old man, standing behind Cang Ling. Lin Feng said coldly, “Heaven Clan?”

“Yes, Lin Feng, my boy. Back then, tensions arose between you and my clan. It was all my fault, let’s forget about those things? I’m really old now,” said the old man.

Lin Feng understood what the old man was thinking. He looked at him and the strong cultivators behind him. He smiled coldly inside. If he refused, what would happen? How sly!

“We’ll talk about that after I’m done with the Moon Palace,” said Lin Feng calmly. They posed a big threat to him.

The man shook his head, “I hope you can hurry and make up your mind.”

“I know you want me to refuse, and I do, I refuse!” said Lin Feng aggressively and sharply.

The old man released his Qi and said, “Since it’s that way, the Heaven Clan will join hands with the Moon Palace!”

“I had forgotten about the Heaven Clan at the beginning. I just remembered Cang Ling. I didn’t expect the Heaven Clan would get involved. Foolish!” said Lin Feng coldly. The strong cultivators of the Heaven Clan were stunned. Lin Feng had forgotten about the Heaven Clan? They had just reminded him of their existence? Now they were enemies? Now, they had to kill him, they had reached a point of no return!

“Cang Ling, he’s yours, slaughter him!” the old man said to Cang Ling telepathically. Cang Ling nodded, staring at Lin Feng, his eyes filled with murder!

# Chapter 2268: Lin Feng's Fighting Abilities

---

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Cang Ling: a Celestial Emperor, and a strong kind of Celestial Emperor. After all, he had broken through to that cultivation layer a long time ago.

Cang Ling was standing in the sky. He shot forwards and released an oppressive strength around Lin Feng. He said coldly, "First Emperor of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? So what? You'll die here now!"

He shouted furiously and lashed out; heavenly hands appeared and blotted out the sky, reaching towards Lin Feng, trying to crush him.

At the same time, Cang Ling wasn't assured, so he continued racing towards Lin Feng while releasing terrifying Heaven cosmic energies.

Lin Feng raised his hands and punched Cang Ling's fists. There was an eruption as their fists collided, the heavenly hands exploded. The crowd was astonished; Lin Feng's fighting abilities were incredible. He could easily destroy a Celestial Emperor's attacks!

Cang Ling descended from the sky and moved towards Lin Feng. Clouds appeared and a strong wind started blowing, fluttering Lin Feng's hair and robe. He could sense how strong the energies were.

The ground exploded, and many people ran away. Some strong cultivators were too close and exploded. Blood gushed everywhere. That attack was purely physical, and it had crushed them and their souls. Lin Feng looked small amid that rain of flesh and blood.

At that moment, the atmosphere changed. Cang Ling realized that everything was changing around them, as if they had ended up in another world. Suddenly, he was a great distance from Lin Feng.

He shattered the confining space, and finally, Lin Feng reappeared normally at the same distance as him, so he ran withdraw. The Great Empty Space Technique had been broken instantly by Cang Ling.

“Eh?” Cang Ling looked around, the others were not there. He exclaimed, “Territory strength?”

“It’s not territory strength, it’s a world,” said Lin Feng calmly. There was nothing but beautiful mountains and rivers around them. However, they weren’t in the outside world, they were in Lin Feng’s world.

“A world?” Cang Ling frowned, staring at Lin Feng, “How is that possible? You probably used a Great Imperial Weapon!”

“Indeed, but that weapon is now surrounding us. We’re in a remote world now,” said Lin Feng. Cang Ling didn’t believe him. However, he was there to kill Lin Feng, not to think!

“No matter what, I’ll kill you!” said Cang Ling coldly. He ran forwards, his Dao strength surging up... however, he realized that his Heaven strength didn’t work here!

“Since I’ve broken through to this mysterious cultivation layer, I haven’t really fought. We’ll see what it’s like,” said Lin Feng calmly. Around him, there was no spirit, no shadow, only strength which started condensing. He was a god in this world. He controlled everything, he was at the heart of every kind of strength, every kind of cosmic energy.

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards; he was walking, but he was extremely fast. Cang Ling sensed a terrifying strength.

Since I’ve leveled up and broken through to this mysterious cultivation layer?

There was the Di Qi layer after the Huang Qi layer, wasn’t there?

Lin Feng didn’t know what it meant to be a Forbidden Person; he had no cultivation level? He wasn’t sure, he just couldn’t explain

it. His Dao, however, had finally become complete. It contained all sorts of strength, all sorts of cosmic energies, the strength of the ten thousand things of creation. He was like a god in his world!

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards and suddenly disappeared. Cang Ling's heart started pounding. After that, a shadow appeared and grew in front of him. He only saw a fist moving towards his head, it contained death sword strength as well as cursing and soundwave strength. Cang Ling felt hopeless.

“No!...” shouted Cang Ling desperately. Why? How? How is this possible? Cang Ling condensed a terrifying Heaven Dao strength in his fist, exploding against the incoming force. Lin Feng had disappeared already, and Cang ling's attack instantly broke apart. His face turned deathly pale as panic set in. He forgot how to fight at that moment. He even forgot he was a Celestial Emperor!

Actually, even though Lin Feng had broken through, the speed at which he became stronger was still limited. Before breaking through, he could easily kill Celestial Emperors, and afterwards, his cultivation had become more stable and he had become slightly stronger. Now, he was about as strong as a cultivator at the top of the Tian Di layer.

Of course, apart from his attacks, Lin Feng's body and his special strength had also increased. In his dreams, he had been bombarded by dark lightning. He had a special kind of strength in his body now, and he had used it when the celestial women had attacked him before.

In addition, his physical strength was still incredible, he had the physical strength of a Celestial Emperor too. Even though Lin Feng had no cultivation level, his strength could be compared to the strength of someone who had the strength at the top of the Tian Di Layer. With such strength, he could easily kill Cang Ling.

Another terrifying strength bombarded Cang Ling, he was smashed brutally away. However, Lin Feng reappeared in front of

him. When Cang Ling saw how calm and composed Lin Feng looked, he was even more terrified.

“I thought you were definitely going to kill me?” said Lin Feng calmly. His voice resonated in Cang Ling’s head. “I will show you what strength is!” Terrifying lights appeared and moved towards Cang Ling.

“Roar!” Cang Ling shouted furiously. He condensed more heaven strength, but he didn’t control strength in there. He released as much strength as he could, it turned into a terrifying cloud of Dao.

Lin Feng moved as fast as lightning, raising his fist and condensing strength in it. Nine Words appeared around him, he used his celestial stage deployment spell, and he condensed deployment spell forbidden lightnings, too.

Cang Ling’s Heaven fist broke apart instantly and he retreated. However, Lin Feng was too fast. A terrifying punch struck him and pierced through his neck. His back was turned to Lin Feng, and he saw a fist appear in front of his head; it had pierced through his neck from behind and out the other side. Lin Feng’s fist was like a sword.

He looked hopeless. How, how was this possible? He was completely powerless in front of Lin Feng, and Lin Feng could easily destroy him!

“You wanted to die,” Lin Feng told him evenly, and then punched his head again.

——

In the outside world, a great war had started. Where Lin Feng was, a curtain made of illusion strength had appeared, and nobody knew what was going on inside. That illusion had the shape of Fortune City!

The illusion began to disperse. Many people suddenly turned around and saw Lin Feng appear... and he was alone.

“Cang Ling...” The crowd frowned. Lin Feng stood there with his hands clasped behind his back.

“Lin Feng killed Cang Ling...?” blurted out many people, shocked. Cang Ling was terrifyingly strong, a public figure in the Vast Celestial Ancient City. However, he had disappeared, and probably been killed!

“He must have used a precious treasure!” hissed some people. Lin Feng’s fighting abilities couldn’t be as terrifying as Chu Chun Qiu’s...

The strong cultivators of the Heaven Clan grimaced. Lin Feng was back, and Cang Ling was probably dead since he wasn’t there.

In the distance, some strong cultivators appeared; they were from the Heaven Clan, and were furious. “Who killed my son Cang Ling?”

When the crowd heard that, they shivered. As expected, Cang Ling was dead, and his father had arrived.

“Lin Feng, you want to die!” swore Cang Ling’s uncle coldly. A huge army of the Heaven Clan had arrived; they were going to help the Moon Palace and destroy these people.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng grunted coldly. He wanted to see how strong the Heaven Clan could be. Apart from the strongest of them, the rest were only cannon fodder!!!

# Chapter 2269: I'll Keep You As A Slave

---

Everybody had moved far away from the Ice-Moon Lake. The atmosphere was explosive, and the battles were deadly, nobody dared stay there.

Lin Feng didn't even look at the Heaven Clan's members; the Ancient Holy Clans of the Vast Celestial Ancient City were too weak. Even if the Heaven Clan had a Saint Emperor, it didn't matter because he was alone. Three of Lin Feng's Protectors who were Celestial Imperial Beasts could join hands and easily defeat an ordinary Saint Emperor like the one from the Heaven Clan. Even some of the Celestial Emperors of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan were terrifying.

Therefore, the Heaven Clan didn't frighten Lin Feng. Lin Feng was standing on the edge of the Ice-Moon Lake. He looked at the beautiful woman, Empress Xi, and the Nine Netherworlds Emperor was like her shadow.

"Without you, the Moon Palace can't exist," Lin Feng said to Empress Xi calmly. He released Qi in a great pulse.

The Nine Netherworlds Emperor jumped in front of Empress Xi without hesitation.

"Good Heavens, the Nine Netherworlds Emperor. Back in the days, we were a bit famous. We've both died once, and now, here we meet again. Let's see who's become stronger between you and me," said Yan Di calmly. They had both died in the past, especially the Nine Netherworlds Emperor. Without the Rebirth Scriptures, he would just be a thread of consciousness.

The Nine Netherworlds Emperor looked at Yan Di, the Source of the Nine Netherworlds appeared in his eyes. He started singing the Nine Netherworlds Song, soundwaves surrounded Yan Di.

A huge sun appeared behind Yan Di, dazzling and scorching hot.



The Nine Netherworlds strength started burning.

The Nine Netherworlds Emperor and Yan Di moved towards each other. The water of the Ice-Moon Lake churned beneath them. Very quickly, only Lin Feng and Empress Xi were left on the ground.

“Empress Xi, you stole my wife. I’ll keep you as a slave, it will be deep love between you and me,” said Lin Feng evenly.

Empress Xi’s face shifted. A cold Qi filled the air around her, emotionless Dao power, and moved towards Lin Feng. This bastard dared say he wanted to keep her as a slave for deep love?

“Show me if you’re strong enough to talk to me,” said Empress Xi coldly. She flashed away, and emotionless strength swept out. Lin Feng sensed her emotionless strength, and suddenly felt ice-cold.

Empress Xi accelerated, landing in front of Lin Feng. Her emotionless strength turned into a terrifying sword. She wanted to cut apart Lin Feng’s body and soul, freeze him so hard his blood stopped flowing.

Lin Feng’s godly awareness started intertwining. A dazzling golden light flashed. Lin Feng stretched out his hand, also releasing a sharp sword. Their strength collided and exploded.

Empress Xi disappeared and after that, the crowd saw many Empress Xi’s shadows everywhere. How beautiful...

Lin Feng glanced at them, and the atmosphere around them changed, the Fortune City illusion came down again.

Lin Feng walked forwards, the strength of the ten thousand things of creation turned into Life and Death Dao. His Dao strength fused together with his forbidden strength and surrounded everything. There were cracking sounds as Empress Xi’s shadows broke apart one after another. Only her real body was left. She was so beautiful, but at that moment, the death energies had corroded her body.

His Death Dao has reached the maximum level, he also controls a terrifying kind of destructive strength, thought Empress Xi, shaking. How was that possible? How had Lin Feng become so strong? She was a genius, too! She was extremely strong back then when Lin Feng was young and weak, how had he surpassed her?

“You hate me that much?” Empress Xi asked Lin Feng. She sighed, her emotionless strength disappeared.

Lin Feng frowned. Empress Xi said calmly, “My two clones are your wives. They’ve seen you grow up, however, we had no choice but to be enemies. You know how I feel?”

Lin Feng was astonished as he stared at Empress Xi. Xin Ye and Qiu Yue Xin were his wives, they loved him, and Empress Xi had always sensed it. Lin Feng hadn’t known that.

Empress Xi slowly descended to the ground. Suddenly, Lin Feng saw Xin Ye and Qiu Yue Xin, two illusions.

“You studied the Three Lives Scriptures, you must know that what they’ve experienced, I experienced too. I don’t want to be your enemy, you know?” Empress Xi said to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded, he sensed that she had feelings.

Empress Xi looked at Lin Feng’s face, he had the impression she was his wife, too.

At that moment, Lin Feng’s heart softened. He almost forgot he hated her.

However, at that moment, he sensed danger. A deadly emotionless strength shot towards him, like a sharp sword. However, he could still see love in her eyes... something was wrong.

“Emotion Dao.” Lin Feng was astonished, Empress Xi knew both emotionless and emotion Dao!

A terrifying emotionless strength crashed onto Lin Feng’s body.

But Empress Xi's face suddenly changed, because she realized that Lin Feng's body was extremely hard. Her energies couldn't pierce through his skin.

Lin Feng had condensed gold cosmic energies!

"When did you study gold type cosmic energies?" Empress Xi's face stiffened. She thought she understood Lin Feng's cultivation because Qiu Yue Xin had always been with him. She knew his weaknesses!

Therefore, she had given up Emotionless Dao and had studied Emotion Dao. Initially, it wasn't on purpose, it was because she really loved him.

Lin Feng was sane and determined. He could still sense her emotions, but they were fake.

Because of that, she had had the opportunity to attack. Even if the strength hadn't destroyed him, as long as it could pierce through him, that would have been fine, but it hadn't.

Gold cosmic energies were almost indestructible, but why did Lin Feng know gold cosmic energies?

"I understand the cosmic energies of the five elements," said Lin Feng calmly. His hands grabbed Empress Xi, and he hugged her. He released overwhelming destructive death strength and forbidden strength, which penetrated into her body.

Empress Xi's face was frozen. She didn't dare move.

"Let me go!" she cried out. She never thought she'd fail so miserably. Lin Feng's physical strength and gold type strength were just too incredible. She couldn't injure him at all!

Lin Feng was tightly hugging her. Empress Xi released a massive Emotionless intent.

Lin Feng firmly held her, smiling, and said, "Indeed, Xin Ye and Yue Xin are my wives. Tell me, what can I do regarding the

connection you have to them?”

Empress Xi's face slightly changed. She looked at Lin Feng's smile, she had the impression she was going insane, she struggled to get away.

“You're so beautiful, you'll be my love slave, how nice!” said Lin Feng with a smile. He started kissing Empress Xi's mouth. She was petrified, her face all pale. Her eyes rolled helplessly.

“You'll die!” she shouted furiously. She released a terrifying Qi, but Lin Feng countered with a massive death strength which brought her come back to her senses. She had made a mistake, she had released emotion strength, it was too late to regret.

“You know about everything that happened between my wives and me. I will keep you as a love slave,” said Lin Feng, smiling heartlessly.

Empress Xi was scared to death. She whispered, “Try and dare.”

“Why wouldn't I dare?” said Lin Feng, “You'll become my love slave. That way, you won't be able to make my wives leave me, because you'll stand by me like a good girl.”

“If you dare touch me, I'll kill you!” said Empress Xi, releasing more and more emotionless Qi.

“Will you feel like leaving me then, though?” Lin Feng asked coldly, “I'll first take you to my world. I will do exactly what I said.”

After that, they appeared in another world...

—

In the outside world, the Nine Netherworlds Emperor and Yan Di were fighting. The Nine Netherworlds Emperor could still oppress Yan Di, but he was worried about Empress Xi. He looked at the Fortune City illusion and said, “Destroy the illusion!”

The strong cultivators of the Moon Palace rushed over. However,

the strong cultivators of the Animal World and the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan could stop them. They surrounded them, but at that moment, the illusion disappeared.

# Chapter 2270: The Moon Palace Dismantled!

---

The crowd watched the city illusion disappear, and Lin Feng reappeared. Lin Feng was alone, Empress Xi had disappeared...

“Alright, everybody can disperse,” said Lin Feng indifferently. Everybody stopped fighting. Many strong cultivators looked at Lin Feng. Had Lin Feng killed Empress Xi?

Without Empress Xi, could the Moon Palace exist?

A terrifying strength charged towards Lin Feng. Sky Absorbing strength surrounded him, Chu the Insane shot towards Lin Feng.

“Hmph!” The old man of the Animal World grunted coldly and jumped in front of him, they collided. At the same time, a strong cultivator of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan jumped forwards, and they encircled Chu the Insane.

The Nine Netherworlds Song resonated in Lin Feng’s brain. A pair of pitch-black eyes stared at him.

“Nine Netherworlds Master, so many years have passed, wake up. Why act like that?” Lin Feng said to the Netherworld Demon Emperor. Lin Feng also released Nine Netherworlds strength.

The Netherworld Demon Emperor had transmitted the Nine Netherworlds Song to Lin Feng many years ago...

“Master, you transmitted the Nine Netherworlds Song to me back then, but you used the Rebirth Scriptures to come back to life, and your cultivation is restricted. You can’t do much to me. Forget about it,” said Lin Feng calmly.

The Netherworld Demon Emperor raced towards Lin Feng, releasing Nine Netherworlds strength towards Lin Feng. However, at the same time, Lin Feng released restriction, death Dao, and Nine Netherworlds strength.

“How miserable.” Lin Feng walked forwards like a god. He suddenly disappeared and reappeared in front of the Nine Netherworlds Emperor. Dazzling lights flared blindingly. The Nine Netherworlds Emperor and Lin Feng collided.

The Emperor groaned with pain. His body felt numb. Lin Feng’s fighting abilities were terrifying many people.

Lin Feng had ranked first at the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He had disappeared for so many years and now that he was back, his fighting abilities had become even more terrifying. He was even stronger than Chu Chun Qiu who, according to legends, had a Forbidden Body!

The Fortune Shrine had done that on purpose, many people believed that Chu Chun Qiu, who practiced cultivation in the Supreme Animal World, had a Forbidden Body...

The Netherworld Demon Emperor was knocked away by Lin Feng. The Netherworld Demon Emperor looked at Lin Feng coldly, and threw himself at Lin Feng again.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng groaned coldly. He shouted furiously, “World of the Living Imprints!”

Imprints appeared, a death world appeared and surrounded his opponent. The Netherworld Demon Emperor had used the Rebirth Scriptures to come back to life, his strength wasn’t as good as back in the old days, he couldn’t compete with Lin Feng. The World of the Living Imprints contained death strength, they pounded the Netherworld Demon Emperor.

His organs twitched violently and he was driven back again. Some of his organs exploded, and he coughed up blood. His face turned grey.

The Nine Netherworlds Emperor looked at Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s attacks contained an incredible amount of strength, he was like a god of the ten thousand things of creation. How confusing, how

complex! He never thought that this young man would ever become this strong. On top of that, he had killed Empress Xi!

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the other battles. He rose up higher in the air. He shot towards the Saint Emperor of the Heaven Clan. At that moment, three terrifying Celestial Imperial Beasts were fighting against the Heaven Clan's Saint Emperor, he was encircled.

"Die!" shouted Lin Feng. The three Celestial Imperial Beasts had terrifying fighting abilities. The Heaven Clan's Saint Emperor wasn't a very strong Saint Emperor, bestial Qi had filled the air and surrounded him. Golden lights flashed as they fought against him.

The Saint Emperor shouted furiously. He released Heaven strength, which turned into an armor and protected him. At the same time, he punched out all around him.

The earth and sky were trembling. Lin Feng released the strength of the ten thousand things of creation, and deployment marks started intertwining. Holy Spirits appeared as an ancient Qi filled the air. All those kinds of strength fused together in his hands.

I know, I'll call you Godly Dao, and my cultivation level, I will call you God Level. Now, it's only the early stage. With my body, I can control every kind of strength, and I will keep becoming stronger, thought Lin Feng. He released forbidden strength, which condensed into his hands as well. He disappeared and reappeared in front of the Saint Emperor.

The Saint Emperor stared at Lin Feng; he condensed heaven strength in his hands, as if he controlled the strength of Heaven and Earth, then he punched out in Lin Feng's direction.

The earth and sky crackled. Their fists collided, a terrifying strength exploded. Many people around sensed those terrifying energies. Could Lin Feng compete with a Saint Emperor too?!



“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. A terrifying death strength penetrated into his opponent’s body. His strength pressed forward with an indomitable will. The man felt horribly oppressed. At the same time, the three Celestial Imperial Beasts also attacked, and the Heaven Clan’s strong cultivator’s face turned deathly pale.

A dazzling fire sword appeared and pierced through the Saint Emperor’s head. Many Heaven Ancient Imprints appeared, but a great roc released sword strength which cut apart his imprints and destroyed them. At the same time, the two other terrifying Celestial Imperial Beasts also used their most powerful attacks.

Energies exploded catastrophically. The Saint Emperor looked hopeless; he was staring at Lin Feng, his eyes bloodshot.

“Ah...” he gave up everything, and released all his Heaven strength towards Lin Feng. He just wanted to kill Lin Feng, he didn’t care about the others anymore.

The energy of the ten thousand things of creation became golden, Lin Feng took out his plaited bamboo hat and cloak from the Fortune Shrine and put them on. The terrifying Ancient Imprints contained sword strength and struck Lin Feng.

However, the attack was not effective at all. The golden great roc’s sword pierced through the opponent’s head, and at the same time, the two other beasts also attacked his head. They tore apart his skull, then ripped him in two at his waist, before tearing his body into several parts.

Lin Feng smashed the skull violently. The Saint Emperor was resistant, and killing him wasn’t easy. Lin Feng used a godly attack. The crowd was astonished when they saw those three beasts and that human being attack the Saint Emperor, their faces frozen in disbelief.

Impossible... Their hearts were pounding furiously. He was done, dead. When the Saint Emperor died, the other members of the Heaven Clan were suddenly terrified.

After he disappeared, Lin Feng and the others glanced at the battlefield coldly for a moment, then continued moving. They went after another Saint Emperor. That Saint Emperor retreated, and immediately fled.

The last Saint Emperor wanted to escape, as well. It wasn't easy to become a Saint Emperor, how could he take risks?

Two Saint Emperors were fleeing. The battle was becoming easier and easier. After killing the Heaven Clan's Saint Emperors, only those controlled by the Moon Palace were left; they were among the strongest cultivators of the Moon Palace. Back then, the Ancient Holy Clans were under the command of the Moon Palace; now, the Animal World and the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan had dismantled the Moon Palace.

The Palace had no influence anymore, and the celestial women of the Moon Palace were not strong enough to fight them.

—

Lin Feng was standing in the sky, he looked at the celestial women and the others and said, "You have the time needed to burn a joss stick to leave. The Moon Palace doesn't exist anymore."

Yi Ren Lei raised her head and looked at Lin Feng. Back then, when he was here by the lake, he looked hopeless. And now... he had dismantled the Moon Palace!

Lin Feng walked towards the Moon Palace, releasing his godly awareness and inspecting every single corner of it. His silhouette flickered, and very quickly, he found the main palace. He opened all the rooms and quickly found a beautiful woman.

"Lin Feng!" Duan Xin Ye was astonished when she saw him. Her eyes instantly became red, her vision blurry. Finally, the figure she had seen in her dreams was here!

"Xin Ye!" Lin Feng's silhouette flickered, he immediately jumped out and took her hand.

Xin Ye felt so sad, she said to Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, I might not be able to control myself anymore soon.”

“No. I imprisoned Empress Xi,” said Lin Feng, caressing her cheeks, “Let’s go out.”

—

He brought Xin Ye outside. He turned about and released destructive strength, destroying the Moon Palaces.

Outside, the atmosphere had calmed down. Apart from Chu the Insane and some others, everybody had almost left.

A terrifying attack struck Chu the Insane, and more people encircled him. He shouted furiously and turned into a beam of light, escaping.

Nobody prevented him from leaving. Without Empress Xi, the Moon Palace didn’t exist anymore.

The battle was over, but the watcher’s hearts kept pounding violently. So many terrifying people had died, especially the strong cultivators of the Heaven Clan. It had been a tragedy for them!

Yi Ren Lei and the Netherworld Demon Emperor were still there. Lin Feng just glanced at them, and afterwards he said to his friends, “Master, old buddy, come with me, we’re going to destroy the Heaven Clan.”

“Alright!” said the old man of the Animal World agreeably. Lin Feng waved, and the eighteen beasts in black clothes and the old leader of the Animal World followed him. They were on their way to the Heaven Clan!

The people on the ground were astonished. How dreadful, the Heaven Clan was going to be destroyed!

## Chapter 2271: What Are Emotions?

---

Lin Feng was standing in the sky, his robe fluttering in the wind. The one who used to be a weak young man now had the potential to become a peerless cultivator someday. He was already standing among some of the strongest cultivators in the world.

He looked at the Nine Netherworlds Emperor and said, “You should understand that considering the relationship I have to Empress Xi, I won’t kill her. However, I can’t let her go, either.”

The Nine Netherworlds Emperor’s cold expression faded. He looked at Lin Feng with mixed feelings.

After a few minutes, he said slowly, “Yu Xi and I have an innocent affection for each other. We were childhood sweethearts. She’s pure, innocent, and kind. She doesn’t understand the complex relations people can have. However, one day, her father killed her mother, and wanted to take her way. From that day, Yu Xi changed. She became cold and detached. She gradually changed her way of practicing cultivation, and finally left her family forever. I know that she wasn’t willing to do those things.”

“I’m the same as Yu Xi, I’m ordinary. However, I saw her change more and more. So, I decided to become a demon, too. To become strong, I gave up everything else. Finally, I became a strong demon. However, I realized that I couldn’t become stronger than Yu Xi’s father. Yu Xi knew she wasn’t talented enough, so she decided to die,” said the Nine Netherworlds Emperor slowly.

These stories were old. Everybody was ordinary at the beginning of their lives, no matter how talented they were. Lin Feng could understand that because of his own experience, and also because he had experienced the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ lives. He also knew that ordinary people could also rise up, step by step, by going through lots of difficulties.

“Lin Feng, Yu Xi has had many opportunities to kill you, but she

hasn't. Nobody understands her because she tries to control her passion, anger, and greed... in other words, her red dust. I also know that because of her two clones, she has emotions and feelings. She's been influenced by her clones. Therefore, she couldn't kill you. I hope that you'll treat her fairly and kindly," said the Nine Netherworlds Emperor calmly. A terrifying pitch-black fire began burning around his body.

Lin Feng frowned.

"I'm already dead. I came back to life thanks to the Rebirth Scriptures, but there are limits. I can't protect Yu Xi. I couldn't do much for her or stop you. My life has become pointless. You have to protect her. I hope she'll see you become strong. I hope you'll treat her as your wife and treat her fairly. I feel sad for her," said the Nine Netherworlds Emperor.

His body was burning more and more, his whole body became illusionary. He was slowly disappearing as he stared at Lin Feng. Lin Feng could see from his eyes how deeply he cared about Empress Xi.

"Treat Yu Xi kindly and fairly!" said the Nine Netherworlds Emperor while disappearing. He turned into a pond of Nine Netherworlds Water and moved towards Lin Feng, penetrated into his body, and then disappeared forever.

Many people were astonished and speechless. The Nine Netherworlds Emperor had decided to die, he had turned into Dao and had granted that Dao to Lin Feng for the sake of Empress Xi.

"True emotions." Lin Feng took a deep breath. He sensed that his Nine Netherworlds strength had suddenly increased greatly. He knew the Nine Netherworlds Emperor was extremely sad, and for Empress Xi, he had decided to die.

He had dedicated his life to Empress Xi!

"I thought that the Netherworld Demon Emperor had met

Empress Xi much later in life, and that he had then fallen in love with her. I never thought that they had known each other for so long. So they lived separated for a while, and then he came back,” sighed an old man. Only the Netherworld Demon Emperor and Empress Xi knew the exact details of their story. The Netherworld Demon Emperor had told some of the details a moment before, and then he had died.

Yan Di was astonished too. He had made some strong cultivators of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan go to the Heaven Clan, he didn’t go there. When he saw that the Nine Netherworlds Emperor had turned into Dao strength and penetrated into Lin Feng’s body, he sighed, “What are emotions? He was a great demon emperor, and now he is dead.”

The Netherworld Demon Emperor had dedicated his life to Empress Xi, and now he had died for her too.

—

Empress Xi was in Lin Feng’s spirit’s world. She had a jade necklace around her neck, and suddenly it broke apart. Her heart started pounding, she couldn’t believe it.

She put her hands on her necklace, her face paled. Tears appeared in her eyes; she hadn’t cried for a thousand years, but now she was crying again.

“Brother Netherworlds!” shouted Empress Xi hoarsely. It was so painful. She fell down onto her knees. She remembered those beautiful times, those flourishing periods, when both of them used to laugh a lot. She had cherished those moments, those were the best times in her life, and now the man who she considered the sunshine of her life was dead.

“I’m sorry...” Empress Xi put her hands on her head, kissing her jade necklace. She cried unceasingly and said in a fragile voice, “Brother Netherworlds, I’m so, so sorry. I’ve always considered you as my biological brother but when we found each other again

after such a long time, I never smiled at you again, I'm so sorry..."

She kept crying, her heart ached. Empress Xi, Yu Xi, had always considered the Nine Netherworlds Emperor as her own brother, he was the closest person she had in life, and now he was dead. She was alone, she didn't look like a strong, cold, and detached woman at that moment, she looked like a fragile little girl, lost and hopeless.

---

In the outside world, Lin Feng sighed, speechless. The Nine Netherworlds Emperor really loved Yu Xi, it was both touching and moving.

The Nine Netherworlds Emperor had become a part of Lin Feng. He hoped Lin Feng would take care of Empress Xi and treat her fairly. Lin Feng had to treat Empress Xi as one of his own wives.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the sky. It was a beautiful day. Lin Feng looked at Yi Ren Lei, he smiled broadly, enough to melt an iceberg. That smile was the most beautiful smile Yi Ren Lei had ever seen in her life, and she started crying. Yi Ren Lei, who was strong and determined, started crying like a little girl too.

"How have you been all these years?" Lin Feng asked her.

"Tired, but I've progressed a lot," said Yi Ren Lei forcing herself to smile.

"What do you intend to do in the future?" asked Lin Feng.

Yi Ren Lei looked pensive but then she smiled at Lin Feng in a seductive way, looking devastatingly beautiful, and said, "I'll continue progressing on my path. I'll become an Ice and Snow Goddess, and I'll wait for my demon prince, like we promised each other."

She turned around and left, looking confident and at ease. She was still smiling, but she also had tears in her eyes.

What were emotions? Emotions were more powerful than life and death!

Lin Feng watched at Yi Ren Lei slowly disappear into the distance. He took a deep breath and thought, Take care.

Lin Feng had gone through so much in life. There had been so many changes in his life.

“I would have kept her,” said Yan Di indifferently.

Lin Feng looked at him and said, “Old buddy, haven’t you found someone you like?”

“No hurry, another thousand years, or a reincarnation maybe,” said Yan Di smiling in a free and unrestrained way. “By the way, don’t forget what the Diviner said back in the day; I’m your protector, so you have to help me. When will you bring me to the Diviner? I need to see him. What he said is almost a promise.”

Lin Feng rolled his eyes. Yan Di wanted to see the Diviner?

“Did the Diviner mean that back then?” Lin Feng asked speechlessly.

“Do you think a little boy like you can help me change my destiny? Hilarious!” replied Yan Di, rolling his eyes.

“Eh...” Lin Feng was speechless for a moment, but finally nodded and said, “Alright, I’ll take you to the Fortune Shrine.”

“You’re a good boy,” said Yan Di plainly... and then he burst into laughter. He flew towards the Moon Palace, wondering if there were treasures inside?

Lin Feng looked after him, stunned. Fu Hei laughed and followed his master.

“Like teacher, like disciple,” said Lin Feng speechlessly. The others wanted to go into the Palace as well, but didn’t dare because of Lin Feng. Lin Feng had changed; back in the days, people in the Vast Celestial Ancient City could bully him. Now he could destroy



the Moon Palace, the Heaven Clan...

A strong wind was blowing and brushing against people's bodies. The Vast Celestial Ancient City had been peaceful and calm for a long time, and now new incredible things had happened. It wouldn't take long for the news to spread that the Heaven Clan had been wiped off the map of the continent!

## Chapter 2272: Feeling Unsafe

---

In the Vast Celestial Ancient City, Lin Feng had dismantled the Moon Palace and saved Xin Ye. He felt relieved.

Lin Feng didn't stop in the Vast Celestial Ancient City. The twenty-year period was slowly approaching. Lin Feng wanted to go to the Holy Spirit Dynasty to see Qiong Sheng, and then to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds with Yan Di. He also wanted to inform Shi Jue Lao Xian that he intended to go to the Snow Clan.

—

In Qi Tian Holy Town, all the Dynasties had lofty buildings. However, the strongest influential group there wasn't a Dynasty, it was the Animal District.

They had brought the thirteen Young Beast Masters back to life. They had sacrificed incredible amounts of beasts for those thirteen Young Beast Masters. Apart from that, they had also invited a bunch of beasts and the beasts had also started having children who became powerful fighters. The Animal District considered themselves unexcelled in the world. The beasts who hadn't died continued rising. The Animal District started oppressing the Dynasties, so in the end, the Dynasties decided to form an alliance.

The Animal District didn't dare bully them anymore.

The Holy Spirit Dynasty was under pressure because back then, they had chosen to form an alliance with Lin Feng, so the Holy Spirit Dynasty and all the other Dynasties didn't have good relations. It was visible in various aspects. Luckily, ten years ago, Lin Feng had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, so the other Dynasties had stopped bullying the Holy Spirit Dynasty too much.

Now, the Holy Spirit Dynasty was waiting for Lin Feng to become

a peerless cultivator, and for Lin Qiong Sheng to become a really strong and talented cultivator in his generation.

---

Lin Qiong Sheng stopped practicing cultivation and he came out of his room. He took a deep breath. He felt good. He was twenty years old, and he had already reached the very top of the Huang Qi layer. His Qi was powerful. He looked handsome. He had inherited the best features from both of his parents.

He raised his head and looked at the sun, smiling. “My Absorbing Dao is becoming great, it has already reached the first step. Now, the holy princes and princesses of all the other Dynasties can’t really compete with me anymore. Back in the days, my father captured the Ancient Jade Dynasty’s holy woman, now I’ll try, too!”

Lin Qiong Sheng started flying. Today, a meeting was planned, and all the holy princesses and princes of all the Dynasties had agreed to meet and exchange views on cultivation. It was a kind of competition. Every generation organized such events. Lin Feng had gone through such things, Lin Qiong Sheng was going through such things as well.

Just after Lin Qiong Sheng left the Holy Spirit Dynasty, Lin Feng and Tang You You appeared. The guards of the Holy Spirit Dynasty were astonished, but everybody knew them there. Even if they had never seen them for real, they had seen illusions.

The Holy Dynasty Prince and the mother of his child! They were both holy parents!

“Holy...” the guard’s mouth was wide open, he didn’t know what to say. Lin Feng and Tang You You smiled at him and entered the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

The guard was stunned, but he took out a jade talisman and informed some people the two were there. The message raced up to

the top of the hierarchy.

In the Holy Spirit Dynasty's Holy Palace, Holy Emperor Ling quickly learned about it. After that, many strong cultivators went out to welcome Lin Feng. it was the politest thing they could do, the most important people of the Holy Spirit Dynasty had to receive a warm welcome.

Lin Feng walked forwards and when he saw all those people in the distance, he was surprised and smiled, "Holy Emperor, you're too polite!"

"Haha, Lin Feng, time passes and you've become so strong. No wonder you finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds," said Holy Emperor Ling, smiling in welcome. Lin Feng's Qi was only dimly discernible. They couldn't see what his cultivation level was. He also talked in a different way. He sounded like a wise scholar. Twenty years had passed, and Lin Feng had already changed so much. What would he be like fifty years from now?

Lin Feng smiled naturally and said, "Holy Emperor, you've been taking good care of Qiong Sheng for twenty years, we are infinitely grateful. How is our son?"

"I'll call him. Let's go to the main hall first," said Holy Emperor Ling smiling.

"No need, we'll go to him," said Lin Feng shaking his head.

Holy Emperor Ling looked at Tang You You and nodded. They started walking towards Lin Qiong Sheng's palace, but then learned that he wasn't there.

"I forgot, there's a small meeting in Wang Xian, all the holy princes and princesses are meeting there," said Holy Emperor Ling suddenly.

"I'll go to Wang Xian then."

"Alright, we'll come with you," said Holy Emperor Ling happily.

They all left together.

---

There was a dimly discernible celestial Qi in Wang Xian. Many people were there because some extraordinary young people were present.

“Qing Jiang Shan is terrifyingly strong. He understands Sky Oppressing Dao, he has inherited it from his ancestors. On top of that, he knows some extremely rare soul-destroying techniques.”

“The holy woman of the Ancient Jade Dynasty is also extremely strong; her Deep Abstruse Dao is powerful.”

“Tian Jue Gong, all the geniuses of the universities are also strong.”

“Don’t forget Lin Qiong Sheng, he’s Lin Feng’s son! He’s terrifyingly talented and understands Absorbing Dao. He can absorb incredible quantities of strength, and he’s extremely strong.”

Everybody was talking and looking at the bunch of talented and extraordinary young people. At that moment, Qing Jiang Shan said, “Lin Qiong Sheng, I’ve heard that your Absorbing Dao has already reached the first level, when do you intend to kill me and absorb my strength?”

Lin Qiong Sheng grunted coldly and replied to Qing Jiang Shan, “We’ll see when you offend me.”

“How arrogant.” said Qing Jiang Shan icily. “Back then, your father dragged out an ignoble existence, he drifted and lived without purpose, and he used to hide in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. He stole the Saint of our Dynasty, the Qin Dynasty. Then, he finished first at the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, who do you think you are? We don’t even know if Lin Feng is really your father.”

The Holy Dynasty Prince of the Great Desert Dynasty laughed

and whispered, “Indeed, back then, Lin Feng hadn’t even been to the Holy Spirit Dynasty, but his mother was there already.”

Lin Qiong Sheng was furious and felt humiliated, he was about to burst out.

“Two insolent little boys!” said a loud voice at that moment. It was Holy Emperor Ling, he had heard them, he was furious.

“They’re trying to infuriate Qiong Sheng on purpose, I don’t know why.” said Lin Feng calmly. He had evolved a lot, he didn’t get angry anymore when people tried to humiliate him; actually, he just killed them instantly. He didn’t let anyone influence his emotions anymore. But he still wanted to see what those people intended to do.

“Young people compete occasionally, it’s normal, but usually they don’t go too far. They want to see how strong Qiong Sheng is,” said Holy Emperor Ling. Lin Feng nodded.

Lin Qiong Sheng said icily, “All shitty cultivators know is how to hurt people by insulting them. You two, come here.”

Qing Jiang Shan frowned and glanced at Qiong Sheng icily. Then he released Qi in a surge of power. At the same time, Lin Feng frowned, Holy Emperor Ling and Lin Feng glanced at each other.

“Someone is coming,” said Lin Feng to Holy Emperor Ling telepathically.

“Yes, many people, and one of them is as strong as me, if not stronger,” said Holy Emperor Ling, looking solemn and grave.

“Yes, very strong.” said Lin Feng nodding. He changed his face surprising the Holy Emperor Ling.

Some people arrived and noticed them. They inspected the area with their godly awareness for a few seconds, and then recalled it.

“Hey?” said someone. Holy Emperor Ling frowned. The Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty was there, too, but he didn’t seem to

notice them. However, why had such strong cultivators come? This was a competition between young people.

Lin Feng looked at Lin Qiong Sheng; he was fighting already, something abnormal was going on...

“Many people from other Dynasties are here, and they’re extremely strong. There are many great emperors and Celestial Emperors, I think they came here because of Qiong Sheng. If they didn’t want to do something dodgy, they wouldn’t need so many strong cultivators.” said Holy Emperor Ling. He finally sensed danger. What was going?

## Chapter 2273: Who?

---

At that moment, the Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty was standing next to a middle-aged man who looked simple. However, his eyes were filled with flames. He gazed into the distance.

“The young man who’s fighting against Qing Jiang Shan is Lin Qiong Sheng,” the Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty pointed at Lin Qiong Sheng.

The middle-aged man nodded and said calmly, “Don’t kill him, we want him alive.”

“I understand,” nodded Holy Emperor Qin. Even though the two of them were whispering, they didn’t try to be discreet. Therefore, Lin Feng and Holy Emperor Ling heard them. Their eyes twinkled and they frowned. That person wanted to capture Lin Qiong Sheng? He also didn’t fear them. Holy Emperor Qin knew that Holy Emperor Ling was there, but he didn’t care.

“What is that supposed to mean?” said Holy Emperor Ling icily. Holy Emperor Qin just smiled coldly. He had said that on purpose, by doing so he was saying that even if the members of the Holy Spirit Dynasty were there, they couldn’t do anything!

She’s here!, thought Holy Emperor Qin, when he saw Tang You You. He was smiling icily on the inside. Lin Feng might be here, too!

The younger people were still fighting; Lin Qiong Sheng was fighting against two Holy Dynasty Princes, and he had the advantage. Qing Jiang Shan was stronger than Lin Qiong Sheng back then at the same age. However, Lin Qiong Sheng, at the same level, was peerless. He had several spirit strengths. His fighting abilities were incredible, and his Absorbing Dao was terrifying. The battle was incredible and fierce, Lin Qiong Sheng was fighting against two very strong cultivators.



“Back then, Lin Qiong Sheng’s father fought against eight geniuses alone; when the father is a lion, the son cannot be a lamb. Lin Qiong Sheng is extremely strong, as expected,” said someone at that moment. It was a strong cultivator of the Ancient Jade Dynasty. Many people looked at him strangely.

But then he said, “Therefore, don’t be merciful. Stop watching, and let’s see how powerful Lin Qiong Sheng can really be.”

“How cruel.”

They want to encircle Lin Qiong Sheng!, thought everybody frowning. The Ancient Jade Dynasty’s holy woman immediately attacked, and the Holy Dynasty Prince followed.

Lin Qiong Sheng shouted furiously. A dragon appeared and absorbed everything they threw out. He looked at them icily. His Qi surged up and swept their attacks away. He was furious; these people were bastards, all Holy Dynasty Princes and princesses, they were all geniuses, and they dared surround him?

Lin Feng flickered and left. Holy Emperor Ling’s eyes twinkled, but he didn’t ask anything, Lin Feng probably had a plan.

After a short time, Lin Feng reappeared in the crowd, but this time he had a different face. His Qi was the Qi of the Huang Qi layer. He slowly rose up into the air and watched the battle, where seven people were fighting against Lin Qiong Sheng. They were all extremely strong.

Lin Qiong Sheng was different from him back in the days. Back then, Lin Feng’s death Dao was incredible and he knew several Saint’s techniques. That was why, back then, he had dared take a risk. Now, Lin Qiong Sheng was strong, but it wasn’t enough.

But Lin Feng didn’t attack immediately. He first watched Lin Qiong Sheng fight. The battle was difficult and Lin Qiong Sheng was struggling. But Lin Feng was happy, because the most difficult and dangerous situations were the most beneficial ones as well,

they made cultivators stronger.

As expected, Lin Qiong Sheng was going crazy, his attacks were fiercer and fiercer, and the people around moved back. After being punched twice, Lin Qiong Sheng punched two other people and hurled them away, blood splashing.

“Together.” said Qing Jiang Shan mercilessly. The seven cultivators encircled him again, the pressure was terrifying.

Finally, Lin Feng slowly walked forwards. Back then, when he was surrounded by eight people, it had been scary. And now his son was in a similar situation; blood called for blood!

“The Dynasties are really imposing and awe-inspiring.” said Lin Feng pitilessly.

The Holy Dynasty Prince of the Great Desert Dynasty grunted icily. He looked at Lin Feng and shouted, “Piss off!” He punched out in Lin Feng’s direction.

Lin Feng raised his hand. There was a rumble as he destroyed the enemy’s attack. He charged the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Great Desert Dynasty.

The strong cultivators of the Great Desert Dynasty were startled. Lin Feng turned into a beam of light and threw himself at their Holy Dynasty Prince.

The Great Desert Dynasty’s Holy Dynasty Prince was driven asunder, he turned into a bunch of hanging flesh and blood, his soul dispersed. He hadn’t even had time to scream.

“No!...” shouted the strong cultivators of the Great Desert Dynasty, nobody thought someone would dare kill their Holy Dynasty Prince directly. Their faces twisted. People around were astonished. That guy had killed him instantly!

A Holy Dynasty Prince had just been killed instantly!

The other Holy Dynasty Princes suddenly stopped moving, and

stared at Lin Feng. They couldn't believe their eyes. The Great Desert Dynasty's Holy Dynasty Prince who was fighting on their side before had just been torn apart. That made everybody tremble.

Lin Feng then jumped, stretched out his hand and grabbed Qing Jiang Shan. Qing Jiang Shan shouted in fear. He wanted to fight, but Lin Feng didn't give him any opportunity.

"Stop!" shouted Holy Emperor Qin explosively. He descended from the sky and stared at Lin Feng.

"You'll die if you dare touch him," said Holy Emperor Qin icily.

However, Lin Feng raised his head and said, "Why are seven strong cultivators fighting against Lin Qiong Sheng today?"

"It's normal, they're just here to exchange views on cultivation," said Holy Emperor Qin icily.

"Ah..." Qing Jiang Shan screamed. One of his arms was broken, a bone was sticking out and blood dripping down.

The crowd was trembling. Who was this guy? He was crazy!

Lin Qiong Sheng looked at Lin Feng in astonishment. Who was that guy, and why was he helping him?

"I'll give you one more opportunity. If you lie, I'll kill him," stated Lin Feng icily. The Ancient Jade Dynasty's Holy Princess rose up in the air, trying to leave.

"Die!" said Lin Feng. He released Death Dao strength towards her, and killed her instantly.

The strong cultivators of the Ancient Jade Dynasty were trembling, their faces pale. Lin Feng used a special Qi which surrounded Lin Qiong Sheng and protected him. He glanced at the crowd and said remorselessly, "If anyone dares move, I'll kill them!"

The crowd had just seen the holy princess die, so nobody dared

move. They were all staring at Lin Feng; who was he?

Holy Emperor Qin was staring at Lin Feng with murder in his eyes. He wanted to kill Lin Feng, but he didn't want Qing Jiang Shan to die.

"You have only one opportunity." said Lin Feng grimly, like a demon. "If you don't tell me why, I'll give the other Dynasties an opportunity."

At that moment, the middle-aged man who had come with Holy Emperor Qin spoke up, "Because of me."

Lin Feng slowly turned to him. Holy Emperor Ling didn't know him, why did he want to capture Qiong Sheng?

"Release him." said that person, flames were burning in his eyes. Lin Feng sensed a scorching-hot energy.

"Why do you want to capture Qiong Sheng? Are there tensions between him and you?" asked Lin Feng icily.

"You want to die?" that person said to Lin Feng arrogantly.

Lin Feng looked back at Holy Emperor Qin and said, "He doesn't care whether your Holy Dynasty Prince dies or not, so answer my question. You have only one chance."

Holy Emperor Qin's face stiffened. His mouth twitched, but he didn't say anything. Even if Qing Jiang Shan's life was in Lin Feng's hands, he couldn't tell the truth.

Qing Jiang Shan screamed. His other arm exploded into pieces of flesh. Lin Feng was staring at him and continued, "And you can't remain silent."

"You will die here!" said Holy Emperor Qin. He didn't feel relaxed. Lin Feng suddenly realized something, he didn't dare talk even though Qing Jiang Shan's life was in his hands. He was too terrified; just who was that middle-aged man?

Lin Feng knew that Holy Emperor Qin didn't dare talk. Then, he

released Death intent which surrounded the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Tianci Dynasty. Lin Feng said in a cold and detached way, “Who will tell me the truth?”

The strong cultivators of the Tianci Dynasty looked petrified as well. Qi surged towards Lin Feng, but he said nothing.

Lin Feng understood.

Therefore, he burst into laughter. He knew the answer now.

“They don’t dare talk. Tell me the truth, I already know it, though,” Lin Feng said to Qing Jiang Shan. “If you don’t tell me the truth, I’ll kill you instantly. Tell me the truth, maybe that he won’t do anything to you because of his position.”

Qing Jiang Shan’s face was chalk pale. He was the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Qin Dynasty. He knew who the middle-aged man was.

“I don’t want to kill you, you’re boring, hurry up!” prodded Lin Feng calmly. He knew the answer so he was unmoved.

“He’s from a paramount place,” said Qing Jiang Shan, closing his eyes.

The middle-aged man frowned, but then he heard Lin Feng say, “Be clear! Which Shrine!”

When Lin Feng said that, everyone trembled.

Shrine!

## Chapter 2274: Pretending

---

What Lin Feng said made the whole crowd tremble. That person was from a Shrine, and he dared act that arrogantly?

Qing Jiang Shan grimaced in pain and said, "Fire Shrine."

The middle-aged man's eyes were filled with fire, and he frowned. Indeed, he was from the Fire Shrine!

After what had happened in Purple Clouds, the Shrines were convinced that there was a Forbidden Person. As a result, everybody knew about it. They wanted to kill the ten top cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, so all the Shrines had agreed on focusing on one person each. The Fire Shrine was in charge of killing Lin Feng.

However, they could see that Lin Feng lived in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds all the time, he was hiding in the Fortune Shrine all the time. But they understood it was a cover-up, how could Lin Feng, who had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, still be a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer? It had to be a clone.

However, the Fire Shrine didn't know where Lin Feng was, they just knew that he was from Dark Clouds and that before the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he was in Qi Tian Holy Town. They also knew that he was the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

They had come to Qi Tian Holy Town and had confirmed from the other Dynasties that he was from there, indeed. They also learned that Lin Feng had a child called Lin Qiong Sheng, and that he was the current Holy Spirit Dynasty Prince.

Accordingly, the person in charge of killing Lin Feng had thought of a solution: make some Dynasties capture Lin Qiong Sheng! That way, the Holy Spirit Dynasty would contact Lin Feng and he would

show up.

However, the Fire Shrine's strong cultivator hadn't expected that someone would protect Lin Qiong Sheng. This person was audacious and arrogant, and he knew about the Shrines!

Killing a disciple of the Fortune Shrine by surprise wasn't something very glorious, and using Lin Feng's son was even less glorious. Therefore, the Fire Shrine didn't want anyone to know about it. It was really bad for their reputation!

"Back then, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the nine Shrines attacked the winners by surprise. They wanted to kill the top ten cultivators, ten geniuses, but they were also new disciples of the Fortune Shrine. However, they failed.

"Now, they still want to kill them. The Fire Shrine sent people to capture Lin Qiong Sheng to attract the champion of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Lin Feng, because he's his father. They wanted Lin Feng to appear and then they would have killed him," said Lin Feng calmly. He didn't use the word Forbidden Person of course, the Shrines didn't know who had a Forbidden Body yet. They just listened to orders.

"The Shrines, supreme and paramount organizations... To kill Lin Feng, they dared try to capture his family, his son... how glorious! How ridiculous, I want to say!" said Lin Feng sarcastically. "The Fire Shrine is really great!"

The Fire Shrine's strong cultivator pulled a long face. He was staring at Lin Feng and demanded, "Who are you?"

Apart from the people who were directly involved, nobody could know those things. Now the Fire Shrine was losing face!

"Who do you think I am?" asked Lin Feng, smiling. He released some fortune lights. He had studied many, many scriptures in the Fortune Shrine, studied many spells and ancient scriptures. Coupled with evolution strength, he could easily modify and create

new sorts of strengths.

“You’re from the Fortune Shrine!” The Fire Shrine’s strong cultivator was stupefied.

“Hmph! You’re from the Fortune Shrine and you dared pretend to be an emperor to attack and kill emperors!”

“They all want to help you kill my disciple. Could the Fortune Shrine accept that?” spat Lin Feng. Qi began to hum wildly around him. It contained death strength and fortune lights!

Lin Feng looked at the members of the other Dynasties. All those strong cultivators were shaking. They had offended the Fortune Shrine, were they going to die?

They realized they shouldn’t have gotten involved; Lin Feng had changed, he was backed up by the Fortune Shrine, he was a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine now!

“Piss off now. If you dare attack disciples of the Fortune Shrine ever again, I guarantee you I’ll destroy all the Dynasties,” said Lin Feng, sounding like a demon. The strong cultivators of the Dynasties turned pale. They glanced between the strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine and then at Lin Feng, and in the end, they left.

Nobody would dare ask for an explanation or mention their revenge. Some of their people had been killed by a member of the Fortune Shrine, what could they do? Nothing. They had lost people for nothing!

Lin Feng looked at the strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine and said calmly, “You wanted to hurt my disciple’s son to capture him. Are you not afraid? The Fortune Shrine can also kill your disciples’ family members,” said Lin Feng, which made his opposite tremble.

At such cultivation levels, family members normally wouldn’t get involved anymore.

“You want to kill Lin Feng, go and kill him, but we can guarantee that if you kill our disciples, we’ll kill twice as many of your



disciples. And after what happened today, you actually shouldn't do anything. You're a disgrace as a Shrine, you don't even deserve to be a Shrine!" said Lin Feng calmly. He really sounded like a strong and high-ranking cultivator of the Fortune Shrine.

"See you," he finished. He took Lin Qiong Sheng with him and left.

Holy Emperor Ling and Tang You You left with him. Holy Emperor Ling was privately astonished. Lin Feng was extremely strong, but he could even oppress such people. He could even pretend he was a terrifying cultivator from the Fortune Shrine. The Fire Shrine's strong cultivator had trembled with fear. Lin Feng had deceived him, that was incredible!

But what had happened on that day also made Lin Feng understand that the Shrines weren't going to give up, they truly wanted to kill the Forbidden Person. They had even sent people to Qi Tian Holy Town for him. They even wanted to capture Lin Qiong Sheng!

He was furious. Those people, who were terrifyingly strong, were ready to do anything to achieve their goals!

——

Lin Feng and the others returned to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Lin Qiong Sheng looked at Lin Feng, his eyes twinkling and he said, "You're extremely strong, are you really from the Fortune Shrine, or did my father send you?"

At that moment, some people arrived in the distance, Tang You You, Holy Emperor Ling, when Lin Qiong Sheng saw Tang You You, he was astonished, she was...

"Mother?" asked Lin Qiong Sheng. Tang You You nodded.

She walked up to him and caressed his head, smiling. "Qiong Sheng, you're a grown up now."

"Mother..." said Lin Qiong Sheng, smiling happily. He had never

been with his parents... it felt good, it felt warm. He smiled broadly.

“Mother, what about my father? How is he doing? Why does the Fire Shrine want to kill him?” Lin Qiong Sheng asked Tang You You.

“He’s good. And it’s a long story,” replied Tang You You, glancing at Lin Feng and nodding.

“Hmph! No matter what their reason is, someday, I’ll go to the Fortune Shrine and settle accounts with them,” said Lin Qiong Sheng icily.

“The Shrines are among the most powerful groups of influence in this world. Do you think you’ll ever be that strong?” asked Lin Feng, smiling at Lin Qiong Sheng.

“Of course, I am as talented as my parents. I can’t be weaker. Master, do you think the Fortune Shrine could recruit me as a disciple? My father ranked first at the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, I can’t be much weaker!” said Lin Qiong Sheng to Lin Feng smiling fatuously.

Lin Feng burst into laughter. Tang You You said, “Silly boy, he’s your father.”

“What?” Qiong Sheng was astonished, he looked at Lin Feng and shook his head. “You’re lying, he’s not. I’ve seen many images of my father. He doesn’t look like that.”

“And like this?” said Lin Feng, taking off his mask and showing his true face. He smiled at Qiong Sheng. Qiong Sheng frowned and remained silent, he scratched his head and finally shouted, “You’re really my old daddy!”

“Am I old?” said Lin Feng, rolling his eyes, Tang You You and Lin Feng glanced at each other and they both burst into laughter.

“Qiong Sheng, I hope you’re not sad that your mother and me have not been able to stay on your side to take care of you.”

“No, my Master told me that the cultivation world was very cruel, he told me how people bullied you, how you finished first at the meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, you did all you could for me and for yourself, for us to become strong. I could never blame my parents! In the future, I want to be like my father, I want people to admire me!” replied Lin Qiong Sheng solemnly.

Lin Feng clapped Lin Qiong Sheng’s shoulder and said, “Glad to hear that, but now you can’t stay here. Times are difficult and people will find me sooner or later. From today, go and travel the world. When Holy Emperor Ling tells you you can come back, then come back.”

“Lin Feng!” said Tang You You, astonished.

“You You, he must go through such things to become a strong cultivator,” said Lin Feng. Many difficulties awaited Lin Qiong Sheng, and making him travel was a good solution to protect him, too!

“Alright, I will do that,” agreed Lin Qiong Sheng. He knelt down and said to Lin Feng and Tang You You, “I’ll do my best to be the best child ever.”

Lin Qiong Sheng stood back up and looked at Holy Emperor Ling. He bowed, turned around, and left. Tang You You waved after him... she didn’t want to let her baby go and travel alone.

Lin Feng felt the same, but that was how the world worked. The best thing was to be strong and travel. If Lin Feng hadn’t appeared on that day, Lin Qiong Sheng would have been in great danger.

“Holy Emperor, even if the Fire Shrine wants to attack the Dynasties now, they can’t. Tell all the Dynasties that if anyone dares do anything against the Holy Spirit Dynasty, they will die,” said Lin Feng to Holy Emperor Ling evenly.

Holy Emperor Ling nodded. As long as Lin Feng was alive, nobody would dare attack the Holy Spirit Dynasty!

# Chapter 2275: Void Phoenix Clan

---

The Qi was almost endless in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, a world which stood higher than the Continent of the Nine Clouds. There were ancient palaces and strong cultivators everywhere. It was a dangerous place.

Lin Feng and Yan Di were walking in the Court. Lin Feng looked at the sky, sometimes seeing some great emperors seated on clouds. Great emperors were normal and common in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“Old buddy, I talked to the Diviner; let’s head to Fortune Castle,” Lin Feng said to Yan Di. Yan Di nodded and took a deep breath. Even though he had studied many Ancient scriptures, it was too difficult for him to become as strong as he was in his previous life. He had come back to life and because of it, he had limits. Maybe the Fortune Shrine could change his destiny!

Lin Feng’s clone had been in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds the whole time. Therefore, Lin Feng was very familiar with the region. They both flew quickly. After a short time, they landed before a celestial palace: Fortune Castle!

“No wonder they’re at the top of the world; this palace is terrifying, and it towers aloft,” said Yan Di, glancing around. The Fortune Shrine’s territory was incredible, and seemed boundless.

“Have you ever been in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?” asked Lin Feng to Yan Di. He was curious.

“Of course, back then when I was in the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan, I traveled everywhere with my father,” said Yan Di easily. Lin Feng was startled; the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan must have been terrifyingly powerful then, with many incredibly strong cultivators. But he didn’t press.

After entering Fortune Castle, they climbed up a gigantic flight of stairs, a righteous old man arrived, he smiled at Lin Feng warmly. Lin Feng had broken free from the Huang Qi layer even if he had a Forbidden Body. He now had no real cultivation level. He looked like someone who had no cultivation level at all, he was different from everyone else.

“Greetings, Master,” said Yan Di to the Diviner, bowing deeply. Even though he had lived for a thousand years, the Diviner was even older, at least ten thousand years old. In front of the Diviner, Yan Di was like a child, so he had to call him Master.

“Hello, Little boy, you’re growing up quickly,” said the Diviner, smiling at Yan Di. Back then, when Yan Di was always with Lin Feng, he had the same level as him and the others. Now he was a Celestial Emperor, and on top of that, he had relied on himself to break through to the Tian Di layer. That wasn’t easy at all, but was also due to the Ancient scriptures he had studied.

When Yan Di heard the Diviner call him Little boy, he didn’t mind, and even smiled.

“Come with me,” the Diviner said to Yan Di. Lin Feng and Yan Di glanced at each other, and Yan Di followed the Diviner.

Lin Feng turned around and descended from the Castle. He didn’t want to stay in the Fortune Shrine area for too long.

The Fortune Shrine was in Fortune City. There were many buildings here, and the place was gigantic. There were many residences in Fortune Country. It was a gigantic territory. But Lin Feng didn’t travel in the Fortune Country, he left.

—

In the Northwest Area, there was no Shrine. However, it was much, much vaster than Fortune Country., There were many other influential groups in the Northwest Area. They couldn’t be compared with the influential groups of the Continent of the Nine

Clouds. Many of these groups of influence had existed for hundreds of thousands of years, and some of them had even existed since the very beginning of the ancient days. Many of them had people who were about to become Saints, or Sages as they were also called.

The strongest ones had Saints!

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were many Ancient Holy Clans who came from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They had Saint Emperors, that's why they called themselves Ancient Holy Clans.

Actually, it was wrong. In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, if they had dared call themselves Ancient Holy Clans, they would have been destroyed instantly. Strong cultivators from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds found them ridiculous and made fun of them when they traveled in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

In the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, clans who had Saints were considered powerful, they called themselves Holy Sage Ruler Clans.

In their case, the "Holy" was actual truth; they had real Saints, genuinely Holy cultivators, unlike Ancient Holy Clans who only had Saint Emperors, and who only had Holy Saints in the distant past. In the case of Holy Sage Ruler Clans, they really had Saints, or Sages, who were Holy cultivators, truly peerless cultivators!

The Void Phoenix Clan was a Holy Sage Ruler Clan, they had at least one Saint. They were in the Northwest Area, and were extremely strong. People who were raised in the Void Phoenix Clan were considered apex geniuses in that part of the world, like geniuses who came from Ancient Holy Clans in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

A young man appeared outside of the Void Phoenix Clan in the Northwest Area. His Qi was dimly discernible. He was surrounded by an empty and invisible strength, as if he could disappear anytime. The young man's empty space strength was extremely powerful. He could control a type of Dao related to empty space.

His hands were clasped behind him. He looked indifferent and composed, calm and aloof. However, one could sense he was strong, especially since he was standing at the gate of the Void Phoenix Clan.

The guards of the Void Phoenix Clan sensed that his Qi was extraordinary. They informed some people of his coming and a short time later, a young man wearing a fire cape slowly came out. His hair was pitch-black and he was wearing fire armor, looking quite heroic. His eyes were filled with flames. He was staring at Lin Feng and asked, "Your Excellency, how may the Void Phoenix Clan help you?"

"I'm looking for Jing," said Lin Feng, he turned around and looked at the young man calmly.

The young man smiled at Lin Feng and said, "First question."

That was the Void Phoenix Clan, not anyone could see Jing, he needed to tell him who he was first.

"I come from Dark Clouds, Vast Celestial Ancient City, Animal World," said Lin Feng calmly. His questioner was surprised; someone from the Animal World in the Vast Celestial Ancient City? He had heard of that place.

But someone from the lower world daring to come to their clan and stand at their gate talking this way, that was rare.

"Jing doesn't receive people from abroad," said the young man to Lin Feng calmly.

Lin Feng suddenly turned around and gazed into the distance. A terrifying strength emerged and surrounded the young man. A

golden cage imprisoned him.

The young man frowned and looked at Lin Feng icily. He condensed fire in his fist and punched the cage, but the cage didn't break at all. He was still trapped inside. He grimaced. Lin Feng had imprisoned him, a great emperor, instantly!

"I came from very, very far. Why refuse people who come from so far?" said Lin Feng calmly. "Bring me to Jing, okay?"

The young man was stuck in the cage and felt humiliated.

"Alright, I'll take you there," said the young man. Instantly. Lin Feng made the cage disappear.

"Follow me," said the young man. He turned around and took Lin Feng inside.

It was like a gigantic castle inside. Lin Feng whispered, "Don't take me to some strong cultivators, I'm here as a guest and I don't want to cause trouble. If you do anything dodgy, I can kill you in the blink of an eye."

The young man's face stiffened. He had really intended to do that. However, Lin Feng was threatening him, and he was really strong...

The young man took Lin Feng to a palace and said to Lin Feng, "That's Miss Jing's residence, but I can't go in."

Lin Feng nodded and said, "Jing!"

His voice resonated far away. Jing was in her palace, she opened her eyes and her eyes twinkled, who dared act that arrogantly?!

Her silhouette flickered, and she landed in front of Lin Feng and the young man.

"Who is he?" asked Jing to the young man.

"Miss Jing, he said he comes from the Vast Celestial Ancient City," said the young man. Jing frowned and stared at Lin Feng.



“Let’s talk inside,” said Lin Feng.

Jing nodded and said to the young man, “You may leave.”

The young man turned around and left. Lin Feng knew that the young man was probably going to look for some stronger cultivators, but it didn’t matter. Jing had a high social position so he didn’t need to worry. Jing said, “I don’t know you. Are you really from the Vast Celestial Ancient City?”

“It’s me, Lin Feng,” Lin Feng said to Jing telepathically. Jing was stupefied. She suddenly turned around, how audacious!

“How is Qing Feng?” asked Lin Feng calmly. Jing was stupefied. He really was Lin Feng!

“The Shrines are all looking for you, they want to kill you!” said Jing telepathically.

“I know, so call me Feng Ling now,” replied Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s disguise was incredible. She nodded. That way, nobody would recognize him.

## Chapter 2276: Delicate Relations

---

Jing took Lin Feng to a bamboo forest by a lake, a place where she relaxed. It was beautiful, there was nature, and energies didn't propagate easily there. Unless someone shouted extremely loudly, nobody could overhear what was said there.

"How is Qing Feng?" asked Lin Feng. The old man of the Animal World and Lin Feng had had a long conversation, he wanted Lin Feng to take care of her.

"She's here in the Void Phoenix Clan, but she has a special social status here, so she feels awkward," said Jing. "My mother loves Qing Feng very much. However, my father doesn't like seeing her next to our mother. There are some internal problems in the Void Phoenix Clan. Qing Feng's position is delicate. But she's a Saint's disciple, so nobody dares do anything to her."

Lin Feng nodded. Qing Feng was Saint Shi Jue Lao Xian's disciple. If Shi Jue Lao Xian was there, even a Holy Sage Ruler Clan couldn't do much to her.

"Since it's that way, let Qing Feng leave the Void Phoenix Clan, why does she need to stay here?" asked Lin Feng.

"Why doesn't she leave? Her blood strength can improve in the Void Phoenix Clan. If the Void Phoenix Clan acknowledges her, she could become an incredibly godly phoenix. She could turn into an ancient phoenix and have an immortal body. Even though Shi Jue Lao Xian is a Saint, he can't help Qing Feng with that. It's why our mother wanted her to come back, the most important reason. If she stayed with her father, her perspectives would be limited, too." said Jing.

"So, why can't the Void Phoenix Clan acknowledge her now?" asked Lin Feng, frowning.

"My father was tolerant of my mother in the past. He even joined

the Void Phoenix Clan. It was a big sacrifice. The Void Phoenix Clan owes a lot to my father. After all, he is a genius, and in the Northwest Area, he's always been considered as such. Now he's a member of the Fire Shrine and a half Saint, he'll definitely become a real Saint at some point. You can imagine his social position within the Void Phoenix Clan," said Jing slowly.

Lin Feng was perplexed. Such an incredible genius joined the Void Phoenix Clan, that was indeed a sacrifice, and quite beneficial for the Void Phoenix Clan.

Fire Shrine, thought Lin Feng glumly. He said to Jing, "So what do you think? Are you on your mother's side, or your father's side?"

"I'm Feng's sister. I wish the best for her. And I don't care about the elders' stories..." said Jing.

"Alright," said Lin Feng nodding. Jing didn't care. She hoped Feng would be fine.

"And you? Why did you come here?" asked Jing to Lin Feng coldly.

"I came to see how Qing Feng was doing. I'm worried about her," said Lin Feng calmly.

"You're worried? Don't try to take me with you," said Jing icily.

Lin Feng laughed and said, "Women are beautiful when they smile. When I was a cauldron, you looked even more beautiful."

"Lin Feng, don't think I won't dare attack you because of Feng," Jing said with murder in her eyes.

"You think you can do anything to me?" Lin Feng smiled. Jing was surprised. Indeed, this guy had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. So many years had passed, and she couldn't see his cultivation level anymore. How strong was he now?

“How strong are you now?” asked Jing, curious.

“Try and you’ll see,” said Lin Feng calmly. Jing released a terrifying energy which filled the air. An ice-cold sword appeared, white lights streaked across the sky. She didn’t hold back; that sword sliced straight towards Lin Feng’s neck, and it also contained her most terrifying fire energies!

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and grabbed the incoming sword without anything happening to him.

Jing was astonished and groaned icily. This guy had become too strong.

“Break!” said Lin Feng.

Instantly, clear and melodious breaking sounds spread in the air... the ice-cold fire sword broke apart and turned to ashes. Jing lowered her eyes and looked at the pieces of sword on the ground. She was shaking. How astonishing... There was such a big difference between them...

She hadn’t stopped practicing cultivation during the last ten years, she was now at the top of the Di Qi layer. She could easily kill ordinary Celestial Emperors. But in front of Lin Feng, she felt so weak.

Then, Jing laughed and said, “I have a way.”

“What?” said Lin Feng looking at Jing.

“Since you came here, and your fighting abilities are so incredible, if you talk about love with Qing Feng, thanks to you, her social status could rise,” said Jing suddenly.

Lin Feng said, “The Void Phoenix Clan is a Holy Sage Ruler Clan, there are many strong cultivators. Even though I’m a strong cultivator, I can’t help Qing Feng rise up in the hierarchy of the group.”

“Holy Sage Ruler Clans such as the Void Phoenix Clan don’t

really attach importance to anyone except Saints, and people who have the potential to become saints. They don't care about anyone else. Therefore, my father's position is really high, and you have the potential to become a Saint. If you prove it, things would be different," said Jing slowly.

Lin Feng nodded. Indeed, for Holy Sage Ruler Clans, Saints were important, or people who were about to become Saints. Saint Emperors were also very useful to them.

Clans, sects, and all other powerful groups in the world weren't interested in average strength, they were interested in being the strongest. A Saint could destroy a whole group of Saint Emperors instantly.

"Alright, take me to Qing Feng now," said Lin Feng. Jing nodded. They both left the bamboo forest and left her residence. As soon as they left the residence, they bumped into a group of strong cultivators who were waiting for them. Among them was the young man who had just taken Lin Feng there.

"Leave now, there's nothing to see," said Jing indifferently. However, those people's silhouettes flickered. The leader of the group was a young man, staring at Lin Feng icily. His Qi was in a chaotic state and surged towards Lin Feng.

"Ao Feng, how insolent! I told you to leave!" said Jing icily.

"It's the Void Phoenix Clan here, strangers can't come in and out as they wish. Who is he?" asked Ao Feng, staring coldly at Lin Feng.

"Piss off!" said Jing icily.

Ao Feng's face stiffened, but he looked at Jing and said, "Miss Jing, come to see the elder. He broke through to the Tian Di layer seven days ago. He controls nine abstruse flames strength, I hope you understand what it means."

Then, Ao Feng turned around and left with the crowd. Lin Feng

was stupefied and asked, “Huo Xing Zi is the young man who appeared at the end of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds last time? From the Fire Shrine?”

“That’s him. He’s extremely strong, extremely talented. He used the Nine Celestial Abstruse Flames Shrine Deployment Spell to break through to the Di Qi layer. His teacher and my father are of the same lineage; they were fellow disciples, so they hope I will marry him,” said Jing icily.

“The Void Phoenix Clan must be happy about that...” whispered Lin Feng. Jing glanced at him coldly. Of course the Void Phoenix Clan was happy about it! It would help them develop an even deeper relation with the Fire Shrine!

Shrines were paramount groups in the world!

—

Jing brought Lin Feng to another palace. Qing Feng was inside. When she saw Lin Feng, she didn’t recognize him, he had changed his face and Qi.

“Qing Feng, it’s me!” said Lin Feng, changing his face. Qing Feng began to blurt out “Lin-”

“Shush!” Lin Feng immediately put his hand on her mouth. Qing Feng was stupefied. She nodded, but looked alarmed.

“Are you about to go to the Snow Clan?” Qing Feng asked Lin Feng. The twenty-year period was almost over. Saint Shi Jue Lao Xian and Lin Feng had an agreement.

“Yes,” said Lin Feng nodded.

“Alright, I’ll inform him that you’re here already,” said Qing Feng.

Lin Feng shook his head. “I’ve already informed him. I came here for you.”

“For me?” Qing Feng’s eyes twinkled.

“Yes, your father wants me to take care of you, so I have to take good care of you,” Lin Feng grinned. Her cheeks became hot. She looked at Lin Feng, what was wrong with him?

“I can take care of myself,” whispered Qing Feng. But she looked and sounded too cute.

“Don’t be stubborn,” said Jing, rolling her eyes, “Didn’t you decide to come to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds for this guy? Now he’s here for you, and he came from far away.”

“Who said that?” Qing Feng blushed.

Lin Feng laughed, “You don’t want me to take care of you?”

Qing Feng looked at Lin Feng, she had beautiful eyes. Her ears burned, “You...”

At that moment, Qing Feng looked like a little innocent girl. Lin Feng and Jing smiled widely. She had always felt that way, but she had always refused to say anything.

## Chapter 2277: Fighting

---

In another palace in the Void Phoenix Clan, there were two people sitting in a pavilion at the foot of a mountain. They were chatting. At that moment, someone arrived and bowed to one of them, a middle-aged man.

“There’s no stranger here, talk,” said the middle-aged man softly. He didn’t look arrogant at all.

“Sir, today, a young man came to see Miss Jing. They looked very close to each other, and after that, they went to Miss Qing Feng’s residence together,” said the messenger.

The middle-aged man looked surprised. He glanced at the young man next to him and said, “Alright, you can leave.”

“Sir!” That person bowed and left. The middle-aged man looked at the person next to him and smiled, “That little girl likes to worry me.”

“Uncle, Jing has friends, it’s normal,” the young man smiled.

“But she brought him to Qing Feng. I don’t know why,” wondered the middle-aged man calmly.

The young man smiled again, “Uncle, I can check with her.”

“Good idea. She doesn’t listen to me, so that’s a good idea. She doesn’t care about making me sad,” said the middle-aged man, shaking his head.

“I am sure she will listen to you regarding the wedding. Besides, my teacher and I have talked about Qing Feng; among my fellow disciples, there are some extremely strong ones who could be good for Qing Feng. That way, she’ll move to the Fire Shrine and have a better home,” the young man offered.

The middle-aged man muttered to himself irresolutely and then nodded. “Alright, actually, it’s a good idea, she’d be happy in the



Fire Shrine. It'd be a good home. Her mother will be fine with that too, I guess."

"Glad to hear you say that, Uncle! I will go back and inform my teacher," the young man smiled. The middle-aged man nodded and saw him off.

Lin Feng hadn't expected such a thing to happen. Besides, the relations he had with the Fire Shrine were getting more and more complex.

At that moment, he was with Jing and Qing Feng. They were taking a walk on a big road of the Void Phoenix Clan. They were on their way to go and see the girls' mother. Lin Feng sensed that some people were looking at him in a hostile way in the distance.

He raised his eyes and gazed back. He saw someone he had seen before; of course, that person had become much stronger.

Huo Xing Zi. Back then, he was among the ten strong young people of the Shrines who had attacked them at the end of the Meeting of the Continent, from the Fire Shrine. He was at the top of the Huang Qi layer back then. Now he was a Celestial Emperor. His Qi was impressive.

When Huo Xing Zi saw Jing, he smiled and said, "Jing, which bloodline is he from in the Void Phoenix Clan?"

"He's not from the Void Phoenix Clan, he's my friend," replied Jing icily. She didn't like Huo Xing Zi at all.

"I see. I'm Huo Xing Zi from the Fire Shrine," said Huo Xing Zi, nodding at Lin Feng.

"I practice cultivation in the countryside, I am a nobody, therefore, I feel ashamed to introduce myself in front of such an incredible cultivator as you, you're a genius from the Fire Shrine," said Lin Feng calmly.

Huo Xing Zi's eyes glittered strangely. He smiled and said, "You're too polite, Your Excellency. You're Jing's friend, how

could you practice cultivation in the countryside? Besides, don't feel ashamed. I can't even see your cultivation level, you must be extremely strong. I wonder whether the godly fire vision could detect your cultivation level."

The godly fire vision was a terrifying power the Fire Shrine had. When Jing heard him, she frowned. Did he mean he wanted to try the godly fire vision on Lin Feng?

Many people had suddenly arrived and gathered around them. They were all from the Void Phoenix Clan. When they saw Huo Xing Zi from the Fire Shrine was provoking a young man, they got excited. Huo Xing Zi wanted to propose a marriage alliance, and get married to Jing. His purpose wasn't pure and innocent; apart from obtaining Jing, he also cast greedy eyes on the Void Phoenix Clan's phoenix blood. People from the Fortune Shrine loved all sorts of fire strength.

For the Void Phoenix Clan, there were advantages, too; being able to deepen their relationship with the Fire Shrine would enable them to become even more powerful.

But at that moment, Jing was standing with a stranger, a young man, and they had bumped into Huo Xing Zi. Even though Huo Xing Zi said nothing, he was ambitious and proud, so he had an idea of what to do.

"It's the Void Phoenix Clan and he's my friend," said Qing Feng icily. She didn't know how strong Lin Feng was, but she had heard that Huo Xing Zi had used the nine abstruse flames godly deployment spell to break through to the Tian Di layer. He was definitely terrifyingly strong, she hoped Lin Feng would not fight against him.

"I know. Therefore, I just want to use my vision technique on him, I don't want to injure your friend," said Huo Xing Zi calmly. But could he injure Lin Feng even if he wanted to?

"You..." Qing Feng looked at him icily.

Huo Xing Zi smiled, “Miss Qing Feng, this time, I’ll go back and I’ll inform my teacher about the situation. Besides, we’ll looking for someone you can marry among my fellow disciples. We’ll all be family members that way. You’ll be like a sister-in-law to me.”

When Qing Feng heard that, she was astonished. She pulled a long face, and Huo Xing Zi continued, “I will choose an outstanding young man for you. You will be happy and feel honored to be with someone like that. People from the Fire Shrine are perfect matches for the people of the Void Phoenix Clan.”

However, Lin Feng took a step forwards and grabbed Qing Feng’s hand. Qing Feng shivered. She glanced at Lin Feng.

Huo Xing Zi was astonished and looked at Lin Feng icily. Interesting. He had thought that Lin Feng had come for Jing, and actually had come for Qing Feng?

“I’m sorry. Qing Feng is mine,” Lin Feng said indifferently. The flames in Lin Feng’s eyes became even more dazzling.

Huo Xing Zi frowned, then smiled. “So, let’s see how strong you really are!”

“I’m here, I didn’t hide anything from you,” Lin Feng smiled thinly. Empty space strength surrounded Qing Feng and Jing.

Qing Feng was surprised, Jing grabbed her hand.

Jing was stunned. If Lin Feng could defeat Huo Xing Zi, it would be great. It would instantly and indubitably propel Lin Feng to a higher position within the Void Phoenix Clan.

Huo Xing Zi’s eyes were filled with terrifying flames. An ocean of flames appeared around him and Lin Feng. The atmosphere started burning!

However, Lin Feng calmly stood there patiently. He was just looking at Huo Xing Zi without moving.

The fire roared and surrounded everything. The crowd retreated.

That terrifying fire was scorching hot, it could burn them alive, Huo Xing Zi was a cultivator of the Tian Di layer, after all!

However, Lin Feng looked indifferent, as if nothing could affect him.

“Hmph!” Huo Xing Zi grunted icily. He jumped forwards, a fire mace appearing and slamming down towards Lin Feng. However, he frowned as his fire slowed down, and a fire man appeared and moved closer to him. A gigantic hand grabbed his mace.

“What was going on? He’s using his hands to grab Huo Xing Zi’s fire mace?” asked the crowd. Huo Xing Zi’s fire mace was terrifyingly powerful!

Huo Xing Zi wanted to take his mace back, but he couldn’t move it at all. Crackling sounds rattled out, and his mace broke apart even as another fist moved towards his head!

Huo Xing Zi shouted frantically. He released millions of flames towards the fist, and the air exploded. At the same time, he retreated, but the crowd realized that the fists were still moving towards him!

Huo Xing Zi’s face slightly changed. He raised his fists, and a terrifying godly fire strength emerged. Lin Feng released empty space strength, dimensions shattering around his fist.

“Break!” shouted Huo Xing Zi, condensing godly fire strength into his fingers. Nine flames appeared around his hands and turned into indestructible godly fire strength. The empty space strength broke apart.

Those watching shivered. Was that godly fire strength? How destructive!

Lin Feng suddenly disappeared, and only empty space strength remained. Huo Xing Zi suddenly turned around and lashed out with his fingers. A terrifying gigantic empty space hand grabbed him!

“Piss off!” shouted Huo Xing Zi furiously. He was stuck and staring at Lin Feng. He released more fire in waves towards Lin Feng. This guy’s empty space strength was incredible. He didn’t know that Lin Feng was only using pure empty space strength to fight against him.

“Can you see my cultivation level now?” asked Lin Feng, destroying the fire Huo Xing Zi used to attack him. He sounded totally unruffled.

Huo Xing Zi pulled a long face at his words. He was a genius from the Fire Shrine, but he lost this small battle miserably, how humiliating!

## Chapter 2278: Thoughts

---

Jing looked at Huo Xing Zi and said pitilessly, “You’re not that good. Do you think your fellow disciples are better than him? The Fire Shrine’s disciples aren’t necessarily talented!”

Huo Xing Zi was speechless as he stared at Lin Feng, “You’re really strong! I can’t use my full strength though, because we’re in the Void Phoenix Clan. Let’s go out to fight, what do you think?”

“I don’t have time,” said Lin Feng in a calm tone. He looked at Jing and Qing Feng, “Let’s go.”

Huo Xing Zi was agape. The fire in his eyes contained destructive strength ready to be unleashed... but, he felt oppressed. He couldn’t do much. This guy was really strong. He remembered what he had just thought... Let’s see if you’re strong enough for Qing Feng!

Regarding Qing Feng, I initially wanted to find someone because of my teacher’s friend. If Jing left the clan, I wanted to help Qing Feng leave the clan. It doesn’t have much to do with me though. But now, it seems I really need to help Qing Feng find someone, thought Huo Xing Zi, smiling on the inside. But if he let her marry Lin Feng, wouldn’t it be even more fun?

Huo Xing Zi didn’t like it when there was no trouble. Now, it was getting interesting! Lin Feng was extremely strong and he didn’t fear the Shrines; he was probably hiding his real social status.

—

Lin Feng didn’t care about what Huo Xing Zi thought. They headed to Qing Feng’s mother’s palace. The group of people entered her courtyard, where two people were sunbathing.

“Father, you’re here too...” said Jing to the middle-aged man. It was her father.

“Yes,” the middle-aged man nodded. He looked at the three

people, and in particular Lin Feng. He smiled and said, “Strange, your cultivation level seems confusing and chaotic, as if you were a cultivator of the top of the Huang Qi layer, but your inner Qi is too powerful for an emperor. What is your real cultivation level?”

“Tian Di layer,” replied Lin Feng with a polite smile. He was about as strong as a cultivator at the the top of the Tian Di layer, indeed, but his fighting abilities were better than that.

“Celestial Emperor... your Qi is indeed similar. But your concealment technique is incredible,” said the middle-aged man calmly. He looked curious. Lin Feng wasn’t using a concealment technique actually, he just had no cultivation level anymore. Other people couldn’t understand, so his cultivation level was indistinct.

“He’s a guest, why do you annoy him with his cultivation level?” said the beautiful woman next to the middle-aged man. She was extremely beautiful, and looked like a thirty-year old woman. She looked very alluring. She had delivered girls like Qing Feng and Jing, she was obviously really beautiful.

Jing and her father’s relations seem very harmonious..., thought Lin Feng.

“Right, please sit down,” said the middle-aged man, gesturing at chairs. He sounded quite friendly, not like a domineering and brutal half-Saint. He looked like an ordinary genial middle-aged man.

Lin Feng and the two women sat down. The beautiful woman smiled and said to Qing Feng, “Did you come here to introduce that little boy to your mama?”

“His name is Feng Ling. He’s my friend,” whispered Qing Feng.

“Only a friend?” said the beautiful woman, smiling at Qing Feng. Her eyes were twinkling, she wanted to know what Qing Feng really thought.

Qing Feng nodded. The woman laughed and looked at Lin Feng,

“Good little boy.”

“He’s indeed not bad. He’s young, he’s not older than a hundred years old, and he looks like a good cultivator. Feng Lin, which clan are you from?” asked the middle-aged man smiling.

“I have no clan. I practice cultivation in the countryside,” replied Lin Feng.

“In the countryside? Haven’t you joined any powerful group?” asked the middle-aged man. He was surprised. Lin Feng just nodded.

“That is rare. You should join the Fire Shrine. Are you interested?” asked the middle-aged man, smiling honestly and kindly.

“I practice empty space cultivation. I don’t control fire strength. I don’t want to annoy you,” said Lin Feng, refusing politely.

“Alright. I know some people in the Empty Space Shrine. But if I just recommended you like that, they would have doubts,” said the middle-aged man smiling and shaking his head, “You’ve reached such a cultivation level practicing in the wild, if you joined a Shrine, you’d have an incredible future.”

“Thank you very much, Master,” said Lin Feng, nodding politely.

“You seem to be a good match for Qing Feng, but a short time ago, I talked to Huo Xing Zi. My fellow disciple hopes to find an outstanding young man from the Fire Shrine for Qing Feng. Maybe he will find someone for her,” said the middle-aged man naturally, he also glanced at the woman next to him.

The woman frowned when she heard that. It meant a lot of different things; she knew what it meant, he didn’t need to explain.

Feng Lin was outstanding, but he wasn’t a member of any group. It was much better to have a marriage alliance with a Shrine. Of course, everybody came to that conclusion because of his tone of



speech, but in the end he just nodded naturally as if he hadn't said anything. It was one of his strengths.

He wasn't Qing Feng's father, after all, he couldn't decide for her; his wife had to decide for Qing Feng. Even if getting married with someone from a Shrine was better for Qing Feng.

The woman looked at Qing Feng and smiled, "Qing Feng, you came to see your mama, you probably want to talk to me."

"Actually, I came to see you." said Lin Feng. The woman turned to Lin Feng. Lin Feng continued, "Master, I came to the Void Phoenix Clan because of Qing Feng."

The woman perfectly understood. He didn't need to say more.

The woman smiled at Qing Feng, "If Qing Feng agrees, as a mother, I agree. If she's happy, I'm happy."

Lin Feng admired her for that; she really loved her daughter. The woman had gone through a lot in life, she was extremely strong, she was in a big clan, and she had had many problems. Now she just hoped her daughter would be happy; she didn't care about the rest, and even though her husband had expressed his opinion, it didn't mean he could decide alone.

Qing Feng was stunned. She raised her head and looked at her mother with a smile. "Mother..."

The older woman smiled and nodded.

"Mom, we're not disturbing you any longer then," Jing smiled. Then three of them quickly left.

The woman watched them go and smiled. The middle-aged man next to her sighed. "Darling, even though I understand why you agree, the Void Phoenix Clan might not agree."

"My daughter is not their toy," said the woman to the middle-aged man. She wasn't smiling anymore. The middle-aged man smiled wryly and shook his head, "You know I don't mean that. I

just want you to be happy.”

“Jing doesn’t like Huo Xing Zi at all. You’re the one organizing everything. But Qing Feng has nothing to do with you, so you don’t need to care.”

“Rou, why? Jing is my daughter, too. I want her to be happy. Huo Xing Zi attaches importance to cultivation and victories, but he’s very talented. In the future, he’ll have an important position in a Shrine. He’s a good match for Jing.”

“If you’re not happy, you don’t care about power and influence,” said his wife, shaking her head. She stood up and left. The middle-aged man sighed.

“Rou, Rou... aren’t you happy now? I did so much for you, why aren’t you happy...” The middle-aged man raised his head and looked after her. It was the first time he had doubts about his own choices!

# Chapter 2279: Understanding Attacks

---

People's perspectives and opinions were different. Jing's father knew that the cultivation world was complex and cruel. Therefore, he hoped that Jing's husband would be extremely strong and would be able to protect her, so she would be able to do what she wanted.

Jing's mother wanted her daughters to be in love with their husbands. She didn't like marriage alliances and such things, she found them immoral. She knew that a woman could be sad her entire life if she wasn't with the right man, so she hoped her daughters would love their husbands.

Neither of them were wrong.

However, Jing and Qing Feng were similar to their mother. Women and men thought differently.

---

Lin Feng didn't leave. The twenty-year period was almost over. If Shi Jue Lao Xian came, he would tell him he needed to wait in the Void Phoenix Clan.

Lin Feng was in his spirit world, seated cross-legged. He was studying the earth and sky. He had a new idea. In the distance, a golden area appeared in the air. It looked like a dazzling cage.

An ocean appeared, and waves rolled. Lin Feng could now make all his ideas come to reality.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and looked at what he had done.

Back in Purple Clouds, he had dreamt for a long time. He had studied life, he had studied books he had borrowed in the Fortune Shrine, and he had observed people a lot. He had decided to call his cultivation level God Level. It was because he controlled all sorts of strength. In his spirit world, he was like a supernatural being. He could do anything he wanted.

However, he had just started at the God Level. He was wondering what to do to improve on the path of cultivation.

Lin Feng realized that he couldn't practice cultivation like ordinary people anymore. He didn't need to study Ancient scriptures; he needed to understand life, to understand the world, to understand strength, and to understand himself. He was creating his cultivation, his own cultivation, his own level.

It was very important. He had to think carefully.

Lin Feng stretched out his hand and an incredible amount of cosmic energies condensed and turned into a strong empty space wind. Lin Feng released Holy Spirits, which entered the wind, then released Ancient strength. He was like a god who could create anything.

He waved his hand, and the empty space strength crackled. His heartbeat accelerated. His world could break, it wasn't indestructible. However, as he became stronger, so did his world!

"I'm not strong enough." Mused Lin Feng. His strength was chaotic, and even though he was strong, he still needed to make his energies fuse together even better. He needed to focus. He needed to pay attention to the details!

I have the control, the next step is creation. Those are parts of my God level, thought Lin Feng. Now, maybe that it was time to create a special kind of strength which would be perfect for his attacks.

"Sword attacks are powerful, gold cosmic energies are sharp, empty space energies make me faster, wind is sharp and increases my speed, Holy Spirit swords can help me improve my sword attacks, soundwave attacks can influence people's souls. If I add Nine Netherworlds strength in my Holy Spirits and cursing strength, my attacks are even more terrifying. With the Nine Words of my incantation, then it's even better. With weapon Qi, my attacks are even more explosive," he mumbled.

Those kinds of strengths were perfect for attacks. He could make godly sword attacks with those strengths.

It was important to pay attention to the nature of cosmic energies; a stronger and a weaker one, and you got average. If they were antagonist, then they were even less effective.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and started using the powers of the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. In his mind, everything changed every second. Everything was becoming better.

Lin Feng snapped opened his eyes and his strength surged out. Terrifying lights streaked across the sky and destroyed the empty space strength.

Lin Feng frowned and shook his head. "Nah, as soon as the energies emerged from my body, they fused together perfectly, but there's still a problem."

To carry out powerful attacks, he needed to attack quickly. He needed to condense as many types of strengths as quickly as possible, he needed the most explosive strength as possible.

Therefore, Lin Feng closed his eyes, evolved his strength, opened his eyes again, attacked, and continued that repetitive process over and over again.

He did that for three days. After three days, Lin Feng was facing sword lights, shining as if they would never disperse. They could destroy a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer within milliseconds.

Lin Feng's eyes twinkled. Finally, he moved. He released an awe-inspiring strength, dazzling golden lights streaked across the sky, and a gigantic sword trail appeared. The air shrieked, and sonic booms resonated for a while.

"That sword is a godly sword. I control it perfectly. It's powerful, it's a Ruler's Sword!" whispered Lin Feng. It was the first sword attack he created.

That kind of sword, at his cultivation level, was the best attack he

could create. It was also better than any defense he could have created. He could slaughter enemies with such an attack!

“That’s my Ruler’s Sword attack. In the future, I can study other types of strength, and I can create pure yet explosive attacks. I won’t just use pure attacks in the future, maybe I’ll be able to mix all sorts of strengths, such as oppression strength attacks based on the Ancient Holy Techniques. I’ll be able to oppress anyone like that. I’ll also be able to add new types of strength to those attacks!”

The twenty-year period was almost over, he needed some trump cards. Huo Xing Zi was a Celestial Emperor, but he was already terrifyingly strong. The battle they had had was simple, Huo Xing Zi hadn’t used his full strength. Even though Huo Xing Zi didn’t pose a threat to Lin Feng at all, Lin Feng’s ultimate goal couldn’t be someone like Huo Xing Zi. He would have to fight against people much, much stronger than Huo Xing Zi in the future!

“If I use oppressive strength, I need to put demon strength in my attacks, too. Demon strength is oppressive. Earth strength is heavy, but it’s not oppressive enough, unless I add some death strength, then I’ll be able to kill my opponents quickly!” he said to himself. Oppressive, aggressive, quick, those were important qualities for attacks.

With his Death Dao that had reached the maximum level, the Nine Words of his incantation, and cursing strength to attack people’s souls, he would be able to crush his opponents quickly and violently!

—

Lin Feng continued studying, staying focused. It was why he had become so strong, it was why he was talented. He focused. He concentrated. Many people were too distracted!

He continued studying and thinking for a few days and nights until he made his attack perfect.

—

Lin Feng didn't know that Qing Feng and Jing were staring at him outside, their beautiful eyes twinkling.

“He's been staring at nothing for seven days?” whispered Jing, speechless. He hadn't come back to his senses yet.

“Yes.” Qing Feng nodded, her eyes wide.

“That bastard!” said Jing. She looked at Qing Feng and said, “Have you ever had sex?”

Qing Feng's eyes twinkled, “We've never even talked that much, how could have anything happened between us?”

“Bastard!” said Jing coldly. She wanted to slap Lin Feng, “When he wakes up, I'll slap him.”

Lin Feng came back to his senses and heard that. He whispered, “Are you sure you want to slap me?”

He opened his eyes and chuckled, smiling broadly, but Jing felt ice-cold. She had almost forgotten that this guy was already too strong!

## Chapter 2280: Xue Jing Xiao

---

Snow Clan, a silvery-white snowy world...

On a vast snowy field, two young people seated in the snow, looking at each other. In front of them was a teapot. Surprisingly, water could still boil there.

“Jing Xiao, many years ago, I hoped you’d come to the Ice and Snow Shrine to study. But you always refused. Now, you’re already so strong, you can’t refuse anymore,” smiled the younger person. Snowflakes covered them.

Xue Jing Xiao smiled back and said, “Di Jiang, you’re perseverant.”

“You’re such a good friend, I wish we could study in the Ice and Snow Shrine together. That’s why I’ve been trying for so long. Think about it. We’ve known each other for thirty years, the first time I invited you, you refused, and we even had a big fight!” said Di Jiang, smiling warmly. “Now, we’re both public figures. Our youth was funny.”

“I remember. Back then, I thought I could defeat you, even if you were from a Shrine!” Xue Jing Xiao laughed.

“I’ve never defeated you, either.” said Di Jiang laughing. He took a sip of tea and said, “I’ve been spending time with my beloved sister. If you don’t ask, I’ll be angry.”

“How’s Di Chan?” Xue Jing Xiao grinned.

“You always refuse to join the Shrine, do you think she’s happy?” Di Jiang said to Xue Jing Xiao. He rolled his eyes.

Xue Jing Xiao smiled wryly, “So many years, you understand me. I don’t have emotions. Emotions would prevent me from becoming a stronger cultivator.”

“Chan has said she would never prevent you from becoming



stronger,” said Di Jiang, “Don’t you trust her? Or like her?”

“Don’t provoke me. I like her, too. She knows that.” said Xue Jing Xiao.

When Di Jiang heard that, he smiled happily, “So many years have passed, I’ve been waiting for you to say that.”

Xue Jing Xiao stood up. He said calmly, “Now, a Forbidden Person has appeared. The Continent of the Nine Clouds is going to change.”

Xue Jing Xiao gazed into the distance. Di Jiang was startled. The Ice and Snow Shrine had heard about that, how had he?

“A few days ago, Huo Xing Zi from the Fire Shrine proposed a marriage alliance to the Void Phoenix Clan. They’re progressing, it’s only a matter of time. They want to form an alliance with a Shrine to become stronger,” said Di Jiang calmly. He was putting it in a way which made the Void Phoenix Clan look cheap. But the Shrines had many cultivators like Huo Xing Zi; if they could all get married with women from Holy Sage Ruler Clans, then it would be beneficial for everybody.

“So you came to me,” said Xue Jing Xiao, smiling.

Di Jiang nodded calmly. “I’ve heard that a genius has appeared in the Snow Clan, and that he was walking on the same path as the four monarchs,” said Di Jiang mused.

Xue Jing Xiao nodded, “You’re talking about Zhe Tian. Indeed, he’s astonishingly talented. In the future, he’ll be much stronger than me.”

When Di Jiang heard about Zhe Tian, he shivered. He was even stronger than he had thought then, he couldn’t actually imagine...

“But don’t try to make him join the Ice and Snow Shrine. The four monarchs are strong. Xue Ao is talented, but his personality isn’t good enough. If Zhe Tian managed to control himself and stayed in the Snow Clan, he would be able to become the king of

the Snow Clan. If he can't, I'll help Xue Ao. They can't join the Ice and Snow Shrine though," said Xue Jing Xiao calmly. The Snow Clan's future king couldn't join any Shrine. It was a rule!

Di Jiang nodded. He understood.

"Come with me to the Shrine for a walk?" Di Jiang asked Xue Jing Xiao.

"Alright, let's go and see Di Chan," Xue Jing Xiao nodded. They both got ready to leave for the Ice and Snow Shrine.

—

At the top of a mountain a few dozens of li away from the snowy field was an old woman. Next to her was someone with his hands clasped on his back.

"I wouldn't have thought that Jing Xiao would agree to go to his Shrine," said the old woman, surprised.

"Jing Xiao knows what to do. He's much more talented than Xue Ao. We've never prevented Xue Ao from doing anything, so we can't prevent Jing Xiao from doing anything, either," said the other one calmly.

The old woman nodded, "The four monarchs are rising. But now there is a Forbidden Person in the world, and the Shrines are worried. We have to remain discreet if we want to rise, and we can't be friends with just the Ice and Snow Shrine."

"Of course. I've talked to the Fire Shrine. We have to maintain good relations with at least three Shrines."

The old woman nodded, "If I'm not mistaken, the twenty-year period we agreed with Shi Jue Lao Xian is almost over."

"I think so, too."

"Good, he's still practicing cultivation." The old woman shook her head, "I don't know what kind of person Shi Jue Lao Xian will bring. But no matter who he brings, his son is Zhe Tian, he gave us

a big gift. If he comes, send Xue Ao and tell him not to kill that boy. After all, he's Zhe Tian's father; Zhe Tian won't be happy."

Because Zhe Tian was talented, the Snow Clan didn't want to displease him. If Zhe Tian had been weak, they would have forgotten about Lin Feng a long time ago.

Back then, only the one who had agreed with Shi Jue Lao Xian had been there, other people didn't know who had conceived a child with Meng Qing. But in twenty years, that emperor couldn't have become extremely strong. Xue Ao was a Celestial Imperial Beast, he could slap the enemy and kill him instantly.

———

In the Snow Clan, apart from Meng Qing, someone else knew about Lin Feng: Xue Shen Feng!

Xue Shen Feng was in a cave, practicing cultivation. He came out and slowly walked forwards. He was already a great emperor. However, in the past, he had been humiliated by Lin Feng and hadn't forgotten about that.

"The twenty-year period is almost over," sighed Xue Shen Feng. Time flies...

He raised his head and gazed into the distance. He whispered, "Ten years ago, you ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. How strong are you now? Will you come to the Snow Clan?"

"Twenty years is not much, even if you're extremely talented. If you come to the Snow Clan, you will die. Xue Ao is a Celestial Imperial Beast already. He's terrifyingly strong. Back then you said you wanted to defeat the monarch of the Snow Clan. Apart from Xue Ao, there's someone much stronger..."

In the Snow Clan, apart from Xue Shen Feng, only Meng Qing remembered the twenty-year agreement. The Snow Clan didn't take the agreement to heart.

Nobody in the Snow Clan thought that that agreement could change the destiny of their whole clan and that many people would regret it...

---

During those days, Meng Qing was at the top of a snowy mountain, gazing into the distance. Time passed slowly for her. She was nervous, but she was also convinced Lin Feng would show up. She had never doubted that.

Zhe Tian was behind Meng Qing, and knew what his mother was thinking. He also gazed into the distance. He was impatient. He had heard many stories about his father from Meng Qing. He had seen him only once, when he was still young, but now he was older.

“Zhe Tian,” said Meng Qing.

“Mother.” Zhe Tian took a step forwards and sat down next to his mother.

“Your father is coming. He will take us with him. If the Snow Clan doesn’t respect the agreement, there will be a big conflict between the Snow Clan and your father, what will you do?” Meng Qing asked him.

He was not surprised. He had thought about that issue. No matter whether his father lost or not, he had to face such issues!

## Chapter 2281: Day of the Agreement

---

“My father probably hates the Snow Clan,” said Zhe Tian. “Mom, you told me that when you were pregnant, dad was very happy, you were happy together... but when the Snow Clan intervened. They kidnapped you, and if a Saint hadn’t helped, they would have killed him. Even though I wasn’t there, I can imagine what it felt like.”

“I can also imagine what it must have felt like to be kidnapped by a clan in which you’ve never lived, and to be separated from the most important person in your life for twenty years, and on top of that, they nearly killed him. I know you hate them,” said Zhe Tian. He knew that his mother had cried a lot in life because of those things. He knew how she felt.

“However, my position is different, because I was born here and the Snow Clan is good to me. Therefore, for me, the best thing would be if the Snow Clan could accept my father. If that’s impossible, I won’t let the Snow Clan hurt my father,” Zhe Tian said calmly.

Meng Qing looked at Zhe Tian and sighed. So many years had passed, Zhe Tian had grown up in the Snow Clan. In the end, he liked the Snow Clan. She couldn’t blame him for that.

But Meng Qing understood that the Snow Clan was very powerful. With Lin Feng’s personality, he wouldn’t accept having cordial relations with the Snow Clan. Lin Feng had been humiliated by them. Even if the Snow Clan said they agreed to let Lin Feng live with her, would he accept? Could things be that simple?

And Lin Feng wasn’t the only person to think that way. Any man, after being humiliated like that, wouldn’t accept such a thing. They had stolen the most important person of his life. They wanted to kill him. After a long time, if they accepted letting them

live together, could he forgive them?

Even if the Snow Clan was her clan, Lin Feng wouldn't accept such a thing!

"It's difficult for you," Meng Qing said, caressing Zhe Tian's head. No matter what Zhe Tian decided, she wouldn't blame him; he was one of the two men she loved the most in life.

Zhe Tian said nothing, but then he whispered, "Mom... if he comes, do you think he can win?"

"Of course!" said Meng Qing confidently.

Zhe Tian nodded. He had seen how strong his father was when he was still a child; he had faith in his father, too!

"I don't think anyone in the Snow Clan knows your father is the one who ranked first in the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. You saw your father there. Unfortunately, back then, I wasn't interested in going on out and going to such events. Otherwise, I would have been able to see your father," said Meng Qing. She smiled when she thought about Lin Feng. She was convinced that he was going to come soon!

"After Saint Jue took you back, he never mentioned things of the lower world, maybe he has forgotten about the agreement. Xue Ao has been practicing cultivation intensively. He didn't even pay attention to the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. However, Jing Xiao did, but he doesn't know my father. There aren't many people who know who my father is in the Snow Clan. But when he comes, everybody will know who he is!" whispered Zhe Tian. Meng Qing nodded.

The Snow Clan didn't know Lin Feng, maybe it was just due to a strange combination of circumstances. Saint Jue hadn't really taken the agreement to heart. They had even forgotten about the agreement.

---

As they were talking, out in the vast snowy world, someone suddenly opened his eyes. It was Saint Jue, the one who had brought Meng Qing back then. He took a deep breath, and the snow around him melted.

“The twenty-year period is almost over,” murmured Saint Jue. He had activated a sort of alarm in his mind to wake him up while he was meditating in seclusion. He took out a jade talisman and said, “Xue Ao, the twenty-year period is almost over. If you’re not in the Snow Clan, come back. If old Shi Jue comes back with the guy, you can handle the situation alone, I’ll naturally come and watch.”

He closed his eyes again. He didn’t really believe that Shi Jue Lao Xian would bring Lin Feng back. He asked Xue Ao to get prepared just so that Shi Jue Lao Xian couldn’t say that they hadn’t respected the agreement.

Saint Jue didn’t know that Shi Jue Lao Xian had already arrived in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

---

A few people were in a restaurant in the Northwest Area; Lin Feng, Qing Feng, and Jing were waiting together.

Someone suddenly appeared in front of them out of nowhere and smiled, “I’m here!”

The person took out a gourd and took a big swig of alcohol. His cheeks turned red.

“Teacher!” Qing Feng said happily. Shi Jue Lao Xian hadn’t changed. He still drank all the time.

“My good disciple,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian with a smile. Then, he looked at Lin Feng in amusement. “There’s something wrong. What kind of cultivation level is that? You look like an emperor and at the same time you don’t; you also look like a great emperor, and at the same time you don’t.”

“Tian Di layer,” said Lin Feng. A particular strength appeared around him. Shi Jue Lao Xian was staring at him. After a few seconds, he smiled. “Interesting. You’re really a Celestial Emperor. You can even hide your cultivation level from me!”

Lin Feng smiled. He wasn’t a Celestial Emperor, either. Thanks to some techniques he had learned from the Fortune Shrine, he could fake his cultivation level. However, if the difference between his real cultivation level and the cultivation level he pretended to be was too wide, then it was easy to see it wasn’t true. However, Lin Feng had no cultivation level, so there couldn’t be a real difference between his real nonexistent cultivation level, and the one he pretended to have, and it was enough for Shi Jue Lao Xian to believe him when Lin Feng showed him the strength of the Tian Di layer.

“You became a Celestial Emperor within twenty years, you don’t really need me anymore,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian with a laugh. “But back then, Xue Ao was already a powerful great imperial beast, he must be a powerful Celestial Imperial Beast now. Do you think you can defeat him easily?”

“Yes,” said Lin Feng nodding. He could easily defeat Xue Ao indeed.

“Good, but the agreement was that you would have to fight against one of their cultivators with a king-type body, in the end. Apart from Xue Ao, they have another one. I don’t know what his cultivation level is now,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly. Then, he took another big swig of booze. His cheeks were even redder. He looked happy, as if alcohol was the only thing which could make him happy in the world.

“I think that if the Snow Clan loses, they might not necessarily respect the agreement,” said Lin Feng calmly.

“Of course, you must inform the Fortune Shrine first. All the Shrines want to kill you now. If you go to the Snow Clan as Lin



Feng, the Shrines will quickly know you're there," Shi Jue Lao Xian said to Lin Feng telepathically. Even though he had been traveling all around the world, he had been paying attention to Lin Feng's adventures.

"Yes," Lin Feng nodded. As the Diviner had told him, he would need the help of the Fortune Shrine. Even though he would be able to get his revenge, he couldn't face the whole Snow Clan, it was too powerful.

"Go to the Fortune Shrine for a couple days, get prepared. I know that the strongest cultivator of the Snow Clan who has a king-type body is in the Ice and Snow Shrine. He's very talented. He's much stronger than Xue Ao," said Shi Jue Lao Xian.

Lin Feng nodded and stood up. "Alright, I'm off. I'll get ready."

"I'll come and pick you up," said Shi Jue Lao Xian dismissively. Lin Feng left the Northwest Area and headed back to the Fortune Shrine.

-----

Time passed. The Snow Clan was peaceful and calm, but the old woman organized a few things because something great was happening in the Snow Clan.

Xue Jing Xiao had come back with a woman from the Ice and Snow Shrine. She was Di Jiang's younger sister, Di Chan. She was in love with Xue Jing Xiao.

At the same time, many people in the Snow Clan also learned that Xue Jing Xiao had agreed to become a member of the Ice and Snow Shrine. The Snow Clan informed the Fire Shrine about it, so some people from the Fire Shrine were also going to take part in the ceremony. After all, Xue Jing Xiao was a strong cultivator of his generation, and all his friends, like Di Jiang, were geniuses.

-----

Lin Feng was in the periphery of Fortune City. He gazed into the

distance. He had gone through so much in life, he was less and less worried about random things. He wasn't even angry at Yi Ren Lei anymore, only when he was in a bad mood. Even though she had made bad decisions in her life, she had never promised anything to Lin Feng.

However, he had never forgotten what the Snow Clan had done to him back in the days. They had humiliated him, and tried to kill him. They had stolen his wife, and he had never even seen his own child!

# Chapter 2282: Agreement with the Snow Clan

---

Xue Ao came back to the Snow Clan. Many people gathered together to greet him. Many elders also showed up, especially people from a sub-branch of the Snow Clan, the Ao Clan. Xue Ao was going to become a king of the Snow Clan, the Ao Clan was extremely proud. Xue Ao's Qi was very stable, and his strength was explosive. He was at the top of his cultivation level!

The old woman arrived and smiled at Xue Ao. "Xue Ao, you're back."

"Yes, Saint Jue asked me to come back. But, I don't think it is useful, because Shi Jue Lao Xian won't come. Twenty years ago, that guy was talented, but he was only an emperor. At most, he became a Celestial Emperor, and that would be incredible already. If he has just broken through to the Tian Di layer, he can't fight against me." Xue Ao had become less arrogant, but he was still proud.

"It doesn't matter. At least you're here for Jing Xiao. You should learn from him too," said the old woman. Xue Ao nodded. Among the people of his generation, only Xue Jing Xiao had a higher position than him in the Snow Clan.

"Recently, many new geniuses have emerged in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The geniuses of the previous Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds are becoming stronger. I've heard that Chu Chun Qiu has become a Celestial Emperor. He can already defeat people at the top of the Tian Di layer. The others have disappeared, but they're probably just as strong as him. Xue Ao, you have a king-type body, you're a treasure in the Snow Clan. You can't consider everybody and everything beneath your notice. There are enough geniuses in this world, and the global situation is becoming chaotic," the old

woman said to Xue Ao.

“The people of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds have become so strong already?” Xue Ao was startled. He hadn’t paid attention to the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds back then, but he had heard that some of them were really strong...

“Yes, I’ve seen the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds fight, some of them are incredible geniuses,” said the old woman nodding, “Now, all the Shrines want to kill them.”

“I hope I’ll see some of them,” said Xue Ao coldly. The old woman was speechless. She had just told him not to be too arrogant, but he hadn’t taken it to heart. It was his personality though, she couldn’t make him change if he didn’t want to.

The Snow Clan was gigantic, and had many clans. Their strengths determined their position within the Snow Clan. The weakest sub-clans were at the periphery, the strongest ones were in the center, where there were more resources.

Of course, there were also many small worlds in the Snow Clan. The Snow Clan was as big as an empire. It wasn’t an ordinary clan. They had many sorts of snow beasts, and all sorts of powers.

—————

Lin Feng was already within the territory of the Snow Clan. There was snow everywhere. When Lin Feng arrived, he took a deep breath and slowly landed onto the snow. Two footprints appeared.

There was no guard at the periphery of the Snow Clan, They didn’t need guards. If someone wanted to kill people in the Snow Clan, it meant that they were extremely strong and they could thus easily kill guards. So having guards would have just served as cannon fodder. However, to get to the central part of the Snow

Clan, people had to cross many sub-clans' territories.

Lin Feng took a deep breath. Twenty years. Finally, he was here!

A blizzard started up. Lin Feng's cheeks were icy cold. He slowly walked forwards, determined and resolute.

Meng Qing, Zhe Tian, I'm here!, thought Lin Feng. How many days had passed? He wanted to take his wife and son back. Finally, he was going to have the opportunity!

—

After some time, Lin Feng saw a gigantic ice statue. It was staring at him and said, "A stranger here, die!"

Lin Feng was startled that the statue could talk. However, he had his hands clasped behind his back and said to the statue, "I'm Lin Feng. I have an agreement with a Saint from the Snow Clan."

"I don't know about it. Die!" stated the statue and it threw itself at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng jumped forwards, his hands still clasped behind his back. A powerful strength surrounded him, without effect. The gigantic statue frowned. Alarm whistles rose, and instantly, many statues appeared and filled out the sky.

Lin Feng moved forwards at top speed. The statues were also really fast, and chased after him. However, they realized him was already too far ahead.

Another strong wind brushed against them. They raised their heads, but saw nothing.

"Lin Feng, I came here regarding our agreement twenty years ago." shouted Lin Feng, his voice carrying far into the distance. Many strong cultivators from the Snow Clan raised their heads and looked at him coldly. Some terrifying beasts rose up in the air, but the wind was moving too fast, they only saw a shadow. Ordinary beasts couldn't see anything at all.

Someone heard Lin Feng and rose up into the air, gazing into the distance coldly. He saw someone arriving at high speed.

“Freeze!” he shouted. Instantly, the atmosphere froze. He frowned and turned around. He was furious, because the intruder had disappeared into the distance already.

“Lin Feng, I came here regarding our agreement twenty years ago!”

His voice continued echoing. Many strong cultivators frowned, Lin Feng? Agreement? With whom? And who was Lin Feng? That name sounded familiar...

The Snow Clan was thirty thousand li wide. Very soon, that voice echoed everywhere. Some strong cultivators wanted to attack, but they sensed oppressive energies surround them... a Saint's Qi! A Saint had come to the Snow Clan! What was going to happen?

“Lin Feng, I came here regarding our agreement twenty years ago!”

----

Meng Qing was at the top of a mountain. She heard that and shivered, smiling widely.

Finally, he was here!

Zhe Tian was stunned and gazed into the distance. He whispered, “Father!”

Some elders appeared there and surrounded them. Meng Qing was trembling. “Elder!”

“Ling Long, don't move,” ordered the old man, staring at Meng Qing. He was from the Snow Fox sub-clan.

She nodded, “Please protect us and let us watch from the distance.”

“Alright,” nodded the elder. They were still surprised. Meng Qing's husband had actually come!

—

The old woman also heard that voice. She was surprised and gazed off into the distance, “Ao, he’s here. You go.”

“Yes,” Xue Ao nodded. He looked sharp and ice-cold as he flew towards the voice. Many old men’s silhouettes also flickered as they followed him.

—

Lin Feng finally stopped. He was in a frozen world. He saw a group of people moving towards him. It continued snowing, and he was quickly covered by a layer of snow. Many beasts from the Snow Clan had gathered around him already.

He looked calm and composed. Meng Qing probably knew he was here now...

Xue Ao and the others arrived, and glared at Lin Feng. Xue Ao spat out some ice Qi.

“You want to die.” At that moment, a beast was staring at Lin Feng. He suddenly jumped forwards and brandished his claws. They were extremely sharp. He moved faster than the eye, aiming at Lin Feng’s head.

Lin Feng raised his hand and slapped out. The ice around him exploded.

“Ah...” The beast gave a horrible and painful scream, then collapsed and crashed to the ground, a crater appearing in the snow around him. His arms were hanging loose. He was coughing blood, staining the white snow.

## Chapter 2283: I Want Some Fun!

---

Lin Feng took a step forwards, the snow crackled under his feet. Beasts were surrounding him and the air hummed as bestial Qi surrounded Lin Feng.

“Master Shi Jue, I brought Lin Feng regarding the agreement with the Snow Clan,” said a dimly discernible voice in the sky. A silhouette condensed above the snowy territory. Then, a bottle of wine appeared, but the alcohol froze. “It’s really cold here...”

The members of the Snow Clan looked at Shi Jue Lao Xian coldly. They sensed he was extremely strong.

“How come he’s not here?” Shi Jue asked Xue Ao.

“Call Saint Jue!” said Xue Ao. Then, he looked at Shi Jue Lao Xian and said, “You brought him here, that’s impressive. But he will just humiliate himself.”

“Is that so? Don’t rush anyway. Wait for him and we’ll see,” smiled Shi Jue Lao Xian easily.

Xue Ao smiled coldly. “Alright, I won’t rush, even if I can’t wait to cripple his cultivation. Grandma told me to spare his life because of Zhe Tian. I won’t kill him.”

Lin Feng remained silent. He didn’t need to say anything. The only important thing would be the battle.

“We’ll see if he deserves a battle against a genius of the Snow Clan first. How could he compete with someone who has a king-type body?” said someone slowly descending from the sky. He looked at Lin Feng coldly, his Qi similar to Xue Ao’s Qi. He looked even more sinister, with extremely sharp teeth.

He disappeared instantly and reappeared in front of Lin Feng.

He roared excitedly. Lin Feng saw a gigantic mouth open in front of him. He felt a bit oppressed. At the same time, terrifying claws



slashed towards him.

Lin Feng frowned. He raised his hands and put them in front of his chest. The strong cultivators of the Snow Clan watched him coldly. They could already imagine Lin Feng's lacerated corpse lying in the snow.

"Hee, hee..." the beast laughed, the strong cultivators of the Snow Clan were startled. They saw the gigantic beast bite Lin Feng's arm, they had thought the beast would manage to eat Lin Feng in one bite. However, Lin Feng had used his arm to block the attack, and the beast stopped moving.

His teeth couldn't pierce through Lin Feng's arm. His teeth were terrifyingly sharp, but Lin Feng's arm was as hard as diamond!

"Is it fun?" Lin Feng asked the gigantic beast. He looked unruffled, even though he was facing a terrifying beast.

The beast looked at Lin Feng coldly. His head was as big as Lin Feng's body.

He let go of Lin Feng's arms and bit towards his head. His roar made the whole area tremble. He hadn't thought Lin Feng would block his first attack with just his arm...

A sharp impact sounded out, and the crowd saw the gigantic body get slapped and smashed away. It was like Lin Feng had pinched a big insect.

The beast howled angrily. The beasts around didn't look at Lin Feng in a disdainful way anymore, however.

Xue Ao smiled broadly. "Interesting. You're a Celestial Emperor. It's fun to compete with such people."

In only twenty years, Lin Feng, initially a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer, had become a Celestial Emperor. That was rare, he was a real genius. Xue Ao was pleasantly surprised. He couldn't wait to fight against Lin Feng now. Initially, he had thought the battle would be boring.

When Lin Feng saw Xue Ao's broadly, he replied lightly, "It's going to be fun, indeed."

Xue Shen Feng appeared behind Xue Ao. He glanced at Lin Feng coldly. Lin Feng had become a Celestial Emperor? How was that possible? He knew that twenty years before, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Lin Feng was only an emperor!

In the distance, snowflakes floated around, and the temperature continued falling. Snowflakes condensed and a silhouette appeared. It was Saint Jue!

He looked at Shi Jue Lao Xian and smiled, "I didn't think you'd really bring him here."

"We agreed, so we have to do it," replied Shi Jue Lao Xian, taking a swig. His breath smelled of alcohol.

"You sound very confident," Saint Jue remarked indifferently, while looking at Lin Feng. "He became a Celestial Emperor within twenty years, that's rare. No wonder you were confident twenty years ago. You understood how talented he is. He does progress quickly."

Then, he looked at Xue Ao and said, "Xue Ao, he almost has the same cultivation level as you. Don't make us lose face."

"Don't worry, grandpa," said Xue Ao coldly. He stepped forwards, footprints appeared in the snow behind him.

—

In the distance, the old woman looked over there, "Saint Jue is here. Go and watch."

"I just heard that he is a Celestial Emperor already. Zhe Tian's father is really talented, people like that are rare," said the old woman indifferently. "Lin Feng, I've heard that name somewhere."

"Grandma, the winner of the Meeting of the Continent of the

Nine Clouds was called Lin Feng, too,” said someone next to her.

“Oh right! I don’t remember their names. I just saw some battles. No wonder his name sounds familiar.” whispered the old woman. Then, she frowned, “It can’t be the same person though, right?”

The person next to her frowned, and after a minute the old woman hurriedly said, “Let’s go and see.”

She disappeared from there quickly.

—

At the same time, Xue Jing Xiao was already within the territory of the Snow Clan. When he arrived and saw all those people gathered in the same place, he was surprised and murmured, “What’s going on?”

“Jing Xiao, what’s going on here? It’s lively,” said Di Chan smiling. They both continued moving forwards.

Xue Jing Xiao said, “Saint Jue!”

“Jing Xiao?” Saint Jue looked surprised. He landed in front of Jing Xiao and smiled, “You came back too?”

“Saint Jue, what’s going on here?” asked Xue Jing Xiao when he saw Lin Feng. He also glanced at Xue Ao. Suddenly, he frowned and muttered, “It’s him!”

Xue Jing Xiao and Zhe Tian had watched the battles of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds together. He remembered Lin Feng perfectly. He had been amazed by his performance.

“An agreement made twenty years ago,” replied Saint Jue.

“Eh?” Xue Jing Xiao frowned. Even though he didn’t know much about the agreement, he had heard about it. But the agreement was between the Snow Clan and two other people: Shi Jue Lao Xian and Meng Qing’s husband, Zhe Tian’s father.

Was Lin Feng Zhe Tian’s father?

“Did Zhe Tian recognize him back then?” whispered Xue Jing Xiao.

Saint Jue looked at him strangely and asked, “Jing Xiao, did you say something?”

A strong wind blew past. The old woman arrived too. When she saw Lin Feng, she was stunned. It was the man she had seen in some people’s memories.

How come it’s you?, thought the old woman. She was astonished. The person who Saint Jue had made an agreement in the lower world with was him? That young man had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds! He was even the member of the Fortune Shrine. He really cared about Meng Qing!

That young man wasn’t just someone who had been humiliated in the lower world, he also had a social status, he was a core disciple in the Fortune Shrine!

Saint Jue didn’t understand and frowned. “You...?”

“Haha!” Shi Jue Lao Xian burst into laughter when he saw people’s faces. He raised his gourd and took a big swig of booze and said, “Your faces are so funny. I hope they’ll be even more funny afterwards.”

“Saint Jue, that’s Lin Feng! He finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds! He’s a disciple of the Fortune Shrine now!” said the old woman. Saint Jue’s face stiffened in astonishment.

Xue Ao was astonished too. However, it was what he wanted. It would be fun!

## Chapter 2284: Make Peace?

---

Saint Jue was astonished as he looked at Lin Feng. At that moment, he started thinking that this young man wasn't a weakling after all. Back then, Lin Feng was talented, but as a Saint, he couldn't think highly of Lin Feng, especially since he was a Saint from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

But now, twenty years had passed and the difference between them had become much smaller. On top of that, he hadn't come to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds relying on Shi Jue Lao Xian, he had come to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds relying on himself. He had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and become a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine!

Fate was strange sometimes. Lin Feng had perfectly controlled his own life. He looked totally composed. Saint Jue could see that Lin Feng was furious, but he didn't show it. If he were Lin Feng, he would be furious, too. He understood why Lin Feng was furious. But that was life, and life was cruel. Weaklings were humiliated often, and that was normal.

However, he didn't despise Lin Feng anymore. He even thought highly of him now.

If Lin Feng had been weak, they wouldn't even have spent a minute on him, but he had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he was talented, and he was a member of the Fortune Shrine. It proved he was extremely strong and talented.

—

Meng Qing and Zhe Tian were standing at the top of a snowy mountain. Behind them were many elders from the Snow Fox Clan.

“Zhe Tian, that’s your father,” said Meng Qing, beaming with joy.

Zhe Tian clenched his fists and nodded.

“Back then, the Saint of the Snow Clan nearly killed your father. He kidnapped me and forced me to come here. Now, your father has ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and he’s a member of a Shrine, he’s going to pick us up. Many elders attach importance to you in the Snow Clan, they’ve made great efforts to raise you. I respect your choices, you must be grateful.

However, I will remember Saint Jue’s callousness my entire life. He wanted to kill your father back then. I will never forgive him and Xue Ao” declared Meng Qing. She didn’t say anything bad about the Snow Fox Clan.

The elders sighed. Meng Qing had grown up outside, then she had been kidnapped and forced to return. She didn’t have any sense of belonging, it was to be expected. When he was a child, Zhe Tian didn’t spend much time with his mother. However, she remained his mother, they had the same blood, but he had the blood of the Snow Clan, too...

“Yes,” Zhe Tian nodded. He couldn’t be enemies with the Snow Clan, he had many friends here, he had lived there his whole life. They had raised him. Many people in the Snow Clan liked him. When he was a child, he understood a lot and he knew that people from the Snow Clan liked him, especially people from the Snow Fox Clan. He was their prized descendant!

Meng Qing didn’t say much, she just gazed into the distance. She didn’t require anything from Zhe Tian. She didn’t want him to disown his Clan.

—

The old woman was annoyed, if she had known that Lin Feng

would succeed like that in life, she would have asked Xue Ao to go and pick them up, and she would have brought Lin Feng back to the Snow Clan, as well.

But now it was too late. Twenty years had passed and things were different. Nobody could have anticipated that in the past. She didn't even know who Lin Feng was back then...

—

Saint Jue felt bad too. A genius from the Fortune Shrine... This was indeed troublesome for the Snow Clan. If Lin Feng died at some point, it'd be great, otherwise he might become important in the Shrine, and the Snow Clan would then have problems.

But the Snow Clan couldn't kill Lin Feng. Everybody knew he was from the Fortune Shrine, nobody would dare kill him.

However, Saint Jue was a Saint, he had gone through a lot in life. He quickly thought of several solutions. Finally, he had an idea and said to Lin Feng, "Since you're already so strong, no matter who wins or loses today, you can take Meng Qing away with you. Even though she is a queen in the Snow Clan, we agree to let her leave with you. Regarding Zhe Tian, you can perform your duties as a father. However, the Snow Clan needs him, he'll have a high position in the Snow Clan in the future.

"Regarding you and the Snow Clan, you have nothing to do with the Snow Clan. You're just related to Zhe Tian," said Saint Jue.

Shi Jue Lao Xian looked at him strangely. He admired Saint Jue at that moment, he had thought of so many things in a few seconds, how quick-witted!

He would allow Lin Feng to take Meng Qing with him and perform his duties as a father, it was a compromise. He had recognized Lin Feng's talent. He didn't want to offend Lin Feng and the Fortune Shrine.

At the same time, he said Lin Feng had nothing to do with the

Snow Clan to protect themselves, because they knew all the Shrines wanted to kill the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He wanted to draw a clear line between Lin Feng and the Snow Clan.

It was the best plan for the Snow Clan. If Lin Feng was talented, or died, it would have nothing to do with them. That way, they offended nobody. He had even accepted letting one of their members who had a king-type body leave the Snow Clan!

Lin Feng understood why Saint Jue proposed that, while on top of that, they wanted to keep Zhe Tian.

In the past, he had nearly killed Lin Feng, kidnapped his wife, and now, as if nothing had happened back then, he was nice and wanted to come to a compromise.

Therefore, Lin Feng smiled and said, "I can accept, but you have to accept my requirements too."

"What requirements?"

"First, many people tried to kill me back then in Qi Tian Holy Town. I don't know where the insignificant ones have disappeared to except for you and Xue Ao, so you must kill yourselves. Second, the order must have come from high up in the hierarchy, the one who gave that order must kneel down in front of me and apologize to me and my wife, and be jailed for twenty years. If you can do those things, I'll accept your proposition."

Everybody was astonished. How insane! He wanted a Saint and a genius who had a king-type body to kill themselves!?!

"You're dreaming, I think," said Saint Jue, staring at Lin Feng.

"Don't you think you're dreaming, too?" replied Lin Feng coldly. They had tried to kill him, they had kidnapped his wife, they had made him wait for twenty years, and now because he was a disciple of the Fortune Shrine, they wanted to be friends with him and act as if nothing had happened back in the days? That was just



ridiculous!

Saint Jue looked at Lin Feng. After remaining silent for a few seconds, he said, “You’re young, why be so stubborn? Let’s be happy. And think before talking, what you do or say could have consequences.”

“Cough cough!” Shi Jue Lao Xian coughed his alcohol and rolled his eyes, “Old buddy, if your disciple who has a king-type body dies, you won’t be that happy.”

Saint Jue looked at Shi Jue Lao Xian coldly and said, “I am merciful. If we did as we agreed twenty years ago, he wouldn’t stand a chance.”

“Don’t be merciful. Let’s do as we agreed,” said Lin Feng indifferently, glancing at Xue Ao, “By the way, if I inadvertently kill your disciple who has a king-type body, will you go against the agreement?”

Saint Jue looked at Lin Feng coldly, he saw Lin Feng smile thinly and said, “Empty words. If you died, would the Fortune Shrine let us off?”

“If I die against him, it means I deserved it. The Fortune Shrine will not do anything stupid for someone incompetent and weak,” said Lin Feng indifferently. Saint Jue understood.

“If I die, it’ll be my fault,” said Xue Ao coldly.

Saint Jue nodded, “If you kill Xue Ao, the Snow Clan will not get involved.”

“I can fight happily then,” Lin Feng said indifferently. He shot forwards, a terrifying wind started blowing around him.

The snow under Lin Feng’s feet exploded. A mighty strength surrounded him. His blood started boiling.

“Your Dao power is not bad,” said Lin Feng indifferently. That Dao power would have made an ordinary great emperor explode

instantly.

It was as if the earth and sky were about to explode. Lin Feng was shaking as the snow exploded around him.

Xue Ao threw himself at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was surrounded by a layer of ice, and starting to freeze. Xue Ao wanted to immobilize him as he condensed his best attack. He wanted to kill Lin Feng as quickly as possible!

“That little boy is going to die,” agreed the crowd from the Snow Clan. Xue Ao’s attack was overwhelming. Lin Feng had said that if he died, it’d mean that he was incompetent and that the Fortune Shrine wouldn’t get involved. He had asked for it!

“He’s using a Saint’s technique from the Ao Clan. That attack will make Lin Feng’s body explode!” said the knowledgeable among the crowd, staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng sensed the destructive energies around him. This attack was dangerous. He condensed his god strength and attacked, too. At the same time, he also condensed terrifying energies into his hands.

Xue Ao frowned. With his attack, he could pose a threat to Saint Emperors, but he hadn’t managed to destroy Lin Feng. He shouted furiously, his voice making people’s eardrums tremble.

Lights flickered, Lin Feng disappeared and reappeared above Xue Ao. An ominous hand appeared, containing terrifying and destructive energies. The hand moved down towards Xue Ao!

“Die!” said Lin Feng emotionlessly. There was an explosion, and Xue Ao was smashed down and crashed into the ground.

“Ah!...” he screamed, and people’s hearts started pounding. Lin Feng descended from the sky and continued attacking, a gigantic hand crashed onto Xue Ao, blood splashed and stained the snow around him. The crowd was just stunned, astonished.

“Hehe, it’s not because a dog barks loudly that he’s dangerous,”

said Lin Feng, landing on Xue Ao's body. He was standing on Xue Ao proudly. everyone could understand what it felt to have someone standing on them like that...

When a dog barks? How humiliating!

# Chapter 2285: Can't Withstand a Single Attack!

---

A strong wind was blowing. People encircled Lin Feng. The people from the Ao Clan couldn't stand it anymore, they released Qi to surround Lin Feng. They looked furious.

Lin Feng just glanced at them coldly. Xue Ao had the sensation a mountain which weighed millions of jin was weighing down on his body.

Xue Ao roared furiously. He turned into a gigantic mastiff, trying to attack, and his strength penetrated into Lin Feng's body. He wanted to counterattack-

"Still barking?" shouted Lin Feng furiously. He was staring at Xue Ao's gigantic eyes. There was another explosion, a crater appeared around them, snowflakes flew in all directions.

Xue Ao was crawling on the ground, blood dripping from him. His muscles kept twitching.

"Insolent!" shouted the members of the Snow Clan.

"Piss off!" said Lin Feng coldly. Qi rolled out and swept them away. He looked at Xue Ao's eyes again. Twenty years ago, Xue Ao considered himself unexcelled in the world, he thought he was so imposing and awe-inspiring, he had thought he could kill Lin Feng instantly if he wished.

Now, twenty years later, everything had changed. Change could be so mysterious sometimes...

"What? Have you forgotten what the Saint of the Snow Clan said?" said Shi Jue Lao Xian indifferently. The members of the Ao Clan all pulled long faces. Saint Jue and Lin Feng had agreed on a battle to the death! But nobody had thought Lin Feng could kill Xue Ao...

Even though Lin Feng had ranked first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, back then, he was only an emperor. Back then, Xue Ao was already at the top of the Di Qi layer!

They had never thought that Xue Ao could look so weak in front of Lin Feng, or that he couldn't withstand a single attack, or that Lin Feng would even stand on him.

Saint Jue, the old woman, they all pulled long faces. Because of something they had agreed on twenty years before, losing a cultivator who had a king-type body would be tragic!

"Lin Feng, even though the agreement is more important, please be merciful. It would be good for both the Snow Clan and you," said Saint Jue. He regretted what he had just said. The Fortune Shrine would support Lin Feng if they took back their words...

"Oh? It would be good for me, too?" said Lin Feng mockingly.

"Think about it. It's not over, we don't have only one cultivator with a king-type body," said Saint Jue indifferently. At that moment, he sounded firm... or at least, he tried to sound firm to intimidate Lin Feng, he had no choice.

"Let Xue Ao off. Let's fight, if you win against me, you can take Meng Qing and Zhe Tian away with you," said someone behind Lin Feng. He turned around and saw Xue Jing Xiao, who looked ready and determined to fight. He wasn't surprised that Xue Ao had lost.

Shi Jue Lao Xian had warned Lin Feng that the Snow Clan had a terrifyingly strong cultivator who had a king-type body. That was probably that guy. Lin Feng could sense that he was indeed very strong.

"If I don't let him off, will the Snow Clan go against our agreement? And if I win against you, maybe the Snow Clan will not let me take them away with me," replied Lin Feng equally calmly.

However, Xue Jing Xiao still looked composed when he heard Lin Feng, as if nothing could affect him. He just shook his head and

said, “Let him off. When we fight, if I win against you, I will also be merciful.”

“Same here, if I win against you, I’ll let you live,” replied Lin Feng prosaically as well. “Regarding Xue Ao, I will let him off and I hope that the Snow Clan will be honest and upright.”

Then, he released god strength, which penetrated into Xue Ao’s body.

“Ah!...” Xue Ao screamed. When the Snow Clan saw that Xue Ao had lost his ability to fight and was just lying limply on the ground, they looked elsewhere. They couldn’t stand seeing him like that, he had a king-type body... how humiliating...

The strong cultivators of the Ao Clan were furious, they released their Qi, but managed to restrain themselves. Shi Jue Lao Xian had brought Lin Feng there, but Lin Feng was backed up by the Fortune Shrine. They couldn’t do anything. Lin Feng hadn’t violated their agreement. Even if he killed Xue Ao, they couldn’t do anything against him. The Shrine wouldn’t let anyone kill their core disciples like that...

“Back then, you barked loudly. From now on, we’ll see if you continue barking loudly,” said Lin Feng, still standing on Xue Ao’s body. Xue Ao had almost fainted. He only had a few threads of Qi left and was badly injured. Even Saints couldn’t help him recover. All they could do was spend lots of resources and ask a Shrine for help, or he wouldn’t be able to recover, ever.

They hadn’t thought that back then in Qi Tian Holy Town they had been cruel. Back then, they had considered Lin Feng as a worthless thing they could kill instantly.

Saint Jue looked at Lin Feng coldly and thought, Lin Feng, we were nice to you, but you refused to do things properly. Even if the Snow Clan doesn’t kill you, someone else can kill you.

In the distance, more young people had appeared. When they saw this, they were surprised. Someone shouted, “Brother Jing Xiao, what’s going on in the Snow Clan?”

Two more people arrived. Xue Jing Xiao was surprised, some were acquaintances from the Fire Shrine.

“Nothing. The Snow Clan has some things to sort out,” said Xue Jing Xiao calmly. The young man at the front smiled and nodded. Then, he looked at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng!” He looked amused. The Fire Shrine and the Snow Clan were different. The Shrines wanted to kill the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and the Fire Shrine was in charge of killing Lin Feng. They had dispersed some strong cultivators to look for him, and they all had seen him or seen images of him. Therefore, when they saw him, they recognized him.

“There is something that was nowhere to be found even after painstakingly exhausting all of one’s energy and effort to look for it,” said the strong cultivator of the Fire Shrine, smiling broadly. Surprisingly, they had found Lin Feng in the Snow Clan!

The Fire Shrine had spent so much effort looking for Lin Feng. They had even sent some Saint Emperors to Dark Clouds to find him!

Huo Xing Zi arrived too. The other young man was one of his fellow disciples, they were both outstanding young men of the Fire Shrine. Di Jiang, Xue Jing Xiao, and Huo Xing Zi were of the same generation. Even though Xue Jing Xiao wasn’t a member in any of the Shrines, he was very talented, and half a year before, he had become a Saint Emperor. He was less than a hundred years old and already a Saint Emperor, usually such people only appeared in Shrines.

When Lin Feng saw Huo Xing Zi, he immediately understood who those people were.

The Fire Shrine wants to kill me, I hadn't thought I'd see them here. I can't stay in the Snow Clan for too long, thought Lin Feng. He said to Xue Jing Xiao, "Let's fight now."

He had to fight quickly and leave, otherwise the Shrines would wait for him in the region.

A terrifying fire Qi shot towards Lin Feng. The layer of ice on Lin Feng's body melted instantly. Huo Xing Zi raised his left hand; he was holding a very, very long fire mace which kept spitting out flames at Lin Feng. The members of the Snow Clan didn't stop him.

Huo Xing Zi threw himself at Lin Feng. The members of the Snow Clan didn't think highly of Huo Xing Zi, so they didn't warn him. Xue Ao had just suffered a crushing defeat against Lin Feng, and even though Huo Xing Zi was also a Celestial Emperor, he was much weaker than Xue Ao. He couldn't fight against Lin Feng. If he had seen Lin Feng and Xue Ao's battle, he wouldn't have started a fight against him.

However, it was too late now. Lin Feng grabbed his fire mace with his bare hands. Huo Xing Zi's face was hilarious.

"Back!" shouted the other young men of the Fire Shrine. Even though Huo Xing Zi didn't want to admit he was weaker, he gave up his fire mace and moved back. Unfortunately, he saw someone moving towards him.

A terrifying fireball moved towards Lin Feng. At the same time, Huo Xing Zi condensed a terrifying Saint's fire in his fingers and grabbed towards Lin Feng.

"Piss off!" Lin Feng condensed Death Dao in his fist, Huo Xing Zi started trembling when he sensed the horrifying death strength. A silhouette flickered, grabbed Huo Xing Zi and took him somewhere else.

"Pfew..." Huo Xing Zi took a deep breath. He could still sense the



death Qi in his body. How dangerous... He was staring at Lin Feng coldly.

“How reckless,” said Lin Feng calmly. He rolled up his sleeves and turned around.

Huo Xing Zi felt extremely humiliated. He was a genius from the Fire Shrine and someone dared despise him like that?

He didn't know it was Lin Feng that he had fought in the Void Phoenix Clan, or he would have understood that Lin Feng had been merciful during their first battle. What would he think if he knew the truth?!

## Chapter 2286: Saints Can Also Be Like That

---

Huo Shang was staring at Lin Feng. Like Huo Xing Zi, he had flames in his eyes.

Ten years before, on the stage of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, Lin Feng had fought against Huo Xing Zi. Back then, Lin Feng had also fought against Gu Xuan Feng from the Demon Shrine. Back then, Huo Xing Zi and Gu Xuan Feng's strength was about the same. Ten years later, Lin Feng could easily defeat Huo Xing Zi in one punch. It meant that Lin Feng, Champion of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, was stronger than the geniuses the Fire Shrine and the Demon Shrine had raised!

He wasn't the only one in that case then... Chu Chun Qiu was also extremely strong, much stronger than Huo Xing Zi. The second and fourth cultivators, Kong Ming and Zhou Rong Man, were also much stronger. They had disappeared for so many years, but if they came back, they would probably be much stronger than the Shrine's people...

Huo Shang took a step forwards; he was also a genius from the Fire Shrine, and he had been a member of the Fire Shrine longer than Huo Xing Zi. He was of the same generation as Xue Jing Xiao. He was also a Saint Emperor, and his fighting abilities were astonishing.

"Brother Huo Shang," said Xue Jing Xiao calmly. "This battle is between me and him."

Huo Shang was surprised, but he smiled at Xue Jing Xiao. "Since it's that way, please, Brother Jing Xiao."

"Jing Xiao, no rush. If Huo Xing Zi wants to try and fight against someone who has defeated Huo Xing Zi, why not let him try first? He probably won't be able to try after your battle, because Lin Feng will be dead already," said Saint Jue indifferently. He had

faith in Xue Jing Xiao, much more than in Xue Ao. Xue Jing Xiao had broken through to the Tian Di layer before the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, so his cultivation was very stable at the time of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Now he was a Saint Emperor.

Xue Jing Xiao's fighting abilities were much better than Xue Ao's. Xue Ao was a good-for-nothing in front of Xue Jing Xiao.

When Lin Feng heard Saint Jue, he glanced at him coldly. He understood Saint Jue was evil. He had probably asked the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine to kill him, and now he was wasting time to talk to them telepathically. Lin Feng could guess what they were saying even if he couldn't hear them.

"No need to make things complicated," said Lin Feng, staring at Saint Jue, "Why fight in turns? You're too kind. I can fight against your disciple and a fighter of the Fire Shrine at the same time, no problem."

Lin Feng was pointing at Xue Jing Xiao and Huo Shang. Everybody was astonished.

Lin Feng was crazy!

Xue Jing Xiao and Huo Shang were extremely strong, and he dared challenge them in a two-on-one battle!

Shi Jue Lao Xian was sitting there, he looked indifferent and continued drinking. He smiled drunkenly and said, "I agree, let's not waste time, let's finish this quickly. I have other things to do."

Xue Jing Xiao shot forwards. Joining hands with someone? Ridiculous!

He was a king of the Snow Clan, he had a king-type body! He would become an important pillar of the Snow Clan in the future! Joining hands with another cultivator to fight against someone whose cultivation level was lower than his? Biggest joke in the world!

Huo Shang didn't agree either. Even if the Fire Shrine wanted to kill Lin Feng, he couldn't join hands with someone to fight against him. He was a terrifying genius of the Fire Shrine, and proud, too. He had never joined hands with anyone to fight against someone else; on the contrary, his entire life, people had joined hands to fight against him!

Xue Jing Xiao jumped forwards, snowflakes appearing around Lin Feng. Lin Feng felt cold enough for his soul to freeze.

Lin Feng shivered.

How cold. That's a true Ice Dao, thought Lin Feng. He released god strength and Dao power. Xue Jing Xiao looked totally composed. Lin Feng felt a tinge of danger. Xue Jing Xiao was a Saint Emperor. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, the lower world, he would be considered a god.

"Snow and Frost Powder!" said Xue Jing Xiao lazily. The atmosphere around him suddenly started freezing.

Lin Feng's inner and outer body started freezing. His soul also started freezing. Even his cosmic energies started turning into ice.

"How strong," said Shi Jue Lao Xian, after another swig. His eyes were twinkling. Xue Jing Xiao was really strong. He could freeze the cosmic energies of the earth and sky, and turn them into ice strength which he could use for himself. If his opponents controlled any other kind of cosmic energy, then they became unable to fight because he turned their cosmic energies into ice cosmic energies which he used for himself. It was a frightening power.

Xue Jing Xiao shot forwards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng stood there calmly. A layer of ice had appeared around his body.

Xue Jing Xiao turned into a beam of light, condensing an incredible amount of ice cosmic energies in his hand and raising it.

He wanted to kill Lin Feng in one blow.

Lin Feng suddenly moved. He suddenly released god strength.

He raised his hand, and the air around them exploded. Xue Jing Xiao's hand turned into an ice and frost dragon which moved to take on Lin Feng's attack. The attack was explosive and his energies blotted out the sky.

The destructive ice Qi penetrated into Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng flashed away, the ice strength turned into a gigantic axe containing Weapon intent.

The ice energies kept exploding around him. The gigantic axe sliced through the air and the gigantic ice dragon. The crowd was astonished... Lin Feng controlled ice cosmic energy?!

"Die!" said Lin Feng, staring at Xue Jing Xiao in a cold and detached way. Death strength penetrated into Xue Jing Xiao's body, millions of death stamps pounded on him, Xue Jing Xiao felt pressured.

"How could ice cosmic energy stop me?" remarked Lin Feng apathetically. He flashed forwards, the ice cosmic strength turned into death strength and descended from the sky. A black vortex appeared, smelling like death. A strong hurricane made of death strength appeared around Lin Feng. He looked like a death god...

Lin Feng disappeared, and darkness appeared in front of Xue Jing Xiao. He saw a death cauldron in front of him.

"Snow of Grievance!" sighed Xue Jing Xiao. The snowy landscape around them filled with grief. Lin Feng suddenly felt sad, and his soul started freezing again.

"Death Oppression!"

The death cauldron oppressed Xue Jing Xiao, death strength penetrated into his body. More death cauldrons appeared and plunged into him. Xue Jing Xiao's face turned grey, his life was being corroded. He wanted to escape, he suddenly felt powerless.

Xue Jing Xiao roused himself with a roar. Snow energies kept attacking Lin Feng's cauldrons and Lin Feng himself.

Lin Feng just grunted coldly. His death cauldrons turned into smaller cauldrons, but they were extremely oppressive. At the same time, Xue Jing Xiao's head was trembling as if he had had a stroke.

Lin Feng was staring at him like a death god.

"That's enough!" shouted Saint Jue furiously. His voice made Lin Feng tremble. Lin Feng was suddenly forced away violently. He crashed onto the ground farther away and continued sliding backwards.

He raised his head and looked at Saint Jue. He smiled and said, "Even Saints talk shit, I see."

Saint Jue looked at him coolly. Lin Feng was so strong, and his Death Dao was incredible, especially his Death Oppression attack.

"The battles we agreed on twenty years ago are over. Snow Clan, give me my wife and son back," said Lin Feng calmly. Saint Jue was just staring at Lin Feng. He remained silent. Lin Feng frowned and said coldly, "Or do you intend to break the agreement?"

"What kind of strength did you use a moment ago?" said Saint Jue.

Lin Feng frowned even more and said, "Release my wife and son!"

"No rush. You're so talented. I think you should spend a few days in the Snow Clan, what do you think, Lin Feng?" said Saint Jue with a smile. Lin Feng looked more and more furious.

That guy was a Saint and he was shameless!

"You have the time needed to burn a joss stick. If you don't release my wife and son, I can guarantee that I will finish the two battles completely. I was merciful enough," said Lin Feng coldly,

releasing Death intent. Saint Jue was stupefied, Lin Feng was threatening him!

Everybody was astonished. The atmosphere became really tense. Lin Feng was threatening a Saint, he was threatening the Snow Clan!

Snowflakes continued falling from the sky, the temperature kept falling. Everybody was staring at him. He had just defeated the first king of the Snow Clan, Xue Jing Xiao!

## Chapter 2287: Killing the King-type Body

---

Lin Feng knew why Saint Jue was wasting time. He didn't intend to release his wife and son, and now he was inviting him to spend some days with them? That was just a fool's play.

"Lin Feng, Ling Long is from the Snow Clan. The blood of the Snow Clan is flowing in Zhe Tian's veins. You should be friends with the Snow Clan, why are you so aggressive?" said Saint Jue. He was getting nervous, but he forced himself to keep calm. He ignored the fact that Lin Feng was threatening him and the Snow Clan.

"Twenty years ago, you didn't think that way," said Lin Feng. When he saw that Saint Jue tried to look calm and aloof, he was even more furious. If this guy hadn't been a Saint, Lin Feng wouldn't have wasted time with him.

At that moment, Huo Xing Zi and the other members of the Fire Shrine had probably contacted the Fire Shrine and informed them that they had found Lin Feng in the Snow Clan!

"The Snow Clan is really disappointing," said Shi Jue Lao Xian with a sigh. "Twenty years ago, you considered everybody and everything beneath your notice, you were mindlessly aggressive. You wanted to slaughter him in Qi Tian Holy Town. Then, we agreed on something. Now, you have lost both battles and you're breaking the rules of the agreement. I will inform everyone that the Snow Clan is shameless, everywhere I go." Shi Jue Lao Xian shook his head and sighed.

Saint Jue's face didn't change. He was furious on the inside, though. He really wanted to kill both Lin Feng and Shi Jue Lao Xian!

Actually, Lin Feng was really talented. If they had known that twenty years before, they would have never offended him. At most, they would have drawn a clear line between them, especially



now, since the Shrines were looking for Lin Feng to kill him. But now regretting what they had done in the past was useless. They had to solve the situation. Lin Feng's existence was dangerous for the Snow Clan, especially since he was becoming stronger so damn quickly...

Twenty years ago, he was an insignificant emperor, and Xue Jing Xiao was at the top of the Di Qi layer. Twenty years later, Lin Feng defeated Xue Jing Xiao!

Lin Feng closed his eyes, snowflakes fell onto his body. He tried to calm down. Time passed, each second seeming endless.

It was the Snow Clan; they could kill him easily, but they didn't because Lin Feng was a member of the Fortune Shrine. However, if Lin Feng didn't leave, the strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine would kill him and the Snow Clan wouldn't have to bear the responsibility for that.

The time needed for a joss stick to burn was short, but at that moment, time passed so slowly.

—

In the distance, some people arrived. Someone said to Lin Feng, "Lin Feng, the members of the Fire Shrine are here."

Lin Feng snapped opened his eyes; they were filled with death strength, Death intent floated around his body. He said coldly, "Since the Snow Clan decided to break the agreement, the battles are not over."

White lights flickered, the crowd was astonished. The strong cultivators of the Snow Clan were astonished and all grimaced. Lin Feng had come with some strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine? They had been there for a while already...

"Everybody, the Snow Clan has never offended the Fortune Shrine," said Saint Jue. His face stiffened. He hoped the Fire Shrine would move fast, but Lin Feng had brought so many strong

cultivators from the Fortune Shrine. They attached great importance to him! The Snow Clan had never thought that in only twenty years, a Shrine would attach so much importance to him...

“The Snow Clan shouldn’t get involved. He’s our disciple. And we don’t like it when people bully our disciples. If anyone dares attack him, apart from those two people, other people will die.”

“If anyone dares attack him, they’ll die!” said the strong cultivators coldly.

The members of the Snow Clan felt cold themselves. They had not thought the Fortune Shrine would do so much for Lin Feng...

Qi began to whistle. Saint Jue’s face finally changed. He had not thought the Fortune Shrine would do so much for Lin Feng.

“Wait, we’ll release his son and wife,” said Saint Jue. “Lin Feng, I’ll release Ling Long and Zhe Tian.”

Lin Feng glanced at Saint Jue coldly. He had wasted enough time, now so he agreed. Some strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine were probably there already.

“It’s too late. If you release them, it’s good, if you don’t it’s the same,” said Lin Feng, jumping forwards. He looked at the cultivators of the Ao Clan standing front of Xue Ao.

He had been merciful; he hadn’t killed Xue Ao and he hadn’t even really thought of killing Xue Jing Xiao. The Snow Clan had gone too far. He truly hated them!

“Lin Feng, what are you doing?” asked the old woman hastily. She released a terrifying and oppressive strength. It was saint’s energy; that woman seemed to be in charge of many things in the Snow Clan, and she was probably a Saint, too.

“You want to destroy the Snow Clan?” hissed the old woman coldly.

The ice around her exploded and vanished. She turned around

and looked at an ancient Saint floating there.

The Fortune Shrine had sent two Saints! With Shi Jue Lao Xian, they were three on Lin Feng's side!

Three Saints could compete with the Snow Clan, but would the Snow Clan dare fight against them?

The Snow Clan wasn't a Shrine; if a Shrine destroyed them, it would be too tragic!

They couldn't play with Shrines!

---

The Snow Clan hadn't thought that the Fortune Shrine would send two Saints for Lin Feng, and they had also sent many Saint Emperors, it was too domineering. Those people could easily destroy a Holy Sage Ruler Clan!

The Snow Clan had severely underestimated Lin Feng's position within the Fortune Shrine. Lin Feng had informed the Fortune Shrine that he had to go to the Snow Clan, and the Fortune Shrine knew that it might draw the other Shrines' attention, so they had watched the Snow Clan carefully. Lin Feng was a Forbidden Person, he couldn't die. The others could die, they didn't care as much.

The Diviner had been cautious. Apart from the two saints in the Snow Clan, just outside of the Snow Clan were more people from the Fortune Shrine, and preventing another group of people from entering. Those people were from the Fire Shrine, and they were extremely strong. Luckily, the Fortune Shrine had intercepted them!

A Saint, three Saint Emperors, many Celestial Emperors; they knew that Lin Feng was there, so they had sent many strong cultivators. But when they noticed the cultivators of the Fortune Shrine, they understood that their group wasn't enough.

All the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the

Nine Clouds were targets. The Shrines wanted to kill all of them because they all posed a threat to them. The Shrines also thought that the top five cultivators were even more dangerous, and the top three were even more dangerous. Lin Feng was one of their most important targets.

They had dispatched people to the lower world to find Lin Feng, and they had sent many strong people to the Snow Clan today.

“We’re going to the Snow Clan. What is this supposed to mean, Fortune Shrine?” demanded a Saint of the Fire Shrine calmly.

“The Fortune Shrine is sorting out some issues in the Snow Clan right now. When we’re done, you can go in,” replied a Saint of the Fortune Shrine indifferently.

“Ridiculous! We have to wait because the Fortune Shrine is sorting out some issues in the Snow Clan?” said the other one, smiling coldly.

“If you don’t want to wait, you can leave and come back some other time,” answered the Saint of the Fortune Shrine indifferently. Both of them knew what they were doing. The members of the Fire Shrine were surprised that the Fortune Shrine was really making great efforts to protect the top ten cultivators of the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They had also received a message from Huo Shang, informing them that two Saints from the Fortune Shrine were inside!

Lin Feng is even more dangerous than the others it seems, thought that Saint. Of course, he couldn’t be sure, the Fortune Shrine had covered things up back then. They had sent Chu Chun Qiu to Ganges Time in the Supreme Animal World, so everybody thought that Chu Chun Qiu was most likely the Forbidden Person.

But well after that, the sky had broken in Purple Clouds and forbidden strength had appeared there, so the probability that Chu Chun Qiu was the Forbidden Person had decreased. Now, maybe they were pretending again...

The members of the Fire Shrine said nothing. They could only wait.

-----

In the Snow Clan, Lin Feng slowly walked towards Xue Ao. Xue Ao grimaced. Saint Jue looked at him coldly.

“Lin Feng!” shouted Saint Jue.

However, as he shouted, Lin Feng raised his hand and punched out in Xue Ao’s direction explosively. Xue Ao screamed. He was now terrified of Lin Feng’s death strength!

Lin Feng wanted to kill him, he had a king-type body! Lin Feng was going to kill him in front of everybody else, he had never thought such a thing would be possible!

“You can only blame yourself,” Lin Feng told Saint Jue. He released death Qi which drove into Xue Ao’s body. Millions of death stamps and Death Dao assaulted him.

“Ah...” Xue Ao howled furiously.

“Try and dare!” shouted Saint Jue explosively.

“You’re waiting for people from the Fire Shrine to kill me, and you think I won’t dare?” More death strength surrounded Xue Ao. He could only scream pitifully. Slowly, his voice became weaker and weaker, and then he disappeared.

Only death strength remained where he was standing seconds before!

## Chapter 2288: Shrines' Confrontation

---

Lin Feng had just killed Xue Ao, a cultivator who had a king-type body, a king of the Snow Clan!

Before Meng Qing came back to the Snow Clan, they only had two people who had king-type bodies. Xue Jing Xiao was the strongest one, and he was definitely going to become a Saint. Xue Ao would have probably become a Saint, too. Then, Meng Qing had been brought back to the Snow Clan, and her child also had potential to become a Saint.

That would have been four monarchs in the Snow Clan! With four people like that, the Snow Clan would have risen.

But just as Zhe Tian was becoming stronger, Meng Qing's husband, Zhe Tian's father, had returned. He was secretive, but he had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He was a core disciple of the Fortune Shrine.

Now, he wanted Zhe Tian and Meng Qing back. He had killed Xue Ao. If Lin Feng took his wife and son away, only one person with a king-type body would remain in the Snow Clan: Xue Jing Xiao!

At the same time, Saint Jue's heart twitched. He had just seen Lin Feng kill Xue Ao. He had gone too far! He wanted to kill Lin Feng. However, the Saints of the Fortune Shrine oppressed him. He couldn't do anything!

"You went too far," said the old woman, staring at the Saints of the Fortune Shrine. Lin Feng had just killed one of their cultivators who had a king-type body after all... one who had potential to become a Saint!

"Went too far? Don't you think you have gone too far already?" said the Saint of the Fortune Shrine coldly. The old woman's face froze. Of course, if they bullied other people, other people could bully them too!

At that moment, the Saint of the Fortune Shrine suddenly turned to Lin Feng and said to him telepathically, “Lin Feng, we’ll help you find them. The Fire Shrine’s people are here, and some people from the Ice and Snow Shrine are also coming.”

Lin Feng was astonished. He glanced at Saint Jue coldly. How cruel. Now, the Ice and Snow Shrine also knew that he was there. Saint Jue hadn’t wasted time on his side.

“Meng Qing, Zhe Tian, come here, if anyone dares stop you, we’ll kill them!” shouted Lin Feng. The members of the Snow Clan were astonished, his voice echoed far away.

Meng Qing grabbed Zhe Tian’s hand and smiled broadly. Lin Feng had come to save them, finally!

For Meng Qing, the Snow Clan was nothing. She had only suffered there!

After a short time, Meng Qing arrived next to Lin Feng with Zhe Tian. Lin Feng’s Death intent disappeared. He just smiled broadly.

Twenty years, twenty years had passed... he had finally come to the Snow Clan to take his wife and son back.

He slowly turned around and looked at Zhe Tian. Twenty years, he had almost become a real man!

“Father,” said Zhe Tian. His cheeks were red, as it was only the second time he had seen his father.

“Little boy, you’re a grown up now,” Lin Feng smiled.

Zhe Tian nodded and said, “Father, during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, I saw you, but I couldn’t recognize you.”

“Oh?” Lin Feng smiled and clapped Zhe Tian’s shoulders, “Are you willing to follow me and leave your home?”

“Yes,” said Zhe Tian nodding. Then, he turned around and looked at the elders of the Snow Fox Clan, he knelt down and said,

“Grandfathers, I will always remember your kindness. We shall meet again.”

Zhe Tian stood up and bowed. The old men sighed. The Snow Clan had kidnapped Meng Qing, why? But now it was too late. They had seen Zhe Tian grow up, they had great affection for him. Now, they had to separate.

Everything was turning into an illusion though, that dream was collapsing before their eyes.

Saint Jue and the others all grimaced. Zhe Tian was Lin Feng's son, the Snow Clan had raised him for twenty years, and now he had agreed to leave with Lin Feng.

“Zhe Tian, you're going against the Snow Clan's principles?” said the old woman coldly.

Zhe Tian replied, “Grandma, when I was a baby, I already knew that my mom had grown up outside and that you had kidnapped her to take her back. Initially, you wanted my mom to get married with Uncle Jing Xiao, you don't like her. You made her suffer, you made her live away from the man she loves, my father. Twenty years ago, you also tried to kill my father. I know those things.

“But the Snow Fox Clan elders were good to me. I am grateful for the education the Snow Clan offered me. Therefore, since you didn't kill my father, I will not consider the Snow Clan as my enemies. But if you try to hurt my parents again, things will change,” said Zhe Tian slowly. He looked at Lin Feng and said, “Father, even though children can't say much, I have one request: No matter what, in the future, don't hurt people from the Snow Fox Clan.”

“If they don't try to kill me, I promise I won't,” Lin Feng agreed easily. Lin Feng was satisfied. Zhe Tian attached importance to feelings. Lin Feng was happy, he didn't want his son to be cruel and heartless.



Zhe Tian turned around and looked at the members of the Snow Fox Clan, “Grandfathers, you heard what my father said. I hope you won’t try to kill him.”

He smiled, and the elders of the Snow Fox Clan just sighed.

“Alright, let’s go,” said Lin Feng. Lin Feng, Meng Qing, and Zhe Tian’s silhouettes flickered. The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine followed.

The members of the Snow Clan were astonished, stunned, and dumbstruck. In one day, they had lost three people with king-type bodies, and now they couldn’t get them back. In the future, Zhe Tian might even become an enemy of the Snow Clan!

Because of that, the future of the Snow Clan was compromised!

---

Lin Feng didn’t fight against Xue Jing Xiao again. Xue Jing Xiao hadn’t done anything fishy, he had had a fair battle against him. Besides, he didn’t want to waste any more time. The cultivators of the Fire Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine had come. It wasn’t a game anymore.

The Fortune Shrine’s Saints glanced at Huo Xing Zi and Huo Shang, and suddenly, strength surrounded them. They said, “Come with us.”

“What’s that supposed to mean, Masters?”

“You understand perfectly. If the Fire Shrine doesn’t do anything dodgy, you will be fine,” said one Saint indifferently. The oppressive strength surrounded the group of young men from the Fire Shrine. If the Fire Shrine tried to kill Lin Feng, the Fortune Shrine would kill all those young disciples.

A strong wind started blowing and they left. Very quickly, the members of the Fortune Shrine, including Lin Feng, had departed the Snow Clan.

The people from the Snow Clan were too astonished. Nobody moved.

What a tragedy for the Snow Clan!

“Pfew... why?” Saint Jue closed his eyes. What he had done twenty years before was such a mistake. He had thought he’d help the Snow Clan rise, but actually, it was declining!

He regretted, he had missed the chance of having a genius on their side too... What a mistake. He was cold and proud, so he hadn’t noticed that young man’s talent.

“I made a mistake?” whispered Saint Jue.

The old woman remembered Xue Shen Feng, she was furious.

“Saint Jue, it’s not your fault. I made a mistake back then. I underestimated him too,” said the old woman.

“Maybe. Maybe it’s nobody’s fault. Maybe it’s just fate. He’s from the lower world and he became so strong in only twenty years. That was so strange...” replied Saint Jue calmly. He was a Saint, he could control himself. Very quickly, he had only one thought: kill Lin Feng!

They had reached a point of no return, and killing Lin Feng was the best thing they could do!

——

At the same time, outside of the Snow Clan, two groups faced one another. So many strong cultivators, including Saints. The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine were there, waiting just outside. At the same time, they had inspected the Snow Clan with their godly awareness. Even though it was thirty thousand li, they were able to watch the whole territory with their godly awareness.

They were there to kill!

# Chapter 2289: Terrifying High Speed Pursuit!!!

---

The strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine were staring at their enemies. They had to remain vigilant.

Lin Feng and the others had come to the Snow Clan voluntarily, and now they were facing him. This was a very rare opportunity, especially since he was probably the one who had a Forbidden Body. In terms of percentages, they considered the probability that Lin Feng was the Forbidden Person at thirty percent.

Lin Feng, thirty percent; Kong Ming, thirty percent; Zhou Rong Man, ten percent; Chu Chun Qiu, ten percent, the fifth and sixth, five percent each; the last four cultivators, ten percent total. So according to those people, Lin Feng or Kong Ming had greatest chance to be the Forbidden Person.

They didn't dare completely omit Chu Chun Qiu, so they considered the probability ten percent because on the day when the sky in Purple Clouds broke apart, the Shrines couldn't see Chu Chun Qiu. He might have used the tunnel of the Supreme Animal World to go there. But soon after that, when the Shrine's members arrived in Purple Clouds, they discovered that Chu Chun Qiu had been seen in the Supreme Animal World again. They had concluded that the probability of him being the Forbidden Person was ten percent, even though he was initially considered the biggest threat for the Shrines.

However, the probability that Lin Feng was the Forbidden Person was now thirty percent, how could they let him off?

"Master, bring my wife and kid back to the Fortune Shrine," Lin Feng said to the Saint of the Fortune Shrine. He was surprised, but the other Saint nodded. They got ready to leave.

"Lin Feng." Meng Qing looked perplexed.

“Father,” said Zhe Tian, pulling a long face. He didn’t like the Shrines.

He had heard about the legends regarding the Forbidden Person, he had also heard all the Shrines were looking for Lin Feng because they wanted to kill him. He didn’t like the Shrines. Even if Lin Feng was a Forbidden Person, he had never done anything bad to the Shrines, they just wanted to prevent him from rising.

He glanced at all the members of the Shrines and remembered their faces carefully.

“Alright, go. I will be distracted if you stay here. I’ll be fine,” Lin Feng smiled. “I’m not easy to kill.”

Meng Qing nodded. She knew that she couldn’t distract Lin Feng. They had just reunited, and now Lin Feng was in danger again. She was very sad. If she hadn’t existed, Lin Feng wouldn’t have come to the Snow Clan, and the Shrines wouldn’t have found him. She felt guilty.

---

Zhe Tian and Meng Qing left with the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine wanted Lin Feng, they weren’t interested in Meng Qing and his son at all.

“Zhe Tian, have you seen that? Only strength is important. You need to become strong quickly,” said Meng Qing to Zhe Tian as they left. Zhe Tian nodded. He could sense that his father was strong and was now supported by some people, but he could imagine the pressure he had borne for twenty years. To become strong, he had overcome all obstacles. Now, he had taken risks to save his wife and child. Now, he was facing the dangerous Shrines!

---

Both sides were staring at each other. A strong cultivator of the Fortune Shrine said, “What do you want to do?”

“You know perfectly well. Hand Lin Feng over,” demanded a Saint of the Fire Shrine coldly.

“Lin Feng, don’t run away randomly. There are many strong cultivators, you could die anytime!” said a voice in Lin Feng’s mind. The Fire Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine had set up an inescapable net in the area to kill him.

“I understand!” replied Lin Feng. He was furious; the Shrines wanted to kill him more than anything, but he had never thought of destroying the world or causing chaos, even if he was a Forbidden Person. He just wanted to have a happy life. He wanted to be with his parents, friends, and wives and protect them.

But the Shrines were worried that a Forbidden Person would be too strong and destroy the world, they wanted to destroy Lin Feng. At that moment, Lin Feng had only one thought... Since it’s that way, if someday I become a peerless Forbidden Person, I’ll destroy the Shrines!

“He’s a core disciple in the Fortune Shrine, you can’t kill our core disciples. If you do, what do you think will happen?” said a strong cultivator of the Fortune Shrine, taking a step forwards. They were oppressing Huo Shang and the others. Strong cultivators from Shrines weren’t supposed to attack younger disciples. However, the two Shrines had joined hands to kill Lin Feng, it wasn’t normal at all.

“Even if you capture our disciples, Lin Feng will die anyway. If you kill our disciples, we’ll kill your disciples too,” said a strong cultivator of the Ice and Snow Shrine coldly. But they hadn’t capture disciples from the Fortune Shrine, so he didn’t know what else to say.

“Release them!” said a strong cultivator of the Ice and Snow Shrine, flashing forwards. The atmosphere started freezing around him.

The Saints of the Fortune Shrine surrounded Lin Feng. Even

though he was very strong and talented, he was a nobody in the Saints' eyes. They could easily kill him. The strong cultivators of the Fire Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine really wanted to kill him.

The atmosphere was explosive. Energies kept colliding. A Milky Way appeared, even the Saints of the Fortune Shrine began to grimace.

“The periphery has been sealed, there are cultivators of the other Shrines as well, not only the Fire Shrine and the Ice and Snow Shrine.” The Saints of the Fortune Shrine were furious. The situation was getting dangerous for them now.

When Lin Feng heard that, his face stiffened. He hadn't thought such a thing would happen after his trip to the Fortune Shrine. These people really wanted to kill him...

“Back to the Snow Clan, go!” Lin Feng didn't even have time to react, he sensed a terrifying strength surround him and take him back into the Snow Clan. Only the Saints took Lin Feng back in, the other cultivators didn't follow. Apart from Saints, nobody else could get involved in that battle.

“Chase him!” said the other Saints.

The group of people moved. They crossed a thousand li in the blink of an eye. Thirty thousand li wasn't much for them. The members of the Snow Clan sensed their terrifying energies and frowned. The old woman rose up in the air shouted furiously, “What does the Fortune Shrine want from the Snow Clan now?”

“Lend us some space!” said a Saint pitilessly. The old woman saw gigantic hands rise up and stamp the sky.

The whole Snow Clan was trembling. People all raised their heads in fright.

The earth and sky were trembling. Ancient imprints filled the air, crackling sounds spread in the air.

“The Fortune Shrine has gone too far!” shouted the old woman of the Snow Clan furiously. Saint Jue released Qi in a surge. He was furious. He wanted to crush the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine!

A clear and melodious sound spread out, lights flashed. It was like the earth and sky were about to collapse. A few people turned into beam of lights and moved.

“Lin Feng!” Saint Jue’s Qi shot up into the sky. The Snow Clan had lost a cultivator who had a king-type body, and Lin Feng had taken away two of their strong cultivators as well. It was a tragedy for them. Even back in the days when the Snow Clan had started collapsing, they hadn’t been humiliated like this!

However, even when the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine disappeared, the strong cultivators of the other Shrines arrived and also rose up into the air.

They looked furious. The Fortune Shrine’s strong cultivators had decided to escape through the Snow Clan. They had broken the world of the Snow Clan to escape. But getting rid of them wouldn’t be easy either!

“What’s going on? Suddenly, they saw many of Lin Feng’s clones everywhere in the air and they moved in all directions. The Saints of the Fortune Shrine also took different clones in different directions. The crowd was astonished.

“All the clones seem real, but they all seem fake at the same time!,” swore a Saint.

“How to chase them?”

“Follow all of them, follow the Saints. Kill the clones. Don’t let anyone off,” said a Saint. They moved extremely fast, they all of them turning into beam of lights.

Many strong cultivators arrived and started attacking all the clones.

“Seal the atmosphere!” said a strong cultivator. Instantly, a strong cultivator rose up into the air and made some hand seals. Dazzling lights appeared all around and the atmosphere was suddenly sealed by golden lights. Even an ant couldn’t escape.



# Chapter 2290: Slaughter

---

A Saint wearing a golden robe was standing up in the air. His eyes were golden as he glanced around.

“I don’t think any clone escaped. Kill them all and then wait for further orders,” said the Saint coldly. The crowd nodded and then started scanning the area. Lin Feng’s clones didn’t have good fighting abilities, and couldn’t withstand a single attack. Very quickly, they all disappeared.

“I’ve heard that Lin Feng’s hiding abilities are astonishing. What do we do about the people on the ground?” someone asked the Saint. Only one Saint was left there so they listened to him.

The area had been sealed within a diameter of thousands of li. On the ground was a small city, completely sealed. Many people raised their heads, astonished to see a Saint.

“Kill them all!” said the strong cultivator. The people on the crowd were terrified, even those who were Saint Emperors. However, the outsiders were astonished; there were many people on the ground, killing them was against the most basic principles of war...

They had all gone through a lot in life, and killed millions of people. However, those people on the ground were innocent people. Killing them was cruel. It would tarnish their Shrine’s reputation.

The Saint in the sky was a strong cultivator from the Empty Space Shrine. As the Fortune Shrine had guessed, all the Shrines were getting involved. They had to kill that guy since there was a high probability that he was a Forbidden Person.

“Master, we should wait for some news, shouldn’t we?” said someone. The others were chasing the Saints of the Fortune Shrine, they would soon be able to assess the situation, and would

know if Lin Feng's real body had been found or not. If he wasn't there, then he was probably in the crowd on the ground.

The Empty Space Shrine's Saint remained silent for a few seconds but then he nodded, "Alright."

The people beneath them were terrified. They could die at any time.

Lin Feng was really in there, actually. He had changed his face. He had hoped they'd all chase the Fortune Shrine's strong cultivators. However, the Empty Space Shrine's strong cultivator had sealed the whole area... Lin Feng didn't even dare look at them up in the sky. He was afraid, and he didn't want to look suspicious.

He was slowly walking in the city. He watched the other people, trying to look calm, like an ordinary person.

The Saint Emperors up above received some news. All the Lin Feng's taken away by the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine were fake, but they continued chasing them, wanting to put pressure on the Saints to make them hand Lin Feng over.

"Any news?" asked a strong cultivator, watching the strong cultivators of the Fire and the Ice and Snow Shrines.

"Yes, all were clones. We need to find his real body and kill him," said someone.

Instantly, the Empty Space Shrine's Saint's eyes flashed, "Kill all those people. He will be in the crowd."

Everybody nodded. The atmosphere became oppressive. Qi began to rise. It was terrifying.

At that moment, the crowd on the ground felt the pressure and raised their heads.

Lin Feng raised his head too. The Saint Emperors dispersed. Lin Feng started hearing some horrible screams, sad and plaintive cries.

Some people around him started burning. The atmosphere began to distort. Smoke filled the air. People burned alive and vanished.

The atmosphere became scorching hot. A Saint Emperor moved towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was speechless. Those people wanted to slaughter everyone...

He didn't know what to do, he was furious, stunned, scared... Because of him, the Shrines' strong cultivators didn't care about anything anymore.

People burned alive one after the other. Then, he sensed Qi surround him. It was Fire Dao power. Lin Feng instantly started burning too.

"No..." Lin Feng released god strength inside of his body and destroyed the fire strength. He gazed into the distance, seeing a frozen area. Some people were being frozen to death.

Lin Feng also saw an old man, his grandchild in his arms, running desperately. But a fire sword pierced through his body. He stopped moving and started burning, dying instantly. Only some strong people could resist for a few seconds. People who weren't Saint Emperors died instantly.

"Eh?" A strong cultivator from the Fire Shrine looked at Lin Feng, and Lin Feng didn't react.

"Celestial Emperor!" said the Saint Emperor coldly. Dao power surrounded Lin Feng again, he had the impression he was going to burn to death. The Saint Emperor raised his hand and a fireball moved towards Lin Feng. At the same time, the outsider flashed towards another group of people. He slapped a wave of fire at them all, and they all started burning and died.

Very quickly, that strong cultivator turned around, and was surprised to see that Lin Feng wasn't dead.

"Bzzz!" Lin Feng started running away. That strong cultivator

was startled, and he immediately started chasing Lin Feng again.

At the same time, in the air, the Empty Space Shrine's Saint was watching, he could see everybody. Nothing could escape from his field of vision. People were getting slaughtered, but he look indifferent.

“Eh?” At that moment, he saw Lin Feng, Lin Feng was escaping really quickly. He was running towards the periphery of the sealed area. However, the Saint didn't react too quickly. He was convinced that a Celestial Emperor couldn't escape easily.

Lin Feng was extremely fast, he arrived at the periphery of the sealed area.

“Hmph!” The Saint grunted coldly. Did Lin Feng think he could escape from this empty space world?

However, at that moment, Lin Feng turned into two, and the second body was gigantic.

An incredible strength emerged from his body. He punched the sealed area, and space broke with a clear, sharp sound. The sealed area cracked, the empty space strong cultivator was astonished.

“A Saint!” He jumped towards Lin Feng. In one step, he could cross a distance of a hundred li.

The Saint Emperor who was chasing Lin Feng suddenly stopped. He was astonished and staring at the giant. What an incredible Qi, Saint's Qi!

A cauldron appeared, that person's soul started shaking. A terrifying strength oppressed his soul. He was stupefied.

Saint Emperors were like tiny little insects to Saints. Saints were peerless cultivators!

The cauldron oppressed everything. The Saint Emperor of the Fire Shrine suddenly felt powerless. He turned around and ran away. However, the ancient cauldron chased him. The Fire

Shrine's strong cultivator had the impression millions of mountains had fallen on his shoulders.

The Saint Emperor exploded loudly, and his soul dispersed.

At that moment, Qin Shan raised his head and looked at the Empty Space Shrine's Saint. He jumped forwards and condensed strength. Oppressive Qi appeared. He was surrounded by nine cauldrons. Those nine cauldrons could oppress the skies, Heaven, and Earth. The Empty Space Shrine's Saint was shocked, and stopped advancing.

Lin Feng continued running away. He didn't watch the battle. All the Shrines wanted to kill him, and he couldn't compete with them.

"Go and kill Lin Feng!" shouted the Empty Space Shrine's Saint coldly. Everybody nodded and chased after Lin Feng.

Qin Shan shouted furiously, his voice making the earth and sky tremble. An endless number of mountains started falling from the sky towards a Saint Emperor. The Saint Emperor was crushed flat and exploded. He couldn't withstand a single attack!

"Make a detour!" The Saint Emperors were astonished. They tried to make a detour. They couldn't stay in the oppressive energies, Qin Shan's oppressive energies could crush them flat! How terrifying!

# Chapter 2291: Racing with a Death God

---

Wings appeared on Lin Feng's back. He condensed the strength of the ten thousand things of creation and flashed forwards; each time he moved, it was like he crossed a whole world. He was extremely fast!

The strong cultivators of the Snow Clan didn't dare chase him. However, the members of the Shrines would seize any opportunity to kill him!

Therefore, Lin Feng didn't stop at all. He used deployment spells each time he took a step, and at the same time he kept using talismans one after another. He moved like a rocket!

But those who were chasing him were extremely fast, too. Strong cultivators from the Empty Space Shrine also controlled empty space energy, and each time they moved, they could cross space and time as well. At the same time, they used their godly awareness to track Lin Feng so that they would not lose him again. If Lin Feng wanted to use clones again, it wouldn't work. Even those whom Qin Shan had stopped continued following Lin Feng with their godly awareness. They knew that Lin Feng's disguise skills were astonishing, they couldn't give him any opportunity to evade them. Each time he appeared in the middle of a crowd, it was like he disappeared.

Lin Feng felt great pressure. It was a matter of time, of who would be faster: The Fortune Shrine or the other Shrines? However, Lin Feng was really scared this time because a moment before, Saints had been chasing the Fortune Shrine's Saints. Now he was moving in that direction, and if the Saints who had chased the Fortune Shrine's Saints turned around, he'd bump into them!

"Turn around!" Suddenly, Lin Feng decided to turn around and not go after the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine. He couldn't take the risk of bumping into the Saints of the other

Shrines, especially now that Qin Shan wasn't with him to protect him right now. If he bumped into the Saints of the other Shrines, he'd die instantly. He was talented, but he was still far from being able to compete with Saints. Even Saints like Qin Shan who had almost died in the past and come back to life could still crush Saint Emperors instantly, like he had done just a moment before. Saints could destroy him instantly, so if he continued moving in the direction of the Fortune Shrine's Saints, but bumped into the Saints of the other Shrines, he'd die instantly and the Fortune Shrine's strong cultivators would arrive a minute too late.

---

Of course, when Lin Feng decided to move in another direction, he informed the Diviner.

As Lin Feng had expected, each Shrine was trying to move faster than the others. The Diviner had made many Saints follow Lin Feng to the Snow Clan this time because he feared such a thing would happen, but he hadn't really thought it would. It was really bad luck this time, because the Snow Clan had immediately contacted the Fire and the Ice and Frost Shrines.

The Diviner was in the sky and he flying in Lin Feng's direction. Many people raised their heads on the ground and saw a white light streaking across the sky. They couldn't see it clearly though, it was moving too fast..

"He's going in the direction of Life City!" The Diviner was startled, he immediately took out a jade talisman.

"Bing Yan, help me save someone. He's going towards your position. I'll share his location with you," said the Diviner, "Some strong cultivators from other Shrines are chasing him. You must hurry up."

---

Many strong cultivators were chasing Lin Feng.

They were some distance from Lin Feng, some people spreading out in all directions to surround the area so that Lin Feng wouldn't be able to change course. No matter who arrived first, Lin Feng was doomed. They'd all arrive before the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine possibly could.

It was a race against time. Lin Feng was very fast, but because he had hesitated regarding his trajectory, his enemies had managed to catch up a little. They couldn't really see Lin Feng, he was very, very distant, but they could track him thanks to their godly awareness.

"A Celestial Emperor is surprisingly so fast! He's even more dangerous than Chu Chun Qiu! We must kill him!" said a Saint Emperor coldly. They had to kill Lin Feng. Now, they were almost convinced that Lin Feng had a Forbidden Body. He had just become their ultimate target!

A strong wind started blowing, and thunder rolled out. They were stunned, turning around to see a gigantic fireball. They all looked extremely happy, a Saint of the Fire Shrine had finally caught up!

"He's there, in the distance," said a Saint Emperor. They had been chasing Lin Feng for such a long time, they were tired and nervous. Now that a Saint of the Fire Shrine had arrived, Lin Feng was definitely doomed!

The fireball streaked across the sky at top speed. A beautiful and magnificent fire trail appeared behind it.

"No..." Lin Feng accelerated. He sensed that the Saint of the Fire Shrine was catching up with him, and felt even more under pressure.

"Death?"

Lin Feng looked furious. His eyes were filled with death strength. He had gone through so many hardships in life, was he going to



die? He had nearly died so many times. He had dreamt for so many years, now he was sure he had a Forbidden Body, he had developed his own god level, he was destined to become a ruler in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds sooner or later... how could he die now?

If he died, what would happen to his small world, his family members, his friends, Meng Qing, Zhe Tian? Everybody would be so sad...

But the Qi behind him was getting closer and closer. He had the impression death was catching up with him, and the strong cultivators of the Fortune Shrine hadn't arrived yet.

"Lin Feng, you have nowhere to escape!" said a voice behind him. Lin Feng started feeling extremely hot, as if he were about to burn alive. He was getting more and more desperate, was he going to die?

The Saint of the Fire Shrine was there.

"Lin Feng, you have to hold on at all costs!" shouted a voice. Lin Feng frowned. Finally, he had hope again. The Diviner was almost there. He had to hold on a little bit longer...

Lin Feng accelerated, he didn't know he was capable of moving that fast. However, it was a Saint following him. Even if he accelerated, the Saint continued catching up slowly with him.

"Get ready to die!" said the Saint. The voice sounded like the devil's voice in his head, he wanted to make Lin Feng feel desperate and stop running. But Lin Feng was determined, he couldn't die, not now...

Such cultivators were still extremely fast though.

Three seconds and I'll destroy him!, thought the Fire Shrine's Saint. Three seconds would be enough, the Diviner wouldn't arrive within three seconds.

Lin Feng had the impression the god of death was about to catch

him.

One second passed, the distance between them decreased again. Lin Feng gazed into the distance, he saw dazzling lights intertwining. The lights seemed alive...

Two seconds passed, the Fire Shrine's Saint already considered Lin Feng dead. He started smiling coldly as he condensed fire in his hands again.

Three seconds finally passed, the Fire Shrine's Saint said, "Destroy!"

Lin Feng sensed a terrifying fireball shooting towards him!

At that precise moment, Lin Feng summoned the Fortune City illusion to block the attack.

"Break!" shouted the Fire Shrine's cultivator. The Fortune City's illusion exploded, the fireball continued moving towards Lin Feng.

"Piss off!" shouted Lin Feng, taking out the Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron. Deployment lights flashed. The Ten Thousand Evolutions Cauldron looked like a supreme precious cauldron, protecting Lin Feng from death.

The flames tried to pierce through the cauldron. The Fire Shrine's Saint was getting closer. He stretched out his hands, trying to capture Lin Feng.

Lin Feng sensed a terrifying strength surrounding. However, at that moment, it broke apart.

"It's over!" said the Fire Shrine's cultivator, another fireball emerging from his finger and shooting towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng started burning again.

"No!..." shouted Lin Feng furiously. The fire was corroding his life. He released as much life strength as he could.

At that moment, dazzling green lights surrounded him. The Fire Shrine's Saint moved closer, about to catch Lin Feng, but he saw

the dimly discernible green lights and Lin Feng disappeared.

At the same time, the Diviner arrived and looked at Lin Feng, whose face was deathly pale. He glared at the Fire Shrine's strong cultivator, his eyes filled with murder.

# Chapter 2292: All the Shrines

---

“His life is in peril,” said a voice.

The Diviner looked furious. “Bing Yan, take him away. Save him, thanks for your help.”

“Alright.” The dazzling green lights disappeared across the sky. Lin Feng had already lost consciousness.

The Fire Shrine’s strong cultivator groaned coldly. Lin Feng thought he could still survive? That attack was enough, Lin Feng was about to die!

“Great Life Destruction!” said the Diviner coldly.

The Fire Shrine’s Saint was stupefied and shouted furiously, “Mara-Deva, you want to kill me?!”

A terrifying life corroding strength emerged and surrounded his body. His life was being drained out. The Diviner overbearing Qi was surging. The Fire Shrine’s strong cultivator could sense that the Diviner wanted to kill him!

“We’ve all been at peace for so many years, it seems like you’ve all forgotten where my name comes from! But you remembered my name; at least, you’ll die knowing who killed you!” sighed the Diviner.

Lights emerged from his eyes and blotted out the sky. The whole territory became his. The sky went dark. Even the Saint Emperors in the distance were shaking.

A Saint from the Empty Space Shrine arrived and gazed into the distance. However, when he saw the Diviner and the Fire Shrine’s Saint fighting, he was astonished... and he remembered the Diviner’s name!

He didn’t know what to do anymore: help the Fire Shrine’s Saint, or not?

If he dies, the Fire Shrine will go crazy, thought the Empty Space Shrine's Saint. He turned around and left as if events had nothing to do with him anymore.

The Diviner and the Fire Shrine's Saint were fighting, their energies already blotted out the sky and covered the earth. The atmosphere was sealed over a distance of thousands of li. The Diviner's strength was incredible, no matter what, he wanted to kill his enemy, he didn't care about the consequences anymore.

All of this would have terrifying consequences in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. At least five Shrines had gotten involved. Such a terrifying thing hadn't happened in such a long time. Now, Lin Feng had served as the match for the fire!

Lin Feng had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he had become famous in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Back when he had finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, people in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds hadn't paid attention to him because there were too many geniuses in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

But now, things were different!

This day, a Saint of the Fire Shrine fell! It had been a very, very long time since a Saint from the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds had died. But because of Lin Feng, the Fire Shrine's Saint had died. The Diviner, whose real name was Mara-Deva, had killed him. People had forgotten that name with time. The Diviner of the Fortune Shrine had killed a Saint of the Fire Shrine!

—————

A Saint had died, a terrible thing for the Fire Shrine. Apart from losing an important asset, they had also lost face. Everybody thought that the Fire Shrine would be furious, but actually they

calmed down, and didn't continue fighting against the Fortune Shrine. People in the outside world didn't know what was going on behind the scenes, though. But they could imagine that the Fire Shrine was actually furious. Maybe they were scared, too...

For the Fire Shrine, chasing Lin Feng was just something they had agreed to do because all the Shrines had joined hands. The Fortune Shrine didn't dare attack all the Shrines, but the Diviner, Mara-Deva, had dared kill one of their Saints. The Fire Shrine's strong cultivators weren't stupid, they knew that if their Saint had died, it was because the Saints from the other Shrines had probably abandoned him during the battle.

The Fire Shrine's members had already heard many people tell their versions of what had happened on that day. They could imagine what had happened in the end: that Saint had died because the other Shrines, with whom they had formed an alliance, had abandoned him and left. The other Shrines hoped that the Fire Shrine would start a war against the Fortune Shrine. The Fire Shrine was convinced that if they started a war against the Fortune Shrine, nobody would help them, and on the contrary, they would watch and then, when the two Shrines were weak enough, they would finish them both off!

They hadn't forgotten the War of the Shrines in the old days, it was why the Shrines didn't dare fight anymore. The consequences in the ancient days had been too tragic.

However, everybody thought that the Diviner was cruel. He had dared kill a Saint!

But now, the problem was... was Lin Feng dead?

Everybody had heard that the Fire Shrine's Saint had attacked Lin Feng and that a strong cultivator of the Life Shrine had taken him away. Therefore, nobody knew if he was dead or not...

---

Green lights flashed deep within the Life Shrine. Beautiful emerald green grass fields and trees. There was a beautiful lake there containing an incredible amount of life strength. Lin Feng was lying in the water of the life lake, floating at the surface. Life strength kept flowing into his body.

Life strength also kept emerging from the grass and trees and entering his body. His life essence was getting thicker and thicker.

There was someone at the lakeside staring at Lin Feng, frowning. It was the Diviner.

The Diviner raised his head and looked at an ancient tree, asking, “Bing Yan, how is he doing?”

“His own life strength is very powerful, so he can absorb life strength even better than most people. It’s like he is in a state of suspended animation. He should have woken up, but I don’t know why he hasn’t,” said the ancient tree, “I’ll call Xi Xi, she’ll come and check.”

“Thank you, Bing Yan,” said the Diviner, nodding at the ancient tree.

Bing Yan looked at the Diviner and said, “You attach much importance to him, you even killed a Saint because of him; does he really have a Forbidden Body?”

“It’s not important. He’s a disciple of the Fortune Shrine, how could I let anyone oppress them like that?” replied the Diviner calmly.

A beautiful woman appeared, landing on the lakeside. She had an extraordinary Qi, and looked like a Life Goddess.

She flashed out above the lake, she crouched and looked at Lin Feng.

“Death and life type.”

She was surprised. She looked at the Diviner and asked, “He

understands life and death Dao?”

“I think so,” said the Diviner.

“Life and death are not very compatible. His life and death strengths are competing. He’s in a special state. I don’t know why he can’t wake up, though,” said Mu Rong Xi Xi.

The Diviner frowned. The Fortune Shrine’s strong cultivators had incredible powers, but they didn’t understand life strength that well compared to the strong cultivators of the Life Shrine.

“What should we do?” asked the Diviner.

“I will continue healing him. I think he’s the only one who knows when he will wake up, though,” said Mu Rong Xi Xi, shaking her head.

(Translator’s note: Mu Rong or Murong is a rare family name in China, the story behind it is interesting, “Although rare, Mu Rong is still one of the more popular compound last names in China. They are the descendents of the youngest son of Di Ku (2,435 2,365 B.C.), who resided in the northeast. Later on, they moved to the west and were known as the Xian Bei tribe. These people admired (the Chinese word for admire is Mu) the heaven and the earth, and they believed they resembled the appearance (Chinese word for appearance is Rong) of the sun, moon, and stars. Therefore they assumed the last name Mu Rong. Hometown: Northwest of Xi Dai in Shanxi Province.”

source:

<http://www.yutopian.net/names/compound/MuRong.html>)

“What if he doesn’t wake up?” asked the Diviner, frowning.

“We’ll need to expel his death strength from his body then, no other choice.” replied Mu Rong Xi Xi. Lin Feng’s condition was strange, even to them

The Diviner was speechless as he stared at Lin Feng. What was wrong with this little boy?



---

In the Fortune Shrine, Meng Qing and Zhe Tian were extremely nervous. They didn't know how Lin Feng was doing. The Diviner told them they had to be patient. How could they be patient, though? Now the relations between the Shrines were not good. The Diviner didn't want them to leave the Fortune Shrine for the time being. Otherwise, the Fire Shrine might seek revenge and kill them!

---

Apart from Meng Qing and Zhe Tian, in the Void Phoenix Clan, some people were also extremely worried too. Qing Feng was staring at Saint Shi Jue Lao Xian and asked, "Teacher, how is Lin Feng doing?"

"I'm not sure," said Shi Jue Lao Xian, shaking his head, "I've heard that he was in the Life Shrine."

"Life Shrine." Qing Feng was surprised. She said, "I want to go to the Life Shrine!"

"To do what?" said Shi Jue Lao Xian, "Lin Feng will be fine, there are strong cultivators in both Shrines. If they can't do much, you won't be able to do much, either. Be patient."

Qing Feng was surprised, and said, "I'll go and see Sister Jing!"

She left quickly.

All the Shrines were watching the Life Shrine these days. They needed to know whether Lin Feng was dead or not. The Fire Shrine had lost a Saint, after all, and lost face. They hadn't even managed to kill a Celestial Emperor!

People from the Snow Clan were also watching the Life Shrine. They were convinced that if Lin Feng died, everybody would quickly know it.

## Chapter 2293: Lin Feng's Condition

---

Lin Feng was calmly lying above the life lake of the Fortune Shrine. Life strength kept flowing into his body.

Mu Rong Xi Xi was in front of Lin Feng. She stretched her hand and put it on Lin Feng's body. She released even more life Qi, which flew throughout Lin Feng's body. However, she could sense that there was a life and death vortex in Lin Feng's body. His death strength didn't disperse. She felt powerless.

"Why would you do that?" whispered Mu Rong Xi Xi. Some green leaves passed next to her and brushed her.

"He's in a state of suspended animation, why doesn't the death energy disperse?" asked Bing Yan.

Mu Rong Xi Xi shook her head, "I'm not sure. I can't see what's happening inside his head, or I'd solve the situation."

"What you mean is that he's doing that on purpose?" asked Bing Yan.

"Yes," said Mu Rong Xi Xi nodded. It was possible.

Bing Yan didn't understand. Was Lin Feng staying asleep on purpose?

---

Lin Feng was in a state of suspended animation. When the Fire Shrine's Saint had attacked him, he had thought he was dying, and actually had almost died. However, because he controlled life and death Dao, he had released life stamps into his body and had used all of his life strength. He hadn't died, and at that moment, Bing Yan had released life strength into him and prevented him from dying.

However, Lin Feng had never been that close to dying before, he really had almost died. Then, life strength had saved him, and he

had fallen into a state of suspended animation. Initially, he didn't want that, but he also knew that going through such a thing was a rare opportunity. He had the opportunity to study life and death in real conditions, and he couldn't miss it. If he missed it, he wouldn't be stupid enough to try to cause such a situation again. Cause such a situation to happen just to study it?

Therefore, he had decided not to wake up to study each part of his body and how they reacted when facing death. It would also be a great opportunity to reach perfection on the Path of Life and Death.

Lin Feng had already heard that his Life and Death Dao was a dual Dao. It was a difficult path. Finally, he had the opportunity to study death in a real-life situation. Therefore, he didn't want to wake up!

---

There was a giant at the lakeside, his Qi was ancient. He looked like a god. Qin Shan had found the way here himself. He had already studied the Rebirth Scriptures, and even though he couldn't become as strong as he used to be in his previous life, he was already vastly stronger than when he was only a small thread of consciousness.

A blue-green bird whistled and called out, "Two women from the Void Phoenix Clan from the Northwest Area are here and want to see Lin Feng!"

Bing Yan raised his head and said, "Let them come."

The grass undulated in the wind, and after a short time, two beautiful women arrived: Jing and Qing Feng!

"Lin Feng!" shouted Qing Feng when she saw Lin Feng. She landed in front of him and looked at him lying on the surface of the water, it made her feel extremely sad.

"What's wrong with him?" Qing Feng asked Mu Rong Xi Xi.

Mu Rong Xi Xi shook her head, “He’s in a state of suspended animation. He’s half dead, half alive. I don’t know any more.”

“Half dead, half alive.” Qing Feng was stunned. “What you mean is that he can die anytime?”

“Yes,” Mu Rong Xi Xi nodded. Qing Feng’s face stiffened. She didn’t know what to say. She just stared at Lin Feng.

“How could it be...,” said Qing Feng, almost crying. She looked devastated. She crouched down and put her hands on Lin Feng’s face. A few days before, he was with her, he had told her he wanted to take care of her. He was smiling so broadly. He had even told her mother that. However, only a short time had passed, and he was almost dead...

“Qing Feng...” said Jing. Poor Qing Feng... she was devastated, she had fallen in love with Lin Feng and now...!

Qing Feng didn’t say anything. She just stayed there, kneeling next to Lin Feng. She looked at Mu Rong Xi Xi and asked, “Master, if I die and turn into Dao and I enter into his body, will he come back to life?”

“Die and turn into Dao?” Mu Rong Xi Xi was astonished. The Void Phoenix Clan really had such an ability, but only strong cultivators could use it. It was an ancient phoenix sacrificial technique!

“Maybe,” replied Mu Rong Xi Xi. “At least, his chances of waking up would be higher, I guess.”

“Alright,” Qing Feng nodded.

Jing was astonished, “Qing Feng, you can’t turn into Dao now.” Qing Feng couldn’t sacrifice herself yet!

“I’ll accept what the clan asked of me. I’ll have my phoenix blood cleansed again, and I’ll be able to turn into Dao. I’m going back,” said Qing Feng. She smiled at Jing and turned around.

Jing's mouth twitched, "I don't accept this!"

"Let's go, sister," Qing Feng said. Her silhouette flickered as she left.

Mu Rong Xi Xi and Bing Yan were astonished. Mu Rong Xi Xi smiled wryly and shook her head. She smiled at Bing Yan and said, "Sister Bing Yan, you probably understand."

Bing Yan smiled wryly, "You're making fun of me."

"I'm not, back in the days, back in the days, you and Mara-Deva were so passionate," replied Mu Rong Xi Xi, giggling.

It was difficult to imagine two Saints giggling like that. At that moment, they looked like little girls.

---

Lin Feng didn't know what was going on outside at that moment. His soul and consciousness were almost dead. His life and death Dao was about to reach perfection.

When a cultivator's Dao reached the maximum level, perfection, it meant that they met one of the requirements to become a Saint. Every Saint had gone through this. Lin Feng's journey was even more difficult. He had almost died!

His god strength fused together with his life and death strength...

People in the outside world were still watching the Life Shrine. They were waiting for news, was Lin Feng dead yet?

Qing Feng accepted getting married to a member of the Fire Shrine in order to have her phoenix blood cleansed. It was a great opportunity for the Void Phoenix Clan. But it didn't draw too many people's attention. The Fire Shrine didn't even care about it. All they cared about was Lin Feng's death!!

---

Time passed slowly. The suspended animation started dispersed slowly in Lin Feng's body. His life and death strength started

connecting again.

“What’s wrong?” Bing Yan looked startled at that moment, and looked at Lin Feng strangely. She immediately released life strength, which flowed throughout his body.

“How could it be? My life strength is dividing inside of his body, it’s dividing into life and death strength! And the division is perfectly equal!” Mu Rong Xi Xi didn’t understand, she didn’t know what it looked like when a cultivator’s life and death Dao was reaching perfection, so she didn’t understand. She thought the death strength in Lin Feng’s body had appeared because of the Fire Shrine’s Saint’s attack; in other words, that it was the injury itself. It was partly true, and by a lucky coincidence, Lin Feng had been given the opportunity to improve.

“Let’s watch,” said Mu Bing Yan. Lin Feng absorbed more and more life strength. It was as if the life Qi of the lake wasn’t enough for him. The two women were stunned.

---

Qing Feng and Jing came back to the Life Shrine. Jing didn’t want to Qing Feng to come back, but Qing Feng was stubborn. Jing could only hope that Lin Feng would wake up before Qing Feng did anything stupid!

## Chapter 2294: Waking Up

---

The Life Shrine was boundless. From the sky, it didn't look like a city, it looked like a gigantic tree. There were millions of leaves everywhere, and they all contained an endless amount of ancient life Qi. Each branch of the tree looked like an ancient tree in itself.

Lin Feng was somewhere in there, lying calmly at the top of the lake. He continued absorbing the strength of the lake.

Qing Feng and Jing finally arrived, when Jing saw that Lin Feng hadn't woken up, she was nervous. Her heart was pounding.

"Master, when will he wake up?" Jing looked at Mu Rong Xi Xi and asked telepathically, "Master, tell my sister that Lin Feng will wake up, otherwise, she will do something stupid."

Mu Rong Xi Xi was surprised, she glanced at Qing Feng, but tried to look normal. She said calmly, "He's absorbing life strength now. He will probably wake up soon."

Mu Rong Xi Xi didn't know when Lin Feng would stand up, but she knew that Jing was extremely worried. She had to cheer Qing Feng up. Mu Bing Yan knew why Xi Xi said that. She also hoped that Lin Feng would wake up at some point, so Qing Feng wouldn't sacrifice herself!

Qing Feng glanced at Mu Rong Xi Xi and whispered, "Really?"

"Of course, I'm a Saint, I wouldn't lie to you," said Mu Rong Xi Xi, smiling.

Qing Feng trusted her instantly because she looked so kind. She nodded, "I'll wait for seven days, if he doesn't wake up during these seven days, I'll turn into Dao."

"Eh..." Mu Rong Xi Xi was surprised and said, "Give him time."

"No, if he's already absorbing life strength, he should wake up quickly, if he doesn't wake up within seven days, then it means

that it's not working," said Qing Feng, smiling at Mu Rong Xi Xi. She was staring at Lin Feng. Now, she hoped that Lin Feng would wake up quickly.

But Lin Feng didn't know about that. If he knew, he would have woken up!

---

During those seven days, he continued absorbing life strength. After seven days, Qing Feng smiled from where she was seated next to Lin Feng. She looked calm, she just smiled in a silly way.

"It seems like I'll become a part of your body now," Qing Feng smiled.

"Feng!" Qing Feng's Qi started burning, a phoenix called out sadly. An ancient phoenix shadow appeared around her body, dazzling to see.

"No, Qing Feng! Don't do it!" said Jing. Her face turned deathly pale. She was shouting desperately.

"Sister." Qing Feng smiled at Jing, her smile was resplendent, "Sister, thank you for being good to me. I owe you."

"Qing Feng, don't!" said Jing, shaking her head urgently. However, a strong wind started blowing. Death strength emerged from Qing Feng's body. She was dying, and her energy was going into Lin Feng's body.

Lin Feng sensed something, his god strength allowed him to control things. Actually, he also viewed his god strength as control strength. At that moment, a strange death strength filled with emotions was merging into his body. Lin Feng sensed his death strength was improving!

Qing Feng's ability was incredible, her life turned into death strength and then into life strength in the other person's body. It was a kind of rebirth!



That death strength turned into life strength in his body.

Eh? That death strength filled with emotions is turning into life strength?, thought Lin Feng. It was a completely different strength from his life and death strength. His life and death strength were completely distinct in his body.

Jing started crying above the lake. Qing Feng's body was burning away!

But Qing Feng wasn't sad, she was happy, she looked confident and at ease. Her silhouette gradually became illusionary.

Mu Bing Yan looked at Qing Feng and closed her eyes. She was too sad, she didn't dare look.

Mu Rong Xi Xi felt very sad, too, but she suddenly released an incredible amount of life strength, surrounding the lake. She looked at Lin Feng, he was still absorbing life strength! She shouted, "Stop! Don't turn into Dao!"

Jing was surprised and looked at Lin Feng. She shouted, "Feng, stop! Lin Feng is going to wake up!"

"Stop! Cancel!" Life strength surrounded Qing Feng's body. Mu Rong Xi Xi flashed over next to her. Instantly, Qing Feng's strength went back into her body, and she recalled her fire.

How dangerous!, thought Mu Rong Xi Xi. Qing Feng's soul was badly injured even though she had started her Dao transformation technique only a few seconds before.

Qing Feng was astonished too, but she calmed down quickly and looked at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was still absorbing life strength.

"What's going on?" asked Qing Feng. She was surprised.

His life and death strength are changing. They coexist peacefully!, thought Mu Rong Xi Xi. She was astonished. She whispered, "He's going to wake up! He's practicing cultivation, he's not pretending to be dead!"

“Practicing cultivation?!” Qing Feng was astonished.

Jing took a deep breath and said to Qing Feng, “You almost died!”

Qing Feng’s eyes twinkled. She smiled at Jing and then continued looking at Lin Feng.

“Let’s move back,” Mu Rong Xi Xi said to the two younger women. Lin Feng was still absorbing life strength. A strong wind made of life and death strength started blowing around him. They quickly enveloped the whole lake. The trees around the lake started turning pitch-black.

Mu Rong Xi Xi and Mu Bing Yan looked at the changes in the atmosphere and shivered. This guy’s Dao had reached perfection, his comprehension abilities were incredible! He had almost died and had seized that opportunity to study death strength, what a genius... No wonder all the Shrines made such great efforts to kill him. A Saint had even been killed because of him!

The Fire Shrine was probably furious. They had lost a Saint, and they still hadn’t managed to kill Lin Feng!

———

Life and death lights dashed to the skies. Suddenly, Lin Feng opened his eyes and looked around, seeing everything was emerald green around him. It felt good to be there...

He smiled, life and death Dao was difficult, but finally, he had really reached the peak of perfection. He felt great.

But when he opened his eyes, he felt some cold eyes on him. He slowly rose up into the air and exclaimed, “Jing?”

Jing was staring at him coldly. She looked furious!

“You bastard, you weren’t not dead! You were practicing cultivation!” said Jing coldly. “Feng almost killed herself because of you!”

“What do you mean?” said Lin Feng, stunned.

Jing spat, “When she saw that you didn’t wake up, she wanted to turn into Dao to save your life!”

When Lin Feng heard that, he shivered. No wonder he had sensed a strange death strength, it was Qing Feng’s...!

His silhouette flickered and he landed next to Qing Feng. She was beaming at him. He caressed her cheeks and said, “Silly girl!”

“I’m alright now,” said Qing Feng, smiling back at him.

“You’re fine, but if the Saint hadn’t prevented you from turning into Dao, you’d be dead now!” said Jing, she was furious.

Lin Feng looked at Mu Rong Xi Xi and Mu Bing Yan. He said, “You’re the ones who saved me, I guess? I feel very touched and grateful.”

He bowed before the two women.

“It was a slight effort. However, take good care of that girl,” said Mu Bing Yan, glancing at Qing Feng. She sighed and said, “It’s rare to have someone who would be willing to sacrifice themselves for you. Cherish her and protect her!”

“I understand, Master!” Lin Feng nodded. He grabbed Qing Feng’s warm hand, she felt warm. He glanced at the green trees and asked, “Where are we?”

“The Life Shrine. Master Mu Bing Yan and the Diviner have known each other for a very long time,” said Jing. Lin Feng understood, the Diviner had asked Mu Bing Yan to save him!

“Fire Shrine, Ice and Snow Shrine, Empty Space Shrine!” Lin Feng’s eyes were filled with murder. They had almost killed him, but he was too weak to compete with the Shrines for now...

The Shrines were terrifying entities. At that moment, he wished he could be like the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, he wished he stood at the top, he wished he could crush the Shrines!

# Chapter 2295: Going Back to Purple Clouds

---

There were two golden lights in the sky of the Life Shrine, a pair of eyes which could see everything.

Those two dazzling eyes could see everything that was happening in the Life Shrine. When Lin Feng stood up, that pair of eyes slowly disappeared.

Very quickly, the Shrines all learned that Lin Feng wasn't dead, and that he had woken up.

The Shrines were all furious, especially the Fire Shrine. A few Saints had joined hands and failed to kill Lin Feng. They had even lost one. How ridiculous! Was it some kind of a joke?

And the worst thing was that the Shrines had also killed many, many innocents, and in the end, they hadn't even managed to kill Lin Feng. The Shrines didn't care about anyone's life because they were extremely powerful, but their reputation would be tarnished.

The Shrines didn't like losing face. They had failed to kill Lin Feng, who probably had a Forbidden Body. They had missed an opportunity, and opportunities were rare. At that moment, many people from different Shrines went and encircled the Life Shrine.

The Fortune Shrine knew it, and the Diviner informed Mu Bing Yan.

---

Life Qi kept surrounding Lin Feng and penetrating into his body. Lin Feng absorbed it greedily. Mu Bing Yan didn't mind, the others were just chatting while Lin Feng did that.

Lin Feng was very grateful. He kept thanking Mu Rong Xi Xi and Mu Bing Yan. They had healed him the whole time he was practicing cultivation.

“Lin Feng, all the Shrines want to kill you. When you were

practicing cultivation and looked dead, many eyes were in the sky of the Life Shrine watching you, they didn't hide at all. They all saw that you woke up. They have probably encircled the Life Shrine. You'll have to go to the lower world, I think," Mu Rong Xi Xi told Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was startled. Indeed, he would have to leave and go to the lower world. He couldn't stay in the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

"I should go back and see how strong the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts is," murmured Lin Feng. He knew the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' cultivation level, he knew how strong he could be, and now, he needed to collaborate with him!

"Sis Xi Xi, thank you for having saved my life, I will never forget it," Lin Feng said to Mu Rong Xi Xi.

She smiled and said, "Hahaha, you just called me "sis"? You know how old I am? I am much, much older than you."

"We're cultivators, age doesn't matter. Besides, when a cultivator reaches a certain level, it is almost impossible to tell how old they are. And Sister Xi Xi, you look like a very young woman," said Lin Feng with a smile.

Mu Rong Xi Xi's eyes twinkled, she smiled at Lin Feng and said, "Mara-Deva's disciples know how to talk to women, I see."

"Alright, stop joking now. If Lin Feng goes to the lower world, the Shrines will chase him to kill him. Lin Feng, will you be alright?" asked Mu Bing Yan.

Lin Feng smiled, "Don't worry. I have some incredible hiding and disguising abilities. Nobody can recognize me when I use them. To kill me, they'd have to destroy the Continent of the Nine Clouds."

"Alright, good. But Qing Feng and Jing won't be able to follow you that way, otherwise, they will immediately recognize you," said Mu Bing Yan.

Lin Feng nodded. He smiled at Qing Feng and said, “You go back to the Void Phoenix Clan, wait for me there. When I come back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, I will come to you.”

Qing Feng was stunned, her heart twitched. She tried to hide her emotions with a smile and nodded, “Alright, don’t worry.”

Jing’s eyes glittered. She wasn’t happy. Qing Feng had almost committed suicide to save Lin Feng, and she had promised her clan something. She wasn’t dead, so of course, Jing was happy about that, but now, what could Qing Feng do about her promise? She couldn’t take back her word...

She had agreed only because of Lin Feng!

“Xi Xi, bring Lin Feng to the lower world’s passage,” Mu Bing Yan told Mu Rong Xi Xi. Mu Rong Xi Xi nodded and took Lin Feng to the passage in the depths of the Life Shrine.

“Sister Xi Xi, how come there are so few people in the Life Shrine?” asked Lin Feng. He was surprised.

“You just haven’t seen them,” smiled Mu Rong Xi Xi. “Grass is alive. Everything in the Life Shrine is life.”

Lin Feng was surprised and smiled. He didn’t say much more. After some time, they arrived at the passage. Mu Rong Xi Xi asked Lin Feng, “Which continent do you want to go to?”

“Purple Clouds!” said Lin Feng smiled. He turned around and caressed Qing Feng’s cheeks, smiled and said, “Wait for me!”

“Alright!” Qing Feng agreed.

Lin Feng said to Jing, “Jing, take care of Qing Feng!”

Jing rolled her eyes and looked at him angrily. Lin Feng turned around and jumped into the teleportation portal which led to Purple Clouds. He quickly disappeared from their field of vision.

---

Lin Feng suddenly appeared in Purple Clouds. He glanced at the sky... it was difficult to imagine that it was another world which had been created by people...

Lin Feng changed his face and body. He was back in Purple Clouds, and had one target destination in mind: King of the Ten Thousand Beasts Territory!

With his current strength, he could travel anywhere in Purple Clouds without any problem. He easily found a map of the continent and quickly made his way to Long Night City.

Back then, Lin Feng had gone to Long Night City with a terrifying group of beasts and had killed many people. The inhabitants of Long Night City now understood that the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts existed, they just didn't have the opportunity to see him. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts Territory was truly a forbidden territory!

There were legends about Lin Feng in Long Night City, too. Some people said he was a descendant of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. Otherwise, how could he have had such a terrifying army of beasts with him?

But Lin Feng didn't know about those things. He had gone back to Long Night City, and was calmly walking around. He continued on in the direction of the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts Territory.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts Territory was still lively. Many beasts had gathered there living in peace with one another. They continued competing in the Bestial Memorial Pagoda, improving their fighting abilities. Nobody could really die inside, so the beasts were happy. Lin Feng admired the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts for that. He had created a great society!

—

Lin Feng had arrived at the entrance of Minister Roc's territory.

There were many beasts around him, shouting out, “The Fighting Phantom is back!”

“Indeed, it’s the Fighting Phantom! We can’t even see how strong he is anymore! How terrifying! He was only at the top of the Huang Qi layer when he became a Fighting Phantom. A field littered with corpses appeared around him. He amazed everybody! Now, he’s a Fighting Phantom, and he’s terrifyingly strong. He seems to be like a Celestial Imperial Beast now!” said one beast. What an incredible cultivation speed!

“We should go and see how strong he is,” declared another beast bravely.

“He’s a Fighting Phantom, we can’t do that. The Ministers won’t be happy,” said another beast indifferently. He was half rhinoceros, half ox.

“Why not? We can check his strength, there’s nothing disrespectful about that. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts likes it when people compare themselves and try to become stronger,” said the other beast courageously.

“Alright,” nodded the other beast. Thunder began to sound as he ran towards Lin Feng. The beasts around roared enthusiastically.

“Fighting Phantom, be careful!” shouted the ox. He raised his fists, lightning appeared around him.

Lin Feng punched out in his direction. There was a boom, and the beast was slammed away and crashed into the ground violently. He stood up again, he looking enthusiastic. How strong!

How strong! How powerful! The Fighting Phantom is progressing so damn fast!, thought the beasts around, astonished.

“Bunch of stupid beasts, piss off now! You dare try to see how strong the Fighting Phantom is, even though someone like me can’t even see how strong he is!” swore Minister Roc after coming out. He looked at Lin Feng and said, “You’re incredible! I’m very



surprised!”

“Minister Roc,” greeted Lin Feng. “I want to go and see the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.”

Minister Roc was surprised, but said to Lin Feng, “Alright, I’ll take you to the leader.”

He opened his massive wings as he turned into a great roc. “Come on!”

Lin Feng jumped onto his back and they started flying away faster than most of the beasts could follow. Everybody was astonished. The Fighting Phantom really had an extraordinary position within the hierarchy, he could even ride the great roc who was a Minister!

## Chapter 2296: Joining Hands

---

The span of the great roc's wings was a thousand meters. He could cross millions of li in no time. When he flapped his wings, it caused hurricanes.

Minister Roc took Lin Feng directly to the leader's mansion house. However, they didn't see him there.

"Fighting Phantom, do you know where to find the leader?" said Minister Roc.

"I've informed him already. Let's wait here," replied Lin Feng calmly. Even though he was a Fighting Phantom, he had never seen the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' real body. He had seen him in his previous lives, that was all. He wasn't even sure that the leader had seen him personally. Maybe very few people knew who the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts really was.

Lin Feng was even convinced that he had had even more than eighty-one lives, and that he had practiced all sorts of cultivation. Lin Feng was also convinced that many worlds the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had lived in had disappeared.

Of course, those were just guesses. Only the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts knew the truth.

Besides, the leader's cultivation level was also terrifying. How many social statuses did he have in the world?

Even though Lin Feng knew he was a leader and at the same time an ordinary father and husband, he probably had other social statuses in the world.

Lin Feng also had many social statuses. Who knew that he was both a Fighting Phantom in the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' world, and a disciple of the Fortune Shrine?

---

“Lin Feng!” The leader finally arrived. He slowly descended from the sky and looked at Lin Feng, his eyes twinkling. “Your cultivation level?”

Lin Feng laughed, “I’ve understood a lot. I progress quickly. Regarding my cultivation level, you can regard me as a Saint Emperor.”

“Saint Emperor?” The leader was astonished, almost trembling. Back then, Lin Feng was an emperor and he could fight against Celestial Emperors. Now he had studied a lot and he could already oppress Saint Emperors? How quick! He had never seen someone progress so quickly!

“Leader, I would like to see the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts,” Lin Feng said to him.

The leader looked at Lin Feng and nodded, “Alright, I’ll take you to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts.”

They both instantly disappeared from there.

---

Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered. After a short time, he recognized his surroundings. He asked, “Leader, how big is the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ world?”

“I’m not sure, either,” said the leader smiling.

Lin Feng frowned and asked, “Is it completely isolated from the outside world?”

“It is isolated from the outside world, but it can’t be completely apart. Great Emperor Bai was extremely strong and the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts accepted letting him go out, his life is in his hands now,” said the leader calmly.

Lin Feng was surprised. Great Emperor Bai had seemingly died because of his own actions, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts had nothing to do with it.

“Of course, core people can move in and out freely, for example you as a Fighting Phantom, and all the leaders.

“The way the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts manages his worlds is stricter and more organized than the way the Shrines manage the Continent of the Nine Clouds,” observed Lin Feng.

The leader smiled and nodded, “Indeed. I’ve been to the Continent of the Nine Clouds. The Shrines are arrogant. They consider everybody like tiny little insects. Nobody can provoke them.”

“Yes,” Lin Feng nodded. He agreed with the leader. The Shrines were too arrogant. Many people in the Continent of the Nine Clouds didn’t even know that the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds existed, or it was not what they thought it was. When people talked about the Shrines, they thought the Shrines were legendary.

The Shrines had been like that for a long time. They considered themselves gods. Nobody could say anything about the Shrines, apart from the other Shrines themselves. And apart from the Supreme Animal World and some other groups, everybody feared the Shrines.

A terrifying Qi rolled in waves. When they arrived, Lin Feng was stupefied. They both landed on the ground.

“Leader, where are we?” asked Lin Feng, glancing around. He recognized this place. It was the leader’s village!

“Follow me and you’ll know,” said the leader with a knowing smile. He looked like an ordinary person again, recalling all his Qi and walking normally.

“Uncle Wang!” Lin Feng recalled his Qi too. He smiled wryly. They were in the leader’s small village again. The young woman ran out to them to greet them. She glanced at Lin Feng and said, “You’re back here.”

“Yes, I came to see Uncle Wang,” said Lin Feng cheerfully.

The leader looked at the young woman and asked, “Is the old painter here?”

“Of course, and he’s still painting, what else could he be doing?” giggled the young woman.

“I’ll go and see him,” said the leader.

Lin Feng and the leader were soon walking on an ordinary road of the village. They arrived in front of a small house with a small gate in bad shape. Lin Feng saw an old man in a courtyard, painting.

“It’s blank?” Lin Feng was astonished when he saw the painting, it was blank. There was nothing on it. The old man was painting on a rock. He was just brushing a rock, how could he be painting?

“Leader?” Lin Feng looked at his superior strangely.

The leader smiled, “Stay here and watch. He can’t stop when he’s painting.”

Lin Feng turned his head again and watched curiously. He didn’t understand why the leader had taken him here, but very quickly, Lin Feng frowned. He realized that the old man wasn’t just painting, lights were entering into the stone. He couldn’t really see them with his real eyes.

“What’s going on?” Lin Feng didn’t think he was wrong. He was staring at the brush. It was similar to when he drew on the pages of his celestial book...

“Sometimes, he stays here and paints for years, or even dozens of years, without taking a break,” said the leader indifferently. Lin Feng frowned. Lin Feng couldn’t draw for years, and even less so for dozens of years!

He wasn’t patient or focused enough. This ordinary old man seemed to have no Qi at all, but he could draw for dozens of years

without stopping, without eating or drinking!

Lin Feng slowly turned around and said slowly, “He’s...?”

The leader smiled and nodded. Lin Feng frowned, and looked at the old man again. His eyes glittered.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts!

That ordinary old man was the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts... He looked so ordinary...

But he had gone through so much in life. Lin Feng could understand, so after a few minutes, he calmed down. He took a deep breath and sat down next to the leader. They both watched the old man.

After eighteen days, he finally stopped. He didn’t raise his head the entire time, and he didn’t glance at Lin Feng even once.

“Finally, it’s good,” said the old man nonchalantly. Only then did he raise his head and look at Lin Feng. He frowned a moment before smiling. “Lin Feng, here we meet again!”

“King of the Ten Thousand Beasts!” Lin Feng greeted him. Lin Feng had experienced the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts’ lives, but they had never actually met personally.

“Not bad. Really not bad,” nodded the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. He smiled and asked, “So, what do you want from me?”

“King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, you once said that Fighting Phantoms were strong enough to manage a world. I want to know how strong you are. I want to join hands with you,” Lin Feng declared calmly. He was talking to the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts and saying he wanted to join hands with him!

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts laughed. “Join hands to do what?”

Lin Feng stared at him and said coldly, “Destroy those arrogant bastards and conquer the world!”

## Chapter 2297: Forming An Army

---

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts frowned deeply. He had small eyes, so when he frowned, he looked like he had his eyes closed. But the dazzling lights in his eyes pierced through his eyelids. He looked like a peerless sword cultivator.

“Interesting,” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. “Even though you are talented, it’s still a bit early to destroy those arrogant bastards.”

“Indeed, it’s still too early. But you taught me that it takes a lot of time to prepare something like that. I want to prepare myself now, and then we’ll see when we have an opportunity,” said Lin Feng calmly. He always looked natural and at ease, no matter whom he was talking too.

“What do you think an opportunity is?” the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts asked shrewdly.

“The first one will be when I am strong enough. The second one will be when someone can help you,” answered Lin Feng slowly.

“Who will help me? You?” said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts smiling softly.

Lin Feng nodded, “I can’t help you now. But sooner or later, I will.”

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts remained silent for a few seconds. He was staring Lin Feng in the eyes. Lin Feng didn’t look away, staring him back in the eyes, calm and sure.

Finally, the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts smiled and stated, “I will give you a world army and a leader.”

“How strong is a world army?” asked Lin Feng.

“In my world, all the leaders are Saints or half Saints. A world army is composed of thirty Saint Emperors, three-hundred

Celestial Emperors, and as for great emperors, you can choose however many you want, as you wish. Regarding the leader, you can have him, he's a low level Saint," said the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts, pointing at the man who had brought Lin Feng there.

Lin Feng was astonished, his heart was shaking. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was talking about a terrifying army; he had probably needed a great deal of time to create such an army... thirty Saint Emperors!!! That was more Saint Emperors than there were in one of the main cities of Dark Clouds. If the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts Territory was composed of more than eighteen worlds, then it meant that he had more Saint Emperors than there were in one of the Nine Clouds.

How fearsome!

Of course, that was still far from being enough to compete with the Shrines...

But if the Shrines saw that, they would also understand that the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was probably an extremely dangerous force.

"Thank you very much, King of the Ten Thousand Beasts," said Lin Feng after taking a deep breath.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts smiled and asked, "What do you want to do with one of my armies?"

"To be honest, those arrogant bastards chased me, they wanted to kill me and I nearly died. I need a powerful army," said Lin Feng.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts nodded, "Alright. I'll leave it to you, then. Anything else?"

"I would like to experience all your lives now," said Lin Feng.

The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts was surprised, but he grinned. "You want to experience all of them? Why? Go now."



The old man walked to Lin Feng and tapped his shoulder. He said to the leader, “I’ll leave the rest to you. Go outside and wait for him.”

“Sir,” the Leader nodded. The King of the Ten Thousand Beasts took Lin Feng to some other place, they instantly disappeared.

After the leader saw them leave, he walked over to the stone. He raised his hand and immediately punched it. It exploded and turned to ashes. However, underneath it, dazzling golden lights appeared.

It was a shimmering golden pattern. He put his hands in it and used his strength. A landscape with mountains and rivers appeared.

“Very good, it’s a world!” The leader’s eyes looked sharp. Who would have thought that he was drawing worlds in stone! Achieving such a thing was incredible, he had to be extremely strong!

---

Lin Feng was now with the King of the Ten Thousand Beasts. He experienced lives he hadn’t experienced the previous time.

---

Meanwhile, the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds didn’t calm down. All the Shrines knew Lin Feng had gone to another region. But the Continent of the Nine Clouds was too big, how could they find him? It was impossible.

Time passed. Three months passed quickly. Lin Feng hadn’t reappeared. The Shrines gave up and stopped looking for him.

---

Huo Xing Zi was in a courtyard in the Northwest Area in the Void Phoenix Clan. He was with Jing’s father.

“What you mean is that the one I saw last time in the Void

Phoenix Clan was Lin Feng? He simply disguised himself?” asked the middle-aged man slowly.

“Yes, I hadn’t thought about it either, but then some people informed me about it,” Huo Xing Zi nodded.

Huo Shang was next to him and said, “And we also know that last time, Qing Feng accepted the marriage alliance to have her phoenix blood cleansed, and that after that, she went to the Life Shrine because she wanted to sacrifice herself to save him.”

The middle-aged man looked astonished, Qing Feng wanted to kill herself to save Lin Feng?

“After that, we started watching her, and we realized that Lin Feng and Qing Feng were extremely close, intimate even. Then, we learned that Miss Jing had always known about that. That’s how I understood that that guy was Lin Feng. After he disappeared, did he come back to the Void Phoenix Clan?” Huo Shang asked.

The middle-aged man nodded and said to Huo Shang, “So, since it was Lin Feng, what do you intend to do?”

“Make him show up,” said Huo Shang.

“Using Qing Feng?” the middle-aged man was astonished. He thought of his wife, who loved Qing Feng deeply.

“Uncle, it’s not ‘using’. Qing Feng accepted getting married to a member of the Fire Shrine, Lin Feng obviously doesn’t know about that. We’ve never put pressure on anyone for her to accept that marriage alliance. Tell the Fortune Shrine about it, I’m sure they’ll inform him,” said Huo Shang.

His eyes were filled with cold lights. The Fire Shrine was still in charge of killing Lin Feng, even after they had failed. They had even lost a Saint; they hated him and wanted to get their revenge!

The middle-aged man remained. Huo Shang was right. Qing Feng had accepted getting married to someone from the Fire Shrine. But if she knew they wanted to use her, would she be happy?

After remaining silent for a long time, the middle-aged man finally nodded, “As you wish.”

“Thank you very much, Uncle,” said the two happily. If the middle-aged man hadn’t agreed, they wouldn’t have been able to force them. The Void Phoenix Clan was a powerful clan, and this man had a high social status in the Void Phoenix Clan, he was a half Saint already. Luckily, their teacher was friends with him. Since he had nodded, things would be much easier.

“Uncle, we’re off. See you,” said the two, bowing before the middle-aged man before leaving. The middle-aged man sat there and sighed. He didn’t want to do this, but since Qing Feng had come back, she had disappointed him.

---

At the same time, in the Fortune Shrine, Lin Feng’s clone was with Meng Qing, they were looking at the sky and snuggling.

“Lin Feng, are you in that world?” asked Meng Qing pointing at Purple Clouds. Lin Feng nodded, “Yes, Purple Clouds.”

“Where will you go afterwards?” asked Meng Qing. She didn’t know what Lin Feng intended to do. He seemed to be preparing something.

“After?” Lin Feng remained silent for a few seconds and said, “I will go back to the Holy City in Dark Clouds. I’ll check the Holy City, and then I will come back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

He raised his head and looked at the sky again. He wanted to come back to the Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds and crush so many people!

# Chapter 2298: Gathering

---

Time slipped away, flew, crawled, and zipped along...

In the Holy City of Dark Clouds, the Ancient Holy Clans continued growing stronger, they continued ruling over the main cities of the region. For Ancient Holy Clans to truly weaken or be destroyed, thousands and thousands of years were often necessary, unless they offended a terrifyingly strong cultivator!

However, the Ancient Holy Clans weren't worried about such things, because there weren't many people who were stronger than them, and they didn't offend such people. Therefore, it was very difficult to destroy them.

In the Holy City, the four universities – Champion University, Celestial Godly University, Ancient University and Four Seasons University – were still powerful. The famous Ancient Holy Clans – the Ji Clan, the Pei Clan, the Ying Clan, the Yu Wen Clan, the Ying Clan, the Great Imperial Palace, the Canaan Buddhist Clan, the King of Hell Palace and so on – were also amongst the strongest groups as well.

Champion University and Celestial Godly University were particularly prestigious. Many geniuses wanted to study there. It was a flourishing era for them.

Outside of Champion University, two young people had appeared. One looked confident and at ease, elegant and handsome. He was wearing cyan clothes and looked a bit unruly. The other one looked completely different. His head reflected sunshine because he had no hair, as he was a Buddhist monk. However, he looked confident and at ease too.

There were many people outside of Champion University, but those two people drew people's attention.

“How handsome. Who's that? He's too handsome. And his Qi is

incredible. He must be a high-level emperor, no, even stronger,” thought a young woman, looking at the young man. She was astounded: Hou Qing Lin’s Qi looked incredible.

The two people were Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi!

“How come Ruo Xie hasn’t arrived yet?” asked Tian Chi. These days, they had received a message from Lin Feng. He wanted them to gather in Champion University. Hou Qing Lin had immediately agreed. They hadn’t seen each other for so many years, they had all spent time in the remotest corners of the world. They all stopped what they were doing and headed back to the Holy City.

“He’ll arrive soon. He bumped onto Jian Mang on the way, so they’re come back together,” said Hou Qing Lin softly, smiling indifferently. Women loved men like him.

Inside Champion University, some lights glittered. Many people came out and gathered together. They looked imposing and awe-inspiring.

“Those are Tiantai’s people, right? What are they doing?”

In Champion University, everybody knew about Tiantai. Tiantai was the strongest group of Champion University. Tiantai had many, many disciples. In the future, they’d become terrifyingly powerful!

Two groups of disciples came out. The woman leading them came out slowly, her hair pitch-black, fluttering in the wind. She was wearing a light golden robe, and looked as proud as a princess. She smiled happily when she saw those two people.

Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi smiled broadly. Yun Qing Yan looked great!

“Welcome back, second and third brothers.” she shouted. Instantly, many people looked at them. They were stunned: second and third brothers?

Tiantai only had two people who they called second and third

brothers: Hou Qing Lin who carried out reincarnation sword attacks and Tian Chi the Buddhist monk.

“It’s them. They’re back!” the crowd gasped with amazement. Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi were Lin Feng’s fellow disciples! They were really strong, and now they were back?

Brother Hou Qing Lin, no wonder he looks incredible!, thought the girl in the crowd who had found Hou Qing Lin handsome.

“I came to greet you at the cost of a lot of effort,” Yun Qing Yan laughed. Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi were speechless. She was too funny!

“What about Lin Feng? He finished first at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and now we don’t see him anymore,” Yun Qing Yan pouted. Where was he?

“Let’s go in to talk,” Hou Qing Lin smiled. He glanced at the members of Tiantai; so many years had passed and Tiantai had become powerful, they had anticipated this. Tiantai was rising, as expected!

“Alright.” Yun Qing Yan brought them inside. The crowd kept talking and gossiping. They followed the group of people from Tiantai, wanting to see the legendary cultivators of Tiantai. They had heard many legends about Tiantai; what had happened with the Ji Chang’s Club at the beginning, and that time when the Ji Chang’s Club had been destroyed, yet nobody knew if everything was true.

---

Six hours later, someone wearing black clothes with a sword on his back appeared outside of Champion University. Next to him was a blind man. They both looked dangerously strong.

“Who are they?” wondered the crowd.

“Tiantai, my fellow disciples, teacher, Ruo Xie is back!” said Ruo Xie, smiling widely before entering Champion University with

Jian Mang.

“Ruo Xie, that’s Ruo Xie from Tiantai! He controls time strength, he’s an incredible fighter! And that blind guy must be Jian Mang, he’s a blind sword cultivator. He also controls light strength. They’re back too!”

“Tiantai’s core disciples are back. They were on the Celestial Champion Ranking List for a very long time and at some point, it wasn’t necessary to have them on the list anymore,” said someone. Even though their names had been removed from the list, nobody had forgotten about them. As long as Tiantai existed, people would talk about them.

---

One day later, someone else appeared. He was gigantic, and his teeth were sharp. He shouted, “Brothers and sisters, Tantai is back!!!”

He jumped into Champion University. He wanted everyone to see he was back!

On that same day, Lang Ye and Jun Mo Xi also arrived at Champion University.

They all came back. The atmosphere grew quite lively in Champion University. Lang Ye and Jun Mo Xi were famous in the entire city. One had an imperial immortal body, the other one had a World King Body. Now, they were back in the Holy City and they came to Champion University. Champion University had turned into a meeting spot for all those geniuses. It was as if something was about to happen...

Why had all these geniuses decided to come back at the same time?

All these people had different relationships, but one person connected them.

One person, a peerless genius of the Continent of the Nine

Clouds!

But he wasn't there, he hadn't come back. Where was Lin Feng?

\_\_\_\_\_

A man and woman appeared outside of Champion University. They stayed outside for a long time and looked at the entrance, smiling. Behind them were some young people and a wooden silhouette.

"Xiao Yue, we're here. This is Champion University!" murmured Mu Chen. Jing Xiao Yue and Mu Chen had been traveling all around the world for a long time, and now they were back. Mu Chen was going to see his disciples, his beloved students!

Mu Chen was proud of his disciples. Jing Xiao Yue was proud of his disciples too. Back then, they had risked their lives for him and shouted loudly, "Mu Chen is our teacher!"

Mu Chen and Xiao Yue entered Champion University. Some people welcomed them.

Champion University was lively. However, everybody had the sensation someone was missing.

Someone was missing and hadn't arrived.

Was he going to come back?



# Table of Contents

## [Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 2201: Most Powerful Battle](#)

[Chapter 2202: Explosive Fighting Abilities](#)

[Chapter 2203: Thousand Arms](#)

[Chapter 2204: Hua Qing Feng Loses Again](#)

[Chapter 2205: Demon and Buddha's Battle](#)

[Chapter 2206: Unparalleled Attacks](#)

[Chapter 2207: Destruction of the Golden Body](#)

[Chapter 2208: Final Ranking](#)

[Chapter 2209: All Eyes Tracking](#)

[Chapter 2210](#)

[Chapter 2211: Gu Xuan Tian](#)

[Chapter 2212: Shrine and Massacre](#)

[Chapter 2213: Danger](#)

[Chapter 2214: Battle in the Ancient Times](#)

[Chapter 2215: Imperial Court of the Continent of the Nine Clouds](#)

[Chapter 2216: Forbidden Legends](#)

[Chapter 2217: Influence](#)

[Chapter 2218: Pressure from the Shrines' Leaders](#)

[Chapter 2219: Leaving](#)

[Chapter 2220: Back Into the Milky Way Battlefield](#)

[Chapter 2221: Mountain of Corpses](#)

[Chapter 2222: Resuscitation](#)

[Chapter 2223: Hundred Victories](#)

[Chapter 2224: Killing Wang Xiao!](#)

[Chapter 2225: Qin Shan's Appearance](#)

[Chapter 2226: Back to the Small World](#)

[Chapter 2227: Mortal Life](#)

[Chapter 2228: Tribes' Goddess](#)

[Chapter 2229: Great Changes Over Time](#)

[Chapter 2230: Long Night City](#)

[Chapter 2231: Folders](#)

[Chapter 2232: Purple Soul Strength](#)

[Chapter 2233: Forbidden Body – No Cultivation Level](#)  
[Chapter 2234: Fierce Battle](#)  
[Chapter 2235: Chasing](#)  
[Chapter 2236: Suddenly](#)  
[Chapter 2237: Fighting Against a Celestial Emperor](#)  
[Chapter 2237: Sky Palace](#)  
[Chapter 2238: Ten Thousand Beasts City](#)  
[Chapter 2239: Great Emperor Bai's Daughter](#)  
[Chapter 2240: King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Holy Town](#)  
[Chapter 2241: Killing](#)  
[Chapter 2242: Bai Yu's Thoughts](#)  
[Chapter 2243: Devouring the Saint Luck](#)  
[Chapter 2243: Name List](#)  
[Chapter 2244: Invitation](#)  
[Chapter 2245: King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' Territory](#)  
[Chapter 2246: Avenging Spirit](#)  
[Chapter 2247: Disappearance of Strong Cultivators](#)  
[Chapter 2248: King of the Ten Thousand Beasts' World](#)  
[Chapter 2249: Dreamlike Life](#)  
[Chapter 2250: Eighty-One Lives](#)  
[Chapter 2251: Another Life](#)  
[Chapter 2252: Fighting Phantoms](#)  
[Chapter 2253: Fighting Phantom Protectors](#)  
[Chapter 2254: Bestial Memorial Pagoda](#)  
[Chapter 2255: Continuous Battles](#)  
[Chapter 2256: God of Hell's Name](#)  
[Chapter 2257: The One Who Wants to Become a Fighting Phantom](#)  
[Chapter 2258: Death God](#)  
[Chapter 2259: Candidate](#)  
[Chapter 2260: Master](#)  
[Chapter 2261: Leaving the Territory](#)  
[Chapter 2262: How Long Did That Dream Last?](#)  
[Chapter 2263: Waking Up – Destruction of the Sky](#)  
[Chapter 2264: Old Friend](#)  
[Chapter 2265: Great Army](#)  
[Chapter 2266: Going Back to the Moon Palace](#)  
[Chapter 2267: Heaven Clan's Appearance](#)  
[Chapter 2268: Lin Feng's Fighting Abilities](#)  
[Chapter 2269: I'll Keep You As A Slave](#)

[Chapter 2270: The Moon Palace Dismantled!](#)  
[Chapter 2271: What Are Emotions?](#)  
[Chapter 2272: Feeling Unsafe](#)  
[Chapter 2273: Who?](#)  
[Chapter 2274: Pretending](#)  
[Chapter 2275: Void Phoenix Clan](#)  
[Chapter 2276: Delicate Relations](#)  
[Chapter 2277: Fighting](#)  
[Chapter 2278: Thoughts](#)  
[Chapter 2279: Understanding Attacks](#)  
[Chapter 2280: Xue Jing Xiao](#)  
[Chapter 2281: Day of the Agreement](#)  
[Chapter 2282: Agreement with the Snow Clan](#)  
[Chapter 2283: I Want Some Fun!](#)  
[Chapter 2284: Make Peace?](#)  
[Chapter 2285: Can't Withstand a Single Attack!](#)  
[Chapter 2286: Saints Can Also Be Like That](#)  
[Chapter 2287: Killing the King-type Body](#)  
[Chapter 2288: Shrines' Confrontation](#)  
[Chapter 2289: Terrifying High Speed Pursuit!!!](#)  
[Chapter 2290: Slaughter](#)  
[Chapter 2291: Racing with a Death God](#)  
[Chapter 2292: All the Shrines](#)  
[Chapter 2293: Lin Feng's Condition](#)  
[Chapter 2294: Waking Up](#)  
[Chapter 2295: Going Back to Purple Clouds](#)  
[Chapter 2296: Joining Hands](#)  
[Chapter 2297: Forming An Army](#)  
[Chapter 2298: Gathering](#)